

Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2022 with funding from  
University of Toronto

<https://archive.org/details/31761114686918>











CA1  
Z 1  
-74M211

MACKENZIE VALLEY PIPELINE INQUIRY

Government  
Publications  
4

IN THE MATTER OF APPLICATIONS BY EACH OF  
(a) CANADIAN ARCTIC GAS PIPELINE LIMITED FOR A  
RIGHT-OF-WAY THAT MIGHT BE GRANTED ACROSS  
CROWN LANDS WITHIN THE YUKON TERRITORY AND  
THE NORTHWEST TERRITORIES, and  
(b) FOOTHILLS PIPE LINES LTD. FOR A RIGHT-OF-WAY  
THAT MIGHT BE GRANTED ACROSS CROWN LANDS  
WITHIN THE NORTHWEST TERRITORIES  
FOR THE PURPOSE OF A PROPOSED MACKENZIE VALLEY PIPELINE

and

IN THE MATTER OF THE SOCIAL, ENVIRONMENTAL AND  
ECONOMIC IMPACT REGIONALLY OF THE CONSTRUCTION,  
OPERATION AND SUBSEQUENT ABANDONMENT OF THE ABOVE  
PROPOSED PIPELINE

(Before the Honourable Mr. Justice Berger, Commissioner)

Tuktoyaktuk, N.W.T.

March 8, 1976  
and  
March 9, 1976

---

PROCEEDINGS AT COMMUNITY HEARINGS

---

Volume 44

347  
14835  
VOL. 44  
COMMUNITY

CANADIAN ARCTIC  
GAS STUDY LTD.

MAR 25 1976

LIBRARY





APPEARANCES:

		Page
John Hnatiuk and		
R. Horsfield,	for Gas Consortium	
Peter Usher, Esq.,	for C.O.P.E.	
John Bayly, Esq.,		
Darryl Carter, Esq.,	for Canadian Arctic Gas	
	Pipeline Limited.	

POLLY SUYAVIAK

JIM WALTIE

JOE WARDLAW

JOHN STEEN

FRANK DAVE FREEMAN

VINCE STEEN

Dr. Herbert SCHWARTZ

RANDY BOKIAK

EXHIBITS:

C-794 Submission by J. Steen

C-295 Submission by Dr. H. Schwartz

347  
M835  
101.44  
COMMUNITY





	<u>I N D E X</u>	<u>Page</u>
1		
2		
3	WITNESSES:	
4	Raddi KOESAK	4161
5	Felix NUYAVIAK	4163
6	Jim WOLZIE	4170
7	Joe NASOGALUAK	4176
8	John STEEN	4179
9	Pastor Dave FREEMAN	4192
10	Vince STEEN	4199
11	Dr. Herbert SCHWARTZ	4203
12	Randy POKIAK	4216
13		
14		
15		
16		
17		
18	EXHIBITS:	
19	C-254 Submission by J. Steen	4192
20	C-255 Submission by Dr. H. Swartz	4215
21		
22		
23		
24		
25		
26		
27		
28		
29		
30		



I N D E XPage

## WITNESSES:

Bertram POKIAK	4233, 4260
Charlie GRUBEN	4236, 4253, 4256, 4260
Jimmy JACOBSON	4238, 4255
Frank COCKNEY	4241, 4251, 4259
Em manual FELIX	4247
Mark NOKSANA	4263
Mrs. Elsie ANDREASON	4286
John NORBERG	4290
Miss Agnes ETAGIAK	4296
Mrs. Percis GRUBEN	4297
Father Herbert LEMEUR	4303
Jim RADDI	4312
Vince STEEN	4317

EXHIBITS:

C-256 Proposed Land Freeze in Tuk area	4136
C-257 Land Use Map of Tuk	4262
C-258 Submission by Mrs. E. Andreason	4289
C-259 Submission by Miss A. Etagiak	4297
C-260 Submission by Father H. Lemeur	4312





Tuktoyaktuk, N.W.T.

March 8, 1976.

(PROCEEDINGS RESUMED PURSUANT TO ADJOURNMENT)

THE COMMISSIONER: Ladies and gentlemen, I'll call the hearing to order this afternoon. I am Judge Berger and I am here to listen to you people who live in Tuktoyaktuk, and I'll be here today and tomorrow and the day after that to make sure that I get a chance to hear all of you that have anything to say to me.

Let me just explain why we're here. There are two pipeline companies, Arctic Gas and Foothills, and they are competing for the right to build a pipeline to bring natural gas from the Arctic to Southern Canada and the United States.

Now, the Government of Canada will have to decide whether they're going to allow a pipeline to be built. I can't decide that. But the government is in Ottawa running the country so they have sent me here to the north to find out what will happen here in the north if the pipeline goes ahead, and to find out what will happen here in the north I have to know what you think about it all. The government has said that we are not simply to look at this proposal to build a gas pipeline because the government has said if we allow a gas pipeline to be built then an oil pipeline will be built after that. In fact, the companies that have found gas in the delta and in the Beaufort Sea -- Gulf, Shell and Imperial -- have announced that they want to build a pipeline to bring oil from the





1 delta to Southern Canada after the gas pipeline is  
2 completed.

3 Now I have been in Inuvik since  
4 January 20th listening to evidence about the gas plants  
5 and the gathering lines that the pipeline companies and  
6 the oil companies say they will be building in the  
7 Mackenzie Delta, and I've also been listening to what  
8 the pipeline companies and the oil companies and COPE  
9 have had to say about the future of oil and gas explora-  
10 tion and development in the delta and the Beaufort Sea,  
11 and I'm here to see what you think about it all.

12 Now this gas pipeline, if it  
13 is built, will be, we are told, the largest construction  
14 project that private enterprise has ever undertaken  
15 anywhere in the history of the world. We are told that  
16 6,000 men will be needed to build the pipeline, and that  
17 it will take three years to build it. We are told  
18 that 1,200 more men will be needed to build the gas  
19 plants in the Mackenzie Delta, and we are told that if  
20 the pipeline is built then oil and gas exploration in  
21 the delta and the Beaufort Sea will expand and we are  
22 told that we will see exploration wells and later on  
23 development wells in the Beaufort Sea, and that we'll  
24 see pipelines bringing oil and gas from the deep water  
25 of the Beaufort Sea to the main pipelines that will  
26 lead from the delta to Southern Canada.

27 Now I know you're concerned  
28 about all of these things, and I know you're concerned  
29 about the proposal that Dome Petroleum has made to  
30 drill two exploration wells in the deep water of the



1 Beaufort Sea this summer. Now I want you to understand  
2 that I have no right to examine the wisdom of Dome's  
3 proposal to go ahead with two exploration wells in  
4 the Beaufort Sea this summer. But we have been told  
5 that if the pipeline is built and an oil pipeline fol-  
6 lows then we will see an expansion of exploration wells  
7 -- that is we'll see many, many wells in the Beaufort  
8 Sea, and that may well present us with a greater risk  
9 than the two exploration wells this summer present us  
10 with. So this Inquiry is looking into that long-term  
11 risk, that is the risk entailed if there are many, many  
12 wells drilled in the Beaufort Sea over the years to  
13 come, and the Inquiry will indicate to the government  
14 the extent of that long-term risk so the government  
15 can then keep that in mind in deciding whether it is  
16 going to go ahead with the pipeline and the energy  
17 corridor.

18 Now we have been holding  
19 hearings for a year now, since March 3, 1975. We have  
20 been listening to the experts, the scientists, the  
21 engineers, the biologists, the sociologists, the anthro-  
22 pologists, the economists; but that's not enough, we  
23 want to listen to the people who live here in the north  
24 and that's why we're here today. We've been to 25  
25 cities, towns, villages, settlements and outposts  
26 already to hear what the people had to say, and we've  
27 heard from more than 700 people who have told us -- told  
28 the Inquiry what they think.

29 Now I said that I'm here to  
30 listen to you today and I've invited the representatives





So I think the only other thing for me to say is that these people here work for me, Miss Hutchinson, the lady in the blue denim outfit is the secretary of the Inquiry, and the young lady with the mask and the gentleman beside her are just recording everything that is said. They just record it on tape so that it can be typed up and printed and so that I can read it later on so I won't forget all that you've said.

These people over here are the C.B.C. Broadcasting unit who broadcast every night on the radio about what has been said at the Inquiry, and they are Whit Fraser, who broadcasts in English; Abe Ookpik, who broadcasts in your own language; Louis Blondin, who broadcasts in Slavey; Jim Sittichinli, who broadcasts in Loucheux; and Joe Toby, who broadcasts in Chippewyan and Dogrib. We also have other representatives of the press and the media here, including Brenda Kolson, who is here as a reporter for "Native Press".



R. Koesak

1 Well, now that I've told you  
2 who we are, maybe we can begin and you can tell me  
3 who you are and tell me what you think, and I'll keep  
4 my mouth shut.

5 You go ahead, Rosie, and  
6 translate.

7 (MRS. ROSE ALBERT RESUMED AS INTERPRETER)

8 (MRS. ALBERT TRANSLATES)

9 (PERCIS GRUBEN SWORN AS INTERPRETER)

10  
11 RADDI KOESAK, sworn:

12 INTERPRETER ALBERT: Raddi  
13 first started off with -- he said he was born in 1902,  
14 and he's 74 years old. He said when he first started  
15 remembering<sup>it</sup> was about 1910 and he never forgot ever  
16 since then. But he said when he found out, when he  
17 knew what he was doing, like, started to grow up, he  
18 was too late for the kyaks that the Eskimos used to  
19 use long ago. Already the Eskimos were using whale  
20 boats, sailing, but they still used harpoons and when  
21 they go whaling they used to get two or three sometimes  
22 and they used to have to wait around for a whale, and  
23 only when a whale came up<sup>then</sup> they harpoon them.

24 He said the only place they  
25 could get stuff was from Kittigazuit, and they didn't  
26 have a store long ago, and that nets were hard to get.  
27 He said some of the people that didn't get enough fish  
28 always used to go to Atkinson Point where they could  
29 hunt seal. He said everyone that lived around Tuk  
30 long ago used to spread out and get a camping place so





R. Koesak

1 they could stay for the winter. All the month of July  
2 and August everybody hunted so they could get enough stuff  
3 for the year.

4 He said after they got all the  
5 fish and seals in the fall sometime between December  
6 and January they used to start up to the lakes so they  
7 could hook fish around Husky Lakes, and they stayed  
8 up there fishing all the month of December, January,  
9 February and March, and when March came around when  
10 the days start getting longer, they used to travel to  
11 Lousy Point and to Tununuk. He said the reason they  
12 went up that way was them days nobody had guns. They  
13 used to have to set snares for ptarmigan, and he said  
14 the people that, when they went to Tununuk and to Lousy  
15 Point they also found places where they could hook  
16 fish. He said long ago the peoples used to have hard  
17 time, but even how hard time they had, when they grew  
18 up he never heard of anybody starved. Even how hard  
19 it was to make a living, nobody starved.

20 But after that, he said they  
21 put up -- the Hudson's Bay Company put a trading post  
22 in Kittigazuit between 1910 and 1912, and he said when  
23 he was grown up he also was too late for the guns  
24 that the Eskimos used to use, the mis-loaders, they  
25 call them -- muzzle loaders, O.K., and he also said  
26 that by the time he grew up the Eskimos also quit  
27 using snow houses. The Eskimos that were travelling  
28 around along Tuk shore and around Tuk and the lakes  
29 and everywhere he mentioned were packing tents and  
30 he said they used the tents in the winter and they used



R. Koesak  
F. Nuyaviak

1 the snow for the outside.

2 Raddi also said that long  
3 ago they used to go to Husky Lakes and they always get  
4 fish there all the time, and he said it really changed  
5 now since the oil company came, because they are always  
6 blasting all over. He think that's the reason, he  
7 said even peoples tried again this year and some of  
8 them didn't even get any. He said there used to be  
9 other lakes around Tuk area that used to be good for  
10 fish, but he thinks that since the oil companies start  
11 looking for oil in all these different places he  
12 thinks that's why the fishing is not the same any more.

13 Raddi said he also think to  
14 himself sometimes ever since he start hearing about  
15 pipeline coming, especially when he heard that they were  
16 going to be working down in the ocean here, he said if  
17 they ever have a blowout he think that it will ruin  
18 the whole sea, and there will be no more fish, and all  
19 the animals, and the fish and mammals will all be dead.  
20 He said he just worry about it and think about it himself,  
21 it wouldn't be very good if the pipeline ever busts.

22 Raddi says he's just speaking  
23 of what he thinks and that's all he's got to say.

24 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
25 very much.

26 (WITNESS ASIDE)

27  
28 FELIX NUYAVIAK, sworn:

29 INTERPRETER ALBERT:  
Felix Nuyaviak said he was born

30 at Tuktoyaktuk in 1901 -- 1891. He said when he was



## F. Nuyaviak

1 growing up a few people had muzzle-loaders, but not  
2 very many, and most of the Eskimos were still using  
3 bow and arrows for hunting. But he said when he was  
4 growing up they still had kyaks, so how they used to  
5 hunt whale was, peoples ever been around Kittigazuit,  
6 they say the Eskimos used to round up the whales and  
7 chase them all to a shallow place so that they could  
8 get them, because the place now was really shallow  
9 long ago where they call Shallow Bay where it used  
10 to be really shallow; but now it's the mouth of the  
11 river, mouth of Kittigazuit.

12 The place where they used to  
13 chase the whales into a shallow place is all ground  
14 now, it's even grown trees, I mean willows since that  
15 time; but that's where they used to chase the whales  
16 long ago. He said they used to use kyaks and then  
17 they'd kill them when they got to a shallow place.  
18 Then the women could kill the whale when they get to  
19 a shallow place with their -- what they call that? He  
20 trying to explain that Eskimo women, when the whales  
21 all got into a shallow place, the Eskimo women that  
22 were around there used to walk down into the shallow  
23 water and plug the mouth of the whale to smother  
24 them, long ago.

25 THE COMMISSIONER: Not the  
26 mouth, but the nose-hole.

27 INTERPRETER ALBERT: Yeah,  
28 the nose-hole, yes. He said after the whaling  
29 season was over, the Eskimos around this part of  
30 Tuktoyaktuk used to spread out all over along the





F. Nuyaviak

1 coast and he said them days the peoples, how they made  
2 fish nets<sup>was</sup> they used to take the sinews on the caribou  
3 legs because it's strong, they've got stronger sinew,  
4 and the sinews from the back of the caribou they used  
5 it for sewing the clothing -- from the whale sinew  
6 too, because it's stronger than caribou sinew.

7 He said long ago too, that  
8 Eskimos when he was growing up, they didn't have matches.  
9 They used to have to pick cotton from the ground and  
10 put it in between two rocks and keep hitting it and  
11 hitting it until it finally sparked. He said also  
12 when he was growing up there was no missionaries at all,  
13 nobody around here didn't know nothing about God. Then  
14 the white people started coming a little bit at a time.  
15 They didn't get lots all of a sudden, they just  
16 gradually grew, but he said now everybody is just like  
17 white people.

18 He was saying long ago there  
19 were no ministers, there was only medicine men. Nuyaviak  
20 said also they only lived on snow houses long ago  
21 in the winter also, and them days peoples didn't have  
22 stoves so they used to have to light a lamp of oil and  
23 that was their stove. He is going to also tell a  
24 story about long ago Eskimos used to have a boss also.  
25 He said his father was a boss, and after his father  
26 died there was another guy named Kaglik that took his  
27 place. Nuyaviak also said after Kaglik was the boss  
28 for the longest time, and after Kaglik died there was  
29 another guy named Ovayoak, who was the boss after him.

30 He said long ago, whoever was



## F. Nuyaviak

1 the boss of the Eskimos, anything that they hunted they  
2 had to listen to whatever their boss said when they did  
3 the hunting, and he said long ago even though the people  
4 they had -- when there was no oil, they used to have  
5 to use whale oil and seal oil for their lamps, and  
6 also for their stoves, and he said he also remembered  
7 long ago the Eskimos even though they used to do a lot  
8 of hunting, everyone hunted enough for the winter.  
9 They never ever wasted food.

10 He also said that long ago  
11 especially in the spring when it got warmer the peoples  
12 used to eat together, a lot of people eat together and  
13 sometimes, too, even if you're living in the same house  
14 sometimes just two people ate by themselves; but he  
15 said there was always a lot of food in the spring, and  
16 the people never had to be hungry.

17 He also said that when they  
18 spent the summer at Kittigazuit, if they felt like  
19 eating caribou meat, sometimes the two guys that had  
20 the guns would go out hunting and then bring back meat  
21 for everyone. He also wanted to mention that long ago too  
22 they used to have to snare ptarmigan. He said the  
23 ptarmigan are good for snaring before the geese came  
24 in the spring.

25 He also said that long ago  
26 the only way they used to be able to travel around  
27 was he remembered one time there was five sleds and  
28 each sled had one dog, so that they could put their  
29 belongings in one sled and one dog pulling it; but  
30 the people that went along with them used to have to





## F. Nuyaviak

1 help to pull the load. He also said that long ago  
2 when you wanted to go somewhere, you had to start as  
3 soon as it was daylight, and after that while they were  
4 travelling they look around for a good place where  
5 they could build a snow house.

6 He also said when they are  
7 travelling and they finally found a place where they  
8 could build their snow house, they used to build them  
9 and he also said long ago when the Eskimos used to  
10 travel with dogs with a sled, with the one sled, they  
11 always used to carry a piece of wood, just like a board,  
12 so that they'd use it for under their mattress.  
13 Then in the evening after they settled down, they always  
14 used to tell stories to one another.

15 The older people are fixing  
16 up the snow house, the kids used to start playing out-  
17 side before it get too dark. He also said when they  
18 are going to leave the snow house that they been living  
19 in, they used to put all their belongings outside,  
20 like blankets and stuff, and they don't leave the snow  
21 house the way it is, they break it up.

22 He said that him, he was a  
23 little bit older than Raddi Koesak, so he know more  
24 about how the Eskimos lived. He said when he was growing  
25 up there was no white man food at all, not a thing.  
26 He said the only way the Eskimos lived them days was  
27 from the animals that were in the water or on land.  
28 They put them away in oil for the winter, they had lots  
29 of oil, and they even dried the meat and the fish,  
30 and anything they could find was always all from the land.



P. Nuyavink

1 He said they used to have  
2 to carry a made-like bowl, made out of soapstone, and  
3 they also used to have to carry that when they travel  
4 around, because he said once they put the snow house  
5 up they put oil in that soapstone dish and it's used  
6 for light and stove together. He said some of the  
7 people that didn't have soapstone to make their -- to  
8 light their lamp or use as stove, some of them also  
9 carried a piece of wood also, and they put a piece of  
10 tin inside so it don't burn it.

11 He said when he remembered  
12 when he was growing up, nobody believed in God at all.  
13 There was just only medicine people. They had no kind  
14 of religion. He said that's what he remembered when he  
15 was growing up.

16 Percis was asking what he  
17 thought of the oil companies that are coming now and  
18 things that are going on, and he said that himself he  
19 think it O.K. if they look around in the land but.  
20 he's worried that if they start working in the ocean  
21 because there is a lot of animals down there that  
22 something might happen to them.

23 He said because himself he  
24 knows that the water is very strong out in the ocean,  
25 and also when the ice start travelling it's really  
26 strong. He said for sure if an oil pipeline is ever  
27 built, if it ever break there's going to be trouble.  
28 He said a long time ago when they used to go hooking  
29 in Husky Lakes, there used to be lots of fish at any  
30 time, and they used to hook trout, and they never used



F. Nuyaviak

1 to have hard time; but he said since he heard that  
2 the oil companies or some outfits were blasting at the  
3 lakes, since that time it really changed. He said first  
4 there was hardly any fish, and now there is nothing at  
5 all.

6 He said he also want to men-  
7 tion a long time ago when the native people, Eskimos,  
8 wanted to get caribou skin for clothing they used to  
9 chase the caribou into the lake and they'd kill it,  
10 as many as they want, and then they'd keep the skins  
11 for clothing. They speared them. They chased the  
12 caribous into the water and then they speared them.

13 He said the caribous that  
14 they harpooned for the people's clothing, they never  
15 throwed the meat away. They took them all home in  
16 their kyaks, wrapped them up in a skin and took them  
17 all home. They only throwed the bones away.

18 He said a long time ago,  
19 the Eskimos never wasted food. Anything they got, they  
20 always used to keep and he said that's why they never  
21 ever used to run short of caribou. There was always  
22 caribou around. He said that a long time ago the  
23 Eskimos, they never ever left food laying around. They  
24 knew where to hunt and how to look after it, the animals  
25 that they caught. He said they used to be very, very  
26 careful of the things that they do a long time ago.

27 He said long ago too, the  
28 old-timers, if there was any young boys that wanted to  
29 go out hunting, they used to talk to them before they  
30 go and tell them not to let any kind of meat spoil





F. Nuyaviak  
J. Wolkie

1 because they think that if they ever left any meat  
2 spoiling around that there would be no more animals.

3 He also said he's worried  
4 about the oil companies coming because he said the  
5 white peoples are really after oil, but if they ever  
6 start burning it, or if the smell ever come out into  
7 the air, he think it's going to be really bad, so the  
8 animals that are living around here, he said because  
9 he know the animals himself that they don't even like  
10 to smell a human -- human beings around them. He said  
11 oil would be worse than that, and even the small animals  
12 he think that they'll all disappear if they ever have  
13 an oil spill or an oil blast, there would be no more  
14 animals around here.

15 He said before he finishes  
16 off, he's the oldest man in Tuktoyaktuk, and all the  
17 peoples that are living here, all the mens and the  
18 young boys and the kids that are <sup>growing up</sup> are just like  
19 his brothers, and he hopes that as they're growing up  
20 they will learn to live good too and be well.

21 That's all he has to say.

22 That was Felix Nuyaviak.

23 (APPLAUSE)

24 (WITNESS ASIDE)

25  
26 JIM WOLKIE, resumed:

27 INTERPRETER ALBERT: Jim Wolkie  
28 is telling a story about his life in Horton River. He  
29 said that's where he used to trap long ago, and he said  
30 there was always a lot of food. Peoples never used to



J. Wolkie

1 have hard time. There was lots of fish and caribou  
2 and geese and ptarmigan. He said only after he got  
3 married he moved to Banks Island, and them days there  
4 was no houses over there. There was no lumber houses,  
5 they only had tents 12 x 14; but he also said that  
6 he never all the time he was growing up, he never stayed  
7 in one place. That's the way they used to live a long  
8 time ago. They moved from one place to the other,  
9 wherever there was good hunting.

10 He said when he first went to  
11 Sachs Harbour there wasn't -- after the first year he  
12 stayed there was hardly any caribou, so they used to  
13 make a living out of hunting seals and polar bear. He  
14 said after he stayed over there for a long time, the  
15 caribou was getting more and more, and by the time there  
16 was a lot of caribou, he move away from Sachs Harbour  
17 here to Tuk. When he think of it now he think it's funny  
18 because long ago they never used to plan anything. If  
19 they went out hunting, they hunted until they were  
20 tired, and even how tired they were, they used to have  
21 to build a snow house to camp in, and by the time he  
22 was trapping they had primer stoves.

23 He also said that it's just  
24 like they were the older people, and the younger people  
25 that are trapping now, they used to watch how they work  
26 and how they lived, and that's how come they are hunters  
27 also after them. He said a long time ago also that  
28 the Inuit, if they had a boy and a girl, the father  
29 used to teach them which is the best way to hunt and  
30 that's the way the children used to learn a long time





J. Wolkie

ago. He also said that the girls, they stayed home with their mother and their mother also taught them how to make a living and he said that some men, the Inuit men even how many boys they had, he said some of the boys are not very smart so they have to keep scolding them and scolding them so they could learn.

He also said long ago when they were growing up there were no <sup>old</sup> pension or family allowance. He said that when their parents got older the younger ones have to keep trying and helping and hunt and everything and help the older people with the food and everything. He also said he even know their pensions are not very big, and now they could live by themselves even though it is not very much but they could survive on it.

A long time ago when he was a hunter he used to hunt in Banks Island all over in Banks Island, also in DeSalis Bay; but he says now that he's older he doesn't go across.

He also said after he never go across to Sachs Harbour any more, he move to Baillie Island because if you lived there it was a good place to live, and he stayed there for many years also.

He also said when he first moved to Baillie Island there was hardly any caribou, and while he was living there the caribou keep getting more and more each year, and now he doesn't go there any more either. He also said when he was living in Horton River, when he first went there there was hardly any moose either, and after a while the moose



J. Wolkie

1 increased; but after they live there for a while then  
2 the oil companies started coming and they also moved  
3 somewhere else. He said the moose are more scared than  
4 caribou, so they are the first ones to get away from  
5 that area when the oil companies came.

6 He said there is two older  
7 people that was talking ahead of him, told about how  
8 they used to live a long time ago. He also grew up  
9 in part of that when they talk about lands and stuff, he  
10 remembered part of it; but seeing that Nuyaviak and  
11 Raddi talked about them already, he's not going to say  
12 anything about them because they already told the  
13 story.

14 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
15 Mr. Wolkie.

16 THE INTERPRETER: Jim Wolkie  
17 is going to tell a story about how him and Raddi, one  
18 incident that happened in his life when him and Raddi  
19 got drifted out into the ice. He was telling a story  
20 about one year he said he had a boat, and the name of  
21 the boat was "Oomingmuk", and they were living in Sachs  
22 Harbour at the time, and that summer the ice never  
23 left Sachs Harbour, it just went out so many miles and  
24 it stayed there, and later in the fall when the wind  
25 came up there was high water. Some of the people's  
26 stuff been getting drifted out but then they had  
27 nothing at all, they couldn't come across for their  
28 winter supplies. They had to stay there the whole  
29 summer, and the only way they survived was they caught  
30 a few ringed seals and some seals also. He said they



J. Wolkie

shells  
had just a few/so they had to ration them, and so after that when trapping season open again the next year they had no groceries at all. There was no flour or anything, no coffee, no tea. He said when they had to go out hunting in the morning, if they were going to leave, the only thing they had was they used to make hot water and drink that, and one time he said while they were out hunting he found a pound of coffee that been drifted, and he said he was really glad to find it because he wanted to drink coffee.

I just asked Jim Wolkie to talk about oil companies or what's going on here or anything, and he's been taking too long with his story so he says he's going to stop for a while. But before that when he was talking about the time they didn't get no supplies, he said they were really hard for food and there was no caribou that year. The only way they could get food was there was a lot of Arctic owls in Sachs Harbour and they only caught them in a trap.

THE COMMISSIONER: A lot of what?

THE INTERPRETER: White owl, ookpiks they call them usually.

THE COMMISSIONER: Oh yes.

THE INTERPRETER: He said they used to catch them with the traps and that was their food that they used to have because that's when they were hungry because they didn't have no other kind of food at all. There was no tea, coffe, or flour.

That year when they didn't get





J. Wolkie

1 any groceries, him and Raddi decided to go to Letty  
2 Harbour by Nelson Head and to Best Point. He said  
3 when they got across they met a family there by the  
4 name of Jacobson, and it was sure nice to eat and  
5 drink tea. So he said after they started back in about  
6 ten days after that they hit open water.

7 After they couldn't get back  
8 by one way, they had to go all the way around by  
9 Victoria Island and to get back to Best Point. He  
10 said at least then they had a little bit of groceries  
11 that they bought from Letty Harbour.

12 Percis was asking after he was  
13 telling his story and she ask him about how the people  
14 used to make a living a long time ago, which Jim Wolkie  
15 was telling a story about. Even though it was hard  
16 living them days, she said that it probably will get  
17 harder now that there is all kinds of things that are  
18 going around on their land, so Jim answered and said  
19 that for himself, he don't think that it's right to  
20 be working in the ocean because if a pipeline is ever  
21 built and it spill, he think all the water will be  
22 spoiled and he think it's not right. He said he  
23 also know that if any kind of human beings or people  
24 hear something in the water, when the ice decide to  
25 do anything, the ice is not scared of anybody.

26 He also said that if the things  
27 from the oil company ever destroy the ocean water,  
28 they will be killing all the bugs that are in the sea,  
29 what the seals eat. He said that he know that since  
30 they started blasting a lot of seals been dying. He



J. Wolkie  
J. Nasogaluak

1 said now that if they work some more, he said the  
2 polar bears will be next to go.

3 He also said that he heard  
4 about the oil companies doing an experiment under the  
5 ice. He said even if they did an experiment under the  
6 ice he think that the oil that is under the ice will  
7 come out right where the seals' holes are. If the  
8 seal ever tried to come up through that ice he think  
9 probably he'll get blind or something will happen to  
10 him. He said a long time ago even they knew that the  
11 polar bears were hungry, they never used to try to  
12 attack the people. He said sometimes they used to see  
13 a few, and as soon as they see a human being they used  
14 to get scared; but now he said he's starting to hear that  
15 the polar bears even attack human beings, which they  
16 <sup>long ago</sup> never did/when they were hungry. That's all he's  
17 got to say for now, but he will probably talk again  
18 in the three days you're here.

19 THE COMMISSIONER: All right,  
20 O.K., thank you, Mr. Wolkie.

21 (WITNESS ASIDE)

22  
23 JOE NASOGALUAK, sworn:

24 THE INTERPRETER: Joe Nasogaluak.  
25 He hasn't got too much to say because he doesn't know  
26 too much himself, but he's going to talk for a little  
27 while. Joe Nasogaluak says he's been hunting and  
28 fishing back and forth since 1917 and he settled at  
29 Tuktoyaktuk because he was bad to get sick, and also  
30 when his children -- he had a lot of children. He said



J. Nasogaluak

1 there wasn't much things to hunt in Tuk the first time  
2 when he came here, but there was a lot of fish and  
3 seals. But he says since 1940 the years been changing  
4 every year. He said a long time ago he used to be able  
5 to fish all fall. He said, but the last two years he  
6 hardly got any, especially last summer. He said he  
7 don't know what's causing it, whether it's the oil  
8 companies that are working down by the ocean, or maybe  
9 it's something else, he's not sure; but he know for sure  
10 since the last two summers that he's been fishing, the  
11 fish are really poor.

12 He said after he talked to  
13 Victor Allen about it, he asked if he could check them  
14 this last summer. So he said this last summer while  
15 he was fishing he checked the fish that he got and  
16 some of them were really poor, and when he checked  
17 them some of the fish even had red eyes. He said a long  
18 time ago there used to be a lot of whitefish and herring,  
19 but he said it hasn't been very good for the last two  
20 years and he doesn't know what to expect this next  
21 summer.

22 He also said that he's been  
23 living in the ocean for the last 22 years, and he  
24 know how the ocean is. He said the water is very strong  
25 down here, and the ice is also very powerful. It never  
26 -- when the water decides to do anything, it never worry  
27 about what's in the way. He said that's why he was  
28 really glad when Raddi also explained about the water  
29 in the ocean, how it works, the very strong water and  
30 ice is floating back and forth and it's very strong.





J. Nasogaluak

1                   So he said that's all he's got  
2 to say for now, but Percis would like to ask him a  
3 question. Percis was just asking him and explaining  
4 to him what he thought of worrying about the food  
5 meant, and he said the reason the people are worried  
6 about the food in the sea and in their land here is  
7 because the Eskimos that make a living around here,  
8 they don't have funds like the people down south, and  
9 they don't grow anything. They only hunt and trap and  
10 make a living off the land. That's the only way they  
11 live; and if things ever get spoiled, they will end  
12 up with nothing. That's what they were both discussing  
13 about.

14                   THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
15 very much, Mr. Nasogaluak. I think that it probably  
16 is time to stop for supper. I don't know what time --  
17 what time do you have?

18                   MRS. ALBERT: 5:30.

19                   (WITNESS ASIDE)

20                   THE COMMISSIONER: Well, let's  
21 stop now for supper and come back at eight o'clock to-  
22 night and we'll start again eight o'clock tonight after  
23 we've eaten. O.K.?

24                   (PROC EEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 5:30 P.M.)

25                   (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED AT 8:40 P.M.)

26                   THE COMMISSIONER: We'll call  
27 the hearing to order tonight and I'll just apologize  
28 for being late because I was watching television. Mr.  
29 Steen?

30                   (HELEN GRUBEN SWORN AS INTERPRETER)



J. Steen

1                    JOHN STEEN, sworn:

2                    THE WITNESS: I'm not sure  
3 if anybody wants my presentation to be interpreted  
4 or not.

5                    THE COMMISSIONER: Why don't you  
6 go through it and why don't you just go through it in  
7 English and then you can confer with the interpreter  
8 and at least translate the highlights? That might be  
9 best, Mr. Steen.

10                   A     O.K., thank you. Mr.  
11 Berger, first of all I would like to introduce myself  
12 as a Territorial representative of the communities from  
13 Fort McPherson all the way north to Sachs Harbour.  
14 The only community in this band would be Inuvik, which  
15 is represented by my colleague, Mr. Butters, Tom Butters  
16 of Inuvik.

17                   Over the years, Mr. Berger,  
18 I noticed before -- sorry, I can't hardly read my  
19 writing here -- I noticed before the first kind of  
20 development ever came to the north, and that is I mean  
21 major development, would be the start of the Dew Line  
22 in 1955. People in those days received their mail  
23 once a year, and it came by boat. If you had any ail-  
24 ment like T.B. or if you had a baby, you went to the  
25 nearest hospital and the nearest one at the time was  
26 in Aklavik, and travel was then once a year by boat  
27 also, unless one could afford to leave his trapline  
28 and go by dog team in the wintertime and foresake  
29 the catch that he might have made of furs in his  
30 absence. What I am meaning to say is that when the Dew



J. Steen

1 Line first appeared on the horizon, they needed  
2 laborers, every native was asked to work and all the  
3 natives that accepted work on the Dew Line at the  
4 beginning were trappers, and that was the only kind  
5 of work he had ever known in his life. He was his  
6 own boss as a trapper, well before the Dew Line came.

7 He got up when he wanted to  
8 in the morning, worked as late as he wanted, and no  
9 one told him how he should conduct his own work, and  
10 when these people began to work for the Dew Line they  
11 were told exactly what to do, even though the native  
12 would think that this block of snow should be moved  
13 first, he was told that -- to move the other one first  
14 or else you're fired.

15 If such a person got himself  
16 fired, it was extremely hard for him to get another  
17 job on the Dew Line unless he went over to another  
18 site, which would be approximately 50 miles away, as  
19 that was the distance between the sites at the time of  
20 construction of the Dew Line.

21 I can remember we were put  
22 in tents, which was heated by Coleman and primus stoves  
23 which gave off toxic carbon monoxide fumes, that after  
24 a while you could not see a thing because of the tears  
25 that would run out of our eyes while all the bosses  
26 of the construction company stayed in the old Police  
27 Barracks, which we had been using as our trapping camp  
28 before these people came to build the Dew Line. In other  
29 words they took our trapping camp away from us and put  
30 us in some tents which were heated by these kind of





J. Steen

1 stoves. As trappers we kept the barracks heated with  
2 driftwood that we had found, and collected along the  
3 shoreline of the ocean, and when they came we were  
4 furnished with these 12 x 14-foot tents which were  
5 heated by these crazy stoves, and when it was time to  
6 go to work that morning someone asked that his boots  
7 be passed over, but his request was refused.

8 As everyone was suffering  
9 from tears from the stoves, so a fight erupted and before  
10 control could be gotten, out came the large snow knives  
11 and we began hacking at each other. I know, Mr. Berger,  
12 I was one of those men. As a result, it became very  
13 hard to get a job again on the Dew Line.

14 I can also remember as I worked  
15 on the Dew Line -- and this can happen yet with the  
16 pipeline -- with souvenir hunters, that I had a dog  
17 team that was overworked and they badly needed a rest,  
18 and one night conversation got around to talking about  
19 the history of the land, We talked about the Inuit  
20 people and their ways in bygone days -- the whalers  
21 and the Inuit, of starvation, and so forth, and it came  
22 about that we started talking about an island four  
23 miles out at sea that the Inuit had made their living  
24 off the sea, and the fights that had taken place  
25 in bygone days.

26 I had told of a number of  
27 human bones lying about on the island, and on about  
28 in and about the rocks. So this fellow said if I  
29 could go out there and pick up a couple of skulls and  
30 bring them back, he would pay me well for them.



J. Steen

1                   So I being only about 17  
2 years old with very scanty schooling, didn't know any  
3 better. I hitched up my dogs and went off there and  
4 picked up a couple of these skulls. The trip took me  
5 six hours to do it, and I came back with these two  
6 skulls and though they were looking at me all the way  
7 back, I tried not to look back at them. One of the  
8 skulls had a hole in the centre between the eyebrows,  
9 just a bit up from there, and a hole also in the back  
10 of the skull.

11                   The other had its lower jaw  
12 still intact with teeth that showed that it had ground  
13 a lot of sand; but when I brought these skulls to the  
14 person who wanted them, he took them from me and put  
15 them in the oven to dry, and he forgot all about them.  
16 About an hour later I could smell something strange,  
17 like moss getting hot, and I went and when I went to  
18 open the oven here was these two skulls, just grinning  
19 at me.

20                   The fellow left the next day  
21 and I am still to this day waiting for a carton of  
22 cigarettes he promised me for payment.

23                   THE COMMISSIONER: O.K.

24                   A     I can tell you of one  
25 other thing that can result from too much freedom of  
26 employees and not enough control from employers. One  
27 day we went out on a boat ride on the Dew Line and it  
28 just happened that someone on the trip decided to save  
29 time to see if there were any fish in the lake, so he  
30 brought along half a case of dynamite. He kept on



J. Steen

1 dropping these dynamites every few hundred yards.  
2 Fortunately, there were no fish in the lake, in this  
3 lake particularly.

4 But what I meant there is that  
5 there was too much freedom in the camp, that these  
6 people could obtain this kind of dynamite and take it  
7 out without permission from their employers.

8 Now, Mr. Berger, what I really  
9 want to say is when the Dew Line found that there were  
10 natives willing and ready to work, and that there would  
11 be people to maintain the Dew Line after it was built,  
12 the Department of Indian Affairs & Northern Development  
13 had the good foresight to set up a heavy equipment,  
14 truck driving and mechanics course in Leduc, Alberta,  
15 for these native people that would be working -- that  
16 could work after the Dew Line was constructed. There  
17 were approximately 60 of us out on that course and  
18 we came back only after four months' schooling at Leduc  
19 and some of us are still on that job on the Dew Line,  
20 after 18 or 19 years. Those of us that left the Dew  
21 Line are in business for ourselves. We are repairing  
22 our own equipment. We are maintaining our own streets,  
23 we learned a lot from this kind of schooling, and I  
24 don't -- the only type of schooling in the Northwest  
25 Territories now is in Fort Smith, and what the people  
26 want now is that school be brought to them. No one  
27 hardly wants to spend time in Fort Smith away from  
28 their families any more. They want a school closer  
29 to home so that they can see their kids on the weekends  
30 and so forth.





J. Steen

1                   What does a person do in  
2 Fort Smith on the weekends but to resort to the tempta-  
3 tion of booze? What I am saying is that we should  
4 ask the Federal Government to consider reopening Stringer  
5 Hall at Inuvik for the purpose of training our people  
6 to be able to participate on the development if there  
7 was to be a pipeline built. I am asking this here  
8 because I feel at this particular place is that it will  
9 go directly through you and go directly to the Federal  
10 Government. Maybe they will spend some more money and  
11 give the Territorial Government some more money to  
12 reopen the school, or the hostel.

13                   Bringing the school closer to  
14 the people to make available or able to participate in  
15 every trade that will be required, there is no way that  
16 we are going to get the natives to go out to Fort Smith  
17 any more, and I think I can say that also for the white  
18 people who happen to be staying in our midst. To give  
19 you an example, with the laws that we have now -- there  
20 must be a page missing there -- I would like to say that  
21 I don't think that I am very happy with some of the laws  
22 or some of the judges that come into the Territories to  
23 levy penalties on some of the people who are committing  
24 crimes. These judges are too light when they're giving  
25 sentences. This could pertain to any future development  
26 in the north. Some of these judges have come from the  
27 south who think they are doing us a favor, they haven't  
28 got a clue of the circumstances surrounding the offence.

29                   The other day two people were  
30 convicted of illegal possession of liquor in a taxi.



J. Steen

1 One was from Inuvik and one was from Tuk, running a  
2 taxi here at the same time. They both received only  
3 \$25. fines. Now how in the hell are we going to keep  
4 justice in the north with \$25? People when they go out  
5 on a job or schooling must be assured that their home  
6 town where their families live is a safe place to keep  
7 them while they are gone. They should be given the  
8 assurance that their families are safe. There's no such  
9 thing as bootlegging going on around town, and these  
10 judges should consider that harder sentences for crimes  
11 of that sort be taking place.

12 We must keep peace of mind on  
13 the breadwinner, who is trying to do or trying to make  
14 money for his family when he is away. I want to say that  
15 the effects of the pipeline will not in no way, to my  
16 thinking, be as harmful to the people of the Mackenzie  
17 Valley as<sup>the</sup> highway that is now almost completed. The  
18 pipeline will move as it is built, it will not stay in  
19 one place. The work crews will move with it, the same  
20 as a highway. When a highway is built the people move  
21 with the highway. Nothing will ride down the pipeline  
22 after it's built, but the highway there is -- for every  
23 one to try to cope with that will be with you forever.  
24 All the problems that come with it. These problems will  
25 stay with us. The only place the pipeline system will  
26 cause great concern is the gas gathering plants which  
27 I am told is that these plants will have fingers reach-  
28 ing out into the areas to the different or various  
29 wells to draw the gas to them, and these people will be  
30 staying in one place all the time, they will not be



J. Steen

moving as would be the major pipeline.

While those people are in the country there should be a limit of liquor sold to them after a hard days work; most people would be satisfied with three cans of beer per day. After that we are inviting trouble. Hard booze should not be sold at all to the pipeline workers. No fishing rods, no rifles. Suitcases should be checked for liquor or dope before allowing travel, as company policy. We must prepare ourselves for development to come.

One thing, Mr. Berger, that is of grave concern is that I have been reading Ancipice's Report for the past years and what their long plans are, what their long-range plans are for development. They are continuously talking about damming waters, the headwaters of the Mackenzie, and even now they're talking about damming Bear River for energy to create energy for the pipeline development. It should be remembered that these waters run into the Mackenzie Bay, and this I am entirely against because what will happen to the climate of the delta, the muskrats, the minks, the fish, the beaver, not to mention the whales coming in from the open leads that have their young -- to have their young because out in the leads the shock of the cold water would probably make it impossible for the young to survive. It would also prevent ice melting to reach the open leads to allow these whales to come into the warmer waters. Less ice will be melted, that is the landfast ice, and if it affects the climate, would it not affect the polar ice pack to move farther south so as to affect





J. Steen

1 offshore drilling?

2 I would like to state that  
3 Inuvik has no right to support offshore drilling because  
4 they should begin to think of who they're talking about,  
5 they should remember that they are talking about our  
6 environment. It is not their shoreline that they are  
7 talking about. They do not live on our fur trade. It  
8 is not their environment, they have nothing to lose but  
9 to encourage someone else, but to try to encourage  
10 someone else's grievances for their own benefit. It  
11 should be brought to light that Inuvik is not the place  
12 any more. Tuk is going to be the place that will hold  
13 the reins from now on. We have the port, we have the  
14 resources. We will control outside business. In Inuvik  
15 nothing is controlled, just to name a few if it weren't  
16 for Inuvik, P.W.A. wouldn't have to land there, we would  
17 get rid of the middleman who transfers the freight from  
18 P.W.A. to Northward or other aircraft. People from  
19 Sachs wouldn't have to stay there and pay the outrageous  
20 hotel bills and also pay the crazy 1½¢ per mile rate,  
21 taxi rate from the airport to town one-way. If this  
22 money was used to build Inuvik -- if this money that was  
23 used to build Inuvik was used in places like Aklavik  
24 or Tuk or Fort McPherson, we'd be a hell of a lot better  
25 off. We would have our airports larger, we would have  
26 greater services, and etc.

27 Inuvik said that they supported  
28 offshore drilling by Dome Oil, provided the environment  
29 was protected. But what do these people at Inuvik know  
30 about environment, especially deep sea environment?



J. Steen

1 They did not give no direction at all, they left it  
2 all up to the people in the south who don't know anything  
3 about our environment either.

4                   Mr. Berger, I know it can be  
5 done. I mean in the case of a blowout I would not want  
6 to support offshore drilling until the oil companies  
7 can tell us how they would harness the oil before it  
8 reaches the ice or on the surface of the ocean, in the  
9 event of a blowout. A blowout would mean disaster,  
10 it would have to be declared a national disaster area.  
11 It would definitely have to be a national responsibility  
12 to harness or trap the oil before it reaches the surface.  
13 Can you imagine what would happen if the oil reached the  
14 ice? There are pockets under the ice that would hold  
15 some of this oil and the seal holes in the ice -- that  
16 is that this oil would be trapped in -- seals would have  
17 to come up through the oil in their holes to get air,  
18 and as the lower side of the ice is approximately 90  
19 times rougher than the surface of the ice, it would be  
20 impossible to remove all the oil that would be trapped  
21 in the lower part of the ice.

22                   I notice on some marine charts  
23 where it says that currents -- ocean currents, that's  
24 charts of the offshore from here -- that ocean currents  
25 vary strong here, it says on the chart, 8 to 10 knots.  
26 Can you imagine if you had a blowout 200 feet deep, the  
27 oil would rise to the surface about a mile downstream  
28 and if the current changed it would rise again to the  
29 surface a mile in the opposite direction. This is why,  
30 sir, I would not at this time support offshore drilling,



J. Steen

1 especially where ice is unpredictable. I would not  
2 support offshore drilling until we are satisfied that  
3 they can contain and control a blowout, and that neces-  
4 sary equipment to contain such blowouts are brought in  
5 and kept near such drillings. I know this will take  
6 money, a lot of money, but it can be done. It can be  
7 done quite simply, and if it is not done no one can say  
8 you were not warned of the dangers out there.

9 One of the other areas of concern  
10 is that I have learned that Shell Oil and Imperial Oil  
11 have liquifiable hydrocarbons in their gas. Shell has  
12 roughly 8,000 gallons per day. Imperial Oil has 100,000  
13 gallons per day. This will be burned off, as I under-  
14 stand, unless the government decides to do something  
15 about it. We can use this gas to counteract the freight  
16 costs that we have to pay from the south. We would --  
17 I would say that this must be one of the conditions that  
18 a tapping plant be built in the Northwest Territories, to  
19 harness energy instead of burning it off and causing  
20 pollution, air pollution.

21 Finally, Mr. Berger, I must  
22 say that the people of the north love their land, even  
23 though today the land cannot support everyone, any one  
24 family for very long; but at the same time the people in  
25 this area are dependent on the land as no one can live off  
26 the store due to the high cost of freight rates in the  
27 north and so forth. The land nevertheless is depended  
28 on by northerners to help supplement their everyday grocery  
29 bill. This is why they love their land. They will not  
30 can their fish and sell it outside, it is better straight





J. Steen

1 from the sea or the lake. They look ahead, and if you  
2 sell what you've got now, then some day you will have  
3 to buy it from the store in cans like other fish from  
4 the south.

5 Further, I would like to say  
6 I support development if it is --- but it must be con-  
7 trolled. People from the south who are going to work  
8 on the pipeline should be kept out of the communities  
9 as much as possible. There are enough half-breed kids  
10 running around now in the north without adding to the  
11 problem. As I observed the situation today, more and more  
12 white people are marrying native people and their children  
13 are beginning to look like palefaces from the south.  
14 I foresee the day that the once smiling happy man's  
15 moon-shaped face of the Inuit will dwindle away and  
16 become extinct, and finally disappear from the face of  
17 the earth.

18 I can foresee what is happening  
19 in Alaska would also happen here if wages are not  
20 controlled. Over in Alaska they pay very high wages to  
21 pipeline workers, and there are a lot of people that  
22 cannot -- that come in and fill the hotels, bunkhouses,  
23 motels; some live in shacks, others in tents, just wait-  
24 ing for a chance to get a crack at these high wages.  
25 These people can cause a great deal of problems because  
26 they have nothing to do with themselves while they are  
27 waiting for these jobs.

28 As far as land claims are  
29 concerned, it does not appear to me that the pipeline  
30 will go ahead now before the land claims are settled,



J. Steen

1 especially Inuit land claims which have already been  
2 presented to the government. It does not appear to me  
3 that it is necessary for me to say very much on it,  
4 although I am not too sure of the progress of the Indian  
5 land claims to date. It should be made clear that we  
6 need some development to keep us going during the time  
7 of negotiations of land claims. It is human nature for  
8 everyone to try to raise their own standard of living,  
9 and if development is brought to a standstill people  
10 are going to start getting mad, crime rates will rise,  
11 people will have to go on relief. People will have to  
12 have something to do with themselves. They might even  
13 get so used to being on welfare that<sup>it</sup>would take us a  
14 great deal of time to get back working again.

15 I feel that the taxpayer has  
16 the right to tell the people, including government, to  
17 get off their butts and get on with it regardless if  
18 they are receiving funds in the form of a grant or a loan,  
19 it is still taxpayers' money. Thank you, Mr. Berger.

20 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
21 Mr. Steen, thank you very much. Perhaps you would confer  
22 with the interpreter and decide between you to what  
23 extent it should be interpreted and I'm sure the rest  
24 of us will agree with whatever the two of you decide.  
25 You know the people here and some of the older people  
26 aren't back tonight, maybe they're the ones that you're  
27 thinking of, but we'll just take a moment and you two  
28 decide.

29 Sir, maybe we could keep your  
30 statement since it is in writing and have it marked as



J. Steen  
Pastor D. Freeman

an exhibit of the Inquiry.

(SUBMISSION OF J. STEEN MARKED EXHIBIT C-254)

(WITNESS ASIDE)

THE COMMISSIONER: On today  
or tomorrow we'll ask the representatives from the  
pipeline companies and the oil companies to say some-  
thing about their projects and their plans, but I think  
we should see if other people want to speak tonight,  
the people who live here. Mr. Horsfield and Mr. Hnatiuk,  
you might just bear in mind what Mr. Steen said about  
hydrocarbons, liquifiable hydrocarbons and the suggestion  
that they might be made use of here in the north, and  
comment on that when we reach you.

Well, anyone who wishes to speak  
you may do so, and it's easier for all of us, I think,  
if you just come up here and sit down. We've got lots  
of time.

PASTOR DAVE FREEMAN, sworn:

THE WITNESS: Mr. Justice  
Berger, actually I didn't come here this evening pre-  
pared to speak at this time, but in view of the comments  
-- very gracious comments that were made by John Steen,  
the Territorial Councillor, and since there seems to be  
a time when I could say a little bit unprepared, perhaps  
off-the-cuff, I just want to add what our councillor  
from Tuktoyaktuk and the Mackenzie area has said about  
concerning the justice that is oftentimes meted out  
in the Courts here, in the Arctic. It is appalling.  
It's not only appalling to us who come from the south,





Pastor D. Freeman

1 but as John has expressed also appalling to the residents  
2 of the north.

3 I would like to say from the  
4 standpoint -- I am not a business man in Tuktoyaktuk.  
5 My stay in the north in all likelihood will not be  
6 extended beyond a few years, but I have had the fortune  
7 to have travelled far in Africa, I have had the opportunit-  
8 ity to observe there, native people prior to independence  
9 and after dependence, and there are some things that  
10 have been borne home to me while I've lived here in the  
11 northland, and some observations that have come to me  
12 that I feel would be of value to this Inquiry sitting  
13 here tonight.

14 I have found the people of the  
15 north by and large very intelligent people. I have  
16 observed at times painfully that they themselves seem  
17 to sense and realize that because of the isolation, the  
18 severity of the climate in which they live, due to the  
19 rapid transitional situation in which they find them-  
20 selves in the 20th century, that they feel that they  
21 are going around in a mill pond. There seems to be no  
22 way out. I said to one of the young men of our church  
23 the other day that the people of the north in 100 years  
24 have come from the Stone Age to the 20th century.

25 He says, "Oh no, pastor, from  
26 the Ice Age to the 20th century."

27 The transition here in the  
28 north has not only been rapid already, it is increasing.  
29 As I've mentioned perhaps for the record I should just  
30 state who I am. Do you wish it in the records? O.K.,



Pastor D. Freeman

1 Pastor Dave Freeman. My involvement in the north began  
2 back in 1962 when I came north to Cambridge Bay for a  
3 summer and then the following summer I came to Tuktoyaktuk  
4 for the first time, was here for about four months, and  
5 was back again in the year 1968-69. In the meantime had  
6 spent 4½ to five years in Africa, and then back again  
7 after '69 until 1973, June of that summer of '73 when  
8 I arrived back in Tuk again. I feel that the declara-  
9 tion that was made by the I.T.C. is very reasonable,  
10 very mature, in fact from the standpoint of having dealt  
11 and having had experience with a variety of native  
12 people, it was the most mature presentation well within  
13 the bounds of reason that I have had the opportunity  
14 to come across. I think that many of the opinions, many  
15 of the desires that have been expressed on the part of  
16 the native leaders and those who are elected officials  
17 on the part of the native people really in truth do  
18 express the heart of the Eskimo people. They want to  
19 make their own stakes, and true, they're going to make  
20 them, but we from the south, we make mistakes. Every  
21 political government that we have had in the past to  
22 the present day has made mistakes. I have learned  
23 through ten years in Africa that if you want to develop  
24 leadership, you have to be prepared to let them at times  
25 fall on their face and to create a situation in which  
26 communication is open between themselves and between the  
27 authorities, or between those that could best help them.

28 My only fear is that things  
29 will degenerate as far as communications is concerned.  
30 Should I restate that? My greatest fear until the



Pastor D. Freeman

1 presentation of the I.T.C. land claims this last  
2 February was that things would be allowed to deteriorate  
3 to such a point where hostilities would grow and then  
4 eventually a land claim settlement would be forthcoming  
5 which might result in a vast area of land being deeded  
6 completely to the people of the north, to the Eskimo  
7 people; but that feelings would have deteriorated to  
8 such a point <sup>at</sup> that time where they would feel themselves  
9 isolated, both they in the north and the people in the  
10 south, and then we would have a reservation, a vast  
11 reservation like we term an Indian Reservation in the  
12 south. In my feeling, in my thinking, in my experience  
13 leads me to believe this is the worst possible thing  
14 that could happen to the people of the north, and as  
15 expressed by the I.T.C. land claims proposal, that  
16 they want to be integrated, they want to become part  
17 of the Canadian society. I think it is time that we  
18 let them. I think that as a pastor in this community  
19 and I don't, as I say I'm not a business man, I don't  
20 have business interests in Tuktoyaktuk. My stay in the  
21 community, I enjoy Tuk more than any other Arctic com-  
22 munity I have had the pleasure of being in. I enjoy  
23 Tuk, I enjoy the coast, I enjoy the people of Tuk, and  
24 I know them to be capable of governing themselves. I  
25 know they're going to make mistakes but I think it is  
26 time that steps are taken in the direction that they  
27 assume a greater control over their destiny and I  
28 feel that if time goes by, too much time, it leaves the  
29 door open for misunderstandings and hardships to come.

30 Some of our development, some





Pastor D. Freeman

1 of the development that has taken place already has  
2 been contrary to the way of the Eskimo people. They  
3 have come to settlements, instead of building settlements  
4 that bordered the coast or bordered the available  
5 access to water, we have built cities and townships and  
6 settlements that look like military camps, and this is  
7 not the way that the Eskimo have lived in the past.  
8 They have always lived and built their accommodations,  
9 whatever they might be, close to the water, and there's  
10 a host of opportunities, alternatives that as far as  
11 the northland, as far as industry too that I didn't  
12 put all my thoughts and facts together tonight, as I  
13 said I didn't come prepared to speak tonight.

14 But there are a number of ways  
15 that a better life can be brought to the people of the  
16 north, and as a pastor in the community I feel that  
17 in saying that 85-90% of the people of Tuktoyaktuk  
18 favor development, they favor a controlled development.  
19 They favor a development that is not going to result  
20 in their isolation and their further isolation.

21 I might perhaps just give you  
22 an example. In summary of how I think at least my inter-  
23 pretation as to how the native people feel, they would  
24 feel like we southerners would feel if we were sitting  
25 in our living room and some stranger came walking through  
26 our door, having never knocked at the door. He would feel  
27 and we would feel in the south, "Well, what's this?"

28 In general terms my interpreta-  
29 tion of their feelings towards development is that the  
30 knocking hasn't been proper. The approach in some areas



Pastor D. Freeman

1 hasn't been proper. The government, I just might say  
2 and climb out on a limb, I blame 99% of the difficulties  
3 and the hard feelings that exist today in the north,  
4 I blame them on the government.

5 John Steen, councillor, has  
6 mentioned that it's time that some people to be told  
7 to get up and get to work. That is true; but you don't  
8 tell them to get up and get to work by continually  
9 giving them things, and in some cases almost forcing  
10 them into business.

11 I've been, as I say, in Tuk  
12 for going on three years now this stay, and I have had  
13 occasion to observe the government almost forcing people  
14 into business. Perhaps with the I.T.C. proposals even-  
15 tually being solved and a certain percentage of  
16 resources becoming available to the native people, that  
17 is the money that should be offered to the native people  
18 to go into business or at least a small proportion of  
19 it, but if they fail, then it's their loss, and it's  
20 the loss of the whole people and in that way there's  
21 going to be pressure brought to bear that people do  
22 become responsible. I think that in the past some  
23 of the policies that have been imposed and have been  
24 maintained in the north have been at the expense of the  
25 native people.

26 We all know that if a stranger  
27 comes along and starts to treat us with gentle hands  
28 and treat us very gingerly and not make us tow the  
29 line, that doesn't create -- wouldn't create in me, I'm  
30 sure it wouldn't in yourself or anyone listening to



Pastor D. Freeman

me tonight, would not create within us respect for that person or persons or parties that were undertaking to treat us very, very gently like we were a bunch of little school kids. I have found, as I say, the Eskimo people very intelligent. They are capable and they are capable of making the majority of the right decisions. I for one express my solidarity with the I.T.C. proposals. It may not be that they get 100% what they are requesting straightaway, but I have found it to be a very mature, very forthright and intelligent approach to the whole matter, and myself, I am pro native, I am pro development. There is no way that a native person in the Settlement of Tuktoyaktuk who has no job, who has no future of employment, he's not gainfully employed, he's not doing something or involved in something that is giving him some personal satisfaction, that he is going to be a happy person.

They wear our clothes, they speak our language, they eat our food, they drive our machines, they pay our taxes, they have already 90% have opt to go with the southern society and those benefits that come from a southern society, and I feel that I know enough of the native people well enough to know that the thing that is going to bring them the satisfaction is when they also contribute their share to that Canadian society. Thank you very much.

THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you very much.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

THE COMMISSIONER: Maybe you





Pastor D. Freeman  
V. Steen

could translate the highlights of Pastor Freeman's statement.

(INTERPRETER TRANSLATES)

VINCE STEEN, sworn:

THE WITNESS: First of all I'll introduce myself. I'm Vince Steen, brother to John Steen.

What I have to say tonight, I don't represent anybody, I represent myself. What I would like to point out, Mr. Berger, a lot of people seem to wonder why the Eskimo or the people don't take the white man's word at face value any more, why when he says he's going to drill an oil well and not spill any oil or make any mess, why they don't believe him any more. Well, from my point of view it goes way back, right back to when the Eskimo first seen the white man. Most of them were whalers and the whaler wasn't very nice to the Eskimo. He just took all the whales they could get and never mind the results. Who is paying for it now? The Eskimo.

There's a quota on how many whales he can kill now. Then next following the whalers the white traders and the white trappers. The white traders took them for every cent they could get. You know the stories in every history book where they had a pile of fur as high as your gun. Those things were not fair. The native lived with it, damn well had to to get that gun, to make a life easier for himself.

Then there was the white



V. Steen

1 trapper, he came along and he showed the Eskimo how  
2 to use the traps, steel-jawed traps, leg-hold traps.  
3 They used them, well they're still using them today,  
4 but for the first 70 years when they were being used  
5 there were no complaints down south about how cruel those  
6 traps are as long as there was white trappers using  
7 them. Now for the last five years they're even thinking  
8 of cutting us off but they haven't showed us a new way  
9 of how to catch those foxes for their wives, though.

10 After them, after the white  
11 trappers and the fur traders we have all the settlements,  
12 all the government people coming in and making settlements  
13 all over, and telling the people what to do, what is  
14 best for them, live here, live there, that place is  
15 no more good for you. Right here<sup>is</sup>/your school.

16 So they did, they all moved into  
17 the settlements and for the 1950's and 1960's they  
18 damn near starved, most of them were on rations because  
19 they were not going out in the country any more. Their  
20 kids had to go to school.

21 Then came the oil companies.  
22 First the seismigraphic outfits and like the Eskimo did  
23 for the last 50 or 60 years, he sat back and watched  
24 them. Couldn't do anything about it anyway, and he  
25 watched them plough up their land in the summertime,  
26 plough up their traps in the wintertime. What you going  
27 to do about it? That cat is bigger <sup>than your</sup> / skidoo or your dog  
28 team, you know.

29 Then the oil companies. Well,  
30 the oil companies I must say of all of them so far



V. Steen

1 that I've mentioned seem to be the most -- have the most  
2 respect for the people and their ways; but it is too late.  
3 The people won't take a white man's word at face value  
4 any more because you fooled them too many times. You  
5 took everything they had and you gave them nothing. You  
6 took all the fur, took all the whales, killed all the  
7 polar bear with aircraft and everything, and put a quota  
8 on top of that so we can't have polar bear when we feel  
9 like it any more. All that we pay for. Same thing with  
10 the seismic outfits. You plough their trap. We're  
11 damn lucky to get something back for it, because who's  
12 going to mention one trap? But to the Eskimo it means  
13 something, to the trapper.

14 Now they want to drill out  
15 there. Now they want to build pipeline, and they say  
16 they're not going to hurt the country while they do it.  
17 They're going to let the Eskimo live his way, but he  
18 can't because no way, because the white man has not only  
19 gotten so that he's taken over, taken everything out of  
20 the country and everything, but he's also taken the  
21 culture, half of it anyway. The younger generation like  
22 myself and my kids are no longer Eskimo, not pure blood  
23 Eskimo. We got no culture left; what little of it, we're  
24 trying to save.

25 If they drill out there, if  
26 they finish off what little whales are left, what  
27 little seals are left, what little polar bears are left,  
28 with one oil spill of any size big enough to hurt those  
29 animals, we're finished. The Eskimo population and  
30 culture is finished, because you have to live as a white





V. Steen

1 man and you have nothing left. You have no more seals  
2 to feed the foxes. You got no more fish to feed the  
3 seals, and you've got no more seals to feed the polar  
4 bears, and the polar bears ~~are~~ going to go looking for  
5 some white men then, because they've got nothing left  
6 to eat.

7 Already in Eastern Arctic there  
8 are Eskimos getting seals covered with oil, and there's  
9 no oil work there yet, just from ships spilling their  
10 used oil; and seals covered with -- because they're  
11 covered with oil they've got no more hair on their heads,  
12 no more hair on their body, and they're starving. That's  
13 on record in Yellowknife the last two weeks or so.

14 If they get one little oil  
15 spill out/<sup>here</sup>-- mind you, that was just from a spill from  
16 a ship maybe, but an oil spill out there in that moving  
17 ice where they can't control it, that's the end of the  
18 seals. I think that not only will this part of the  
19 world suffer if the ocean is finished, I think every  
20 Alaskan, all the way to the Eastern Arctic is going to  
21 suffer because that oil is going to finish the seals,  
22 it's going to finish the fish, and those fish don't just  
23 stay here, they go all over. Same with the seals, same  
24 with the polar bears, they go all over the place, and  
25 if they come here and get soaked with oil, they're  
26 finished.

27 For the Eskimo to believe now  
28 that the white man is not going to do any damage out  
29 there with his oil drilling and his oil wells is just  
30 about impossible because he hasn't proven himself, as far



V. Steen  
Dr. H. Schwartz

1 as I'm concerned he hasn't proven himself worthy of  
2 being believed any more. That includes the Federal  
3 Government because I know I've worked with them, and  
4 I've done seismic work for them where they just blew  
5 up fish, and they had to be shut down by the Federal  
6 Fisheries, there were so many fish killed. But he was  
7 not going to shut himself down, not as long as there was  
8 nobody seeing him doing it, boy, the heck. So how can  
9 you just blame the oil company or the average white man?  
10 It's the government. The government is not running things  
11 -- they're not even controlling themselves, how can they  
12 control anybody else?

13 I would like to say in closing  
14 that the Eskimo is asking for a land settlement because  
15 he doesn't trust the white man any more to handle the  
16 land that he owns and he figures he's owned for years and  
17 years. The land settlement that he's asking for is  
18 not -- I cannot see where a white man or any government  
19 can turn it down, seeing we're not asking to claim the  
20 land for ourself, we're asking to share it, but share  
21 it on a 50-50 basis, not on a 100% basis like it's been  
22 going for the last 50 or 60 or 70 years. Thank you.

23 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
24 Mr. Steen, very much.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

25 THE COMMISSIONER: Anyone who  
26 wishes to speak, may do so.

27 DR. HERBERT SCHWARTZ, sworn:

28 THE WITNESS: Mr. Justice



Dr. H. Schwartz

1 Berger, my name is HerLert Schwartz, and I'm a writer-  
2 physician, and lodge operator in Tuk. During the number  
3 of years of my residency in this community, I became  
4 involved with the people here and also with some of the  
5 problems created by the proposal for the Mackenzie  
6 Valley Pipeline and the oil industry's exploratory  
7 activities for gas and oil in the Mackenzie Delta and  
8 in the Beaufort Sea.

9 The views expressed in this  
10 submission are only based on the habitation of Tuktoyaktuk  
11 with adjacent lands and the Beaufort Sea. They are  
12 entirely my own and have not been influenced by any of  
13 the native organizations or political affiliations.

14 It is a fairly well documented  
15 fact, supported by the rich archaeological evidence and  
16 also the observations of such well-known explorers as  
17 Rasmussen, Steffanson, Diamond, Guinness and others, that  
18 the people of Tuktoyaktuk belong to a distinct group of  
19 the Mackenzie Eskimos who for generations lived along  
20 the shores of the Beaufort Sea as far west as Herschel  
21 Island, Banks Island, and the western tip of Victoria  
22 Island in the north, Cape Parry in the east, and along  
23 the Mackenzie Delta and the Peel River in the south,  
24 with some of the trading activities extending as far  
25 south as Fort McPherson.

26 They inhabited this vast terri-  
27 tory without any interruption for at least 2,000 years,  
28 and in the process evolved a distinctive life-style and  
29 culture based on the reputation and expert knowledge of  
30 their environment.





Dr. H. Schwartz

Now, if you allow me to trans-  
gress a little, I'd like to delve into the not too dis-  
tant past as the lessons we learn from history have a  
direct application as to what's happening in the north  
today. In the mid-19th century the Mackenzie Eskimos  
numbered around 4,000 people, of which about 1,000 lived  
at Kittigazuit, which for those days must have been an  
enormous settlement. At about the same time the whalers  
came from the States in search of blubber to light the  
houses of America, an energy crisis which was only  
alleviated by the finding of kerosene. By that time at  
the turn of the 20th century most of the bowhead whales  
which provided this lighting fuel were killed off, and  
the Mackenzie Eskimos, after the massive exposure to the  
whalers, now numbered only 200 people.

In the late '20s of this  
century, misguided groups of Eskimos followed the  
Hudson's Bay, which established its trading post here  
and settled in Tuktoyaktuk. From here the people  
actively hunted and trapped in the rich fur regions  
along the coast, the delta and Banks Island. They  
were first-rate hunters, and consequently had no  
difficulty in obtaining the biggest number of furs,  
mostly foxes, and with keen competition amongst the  
fur traders that gradually sent values up so high that  
the Mackenzie Eskimos became an independent and pros-  
perous people. Many of them owned schooners,  
modern appliances, guns, sewing machines,  
and their homes were illuminated with gasoline or  
petroleum lamps, the ancient blubber lamp being a thing



1 of the past. However, it did not last for long. The  
2 boom of that cycle, so characteristic of our North  
3 American economy, had disastrous repercussions for the  
4 Mackenzie Eskimo who were locked into the system.

5 In the '30s the demand for  
6 foxes ceased in the south and the people of the north  
7 whose entire economy was fox-oriented, could not even  
8 give them away. They no longer could obtain the necess-  
9 ities and southern luxuries they had come to depend on,  
10 but even more serious, the ammunition for the guns so  
11 desperately needed for survival was out of reach to many  
12 people. So the people went back to the land and lived  
13 off this land, and in spite of their epidemics which  
14 took a fearful toll, they managed to survive.

15 Then came the '50s, and with it  
16 the Dew Line made its appearance in the Arctic, and if  
17 you recall, a joint Canadian-American undertaking on  
18 Canadian soil, but controlled by the Americans. An analogy  
19 could be drawn from what's happened in the north in the  
20 '50s as to what may well happen in the '70s and '80s if  
21 the proposed Alaska-Mackenzie Valley Pipeline becomes a  
22 reality.

23 In Tuktoyaktuk on what is now  
24 a Dew Line site there stood once a house inhabited by a  
25 local hunter and his family. As so frequently happened,  
26 in order to make a living he had to travel where the  
27 game was to trap and hunt for several months at a  
28 time away from his homestead. On one of his return  
29 trips to Tuk his house vanished, replaced by huge  
30 construction site on top of the hill, and to whom with



Dr. H. Schwartz

1 an Eskimo hunter appeared for the loss of his home  
2 site a redress of his wrong-doing to the I.T.T.  
3 conglomerate in New Jersey which founded the Dew Line, or  
4 out of the United States efforts in Washington, D.C.,  
5 which controlled it. Needless to say, he never received  
6 any compensation for the loss of his homesite, and his  
7 fundamental rights as a citizen in Canada were ignored.

8 The boom which took place during  
9 the construction of the Dew Line was only short-lived,  
10 and once the project was completed the Eskimos once more  
11 had to depend on the land for sustenance. The eventual  
12 benefits of the Dew Line to the Eskimo in places like  
13 Tuk are almost nil. The Dew Line is entirely self-  
14 sufficient and does not contribute anything to the  
15 material or cultural well-being of the population in  
16 the settlement, and the only job available to the Eskimo,  
17 that of a caretaker, is that of a most menial kind.

18 The presence of a large foreign  
19 dominated enterprise in the Canadian south, and parti-  
20 cularly<sup>in</sup> the far north creates problems not only for  
21 native people but for all the Canadians domiciled in the  
22 north. These problems are not irrelevant and may  
23 become dangerously real in the future with additional  
24 foreign-dominated developments in the Canadian north.

25 I'll report on some of my  
26 personal experiences with the Dew Line. In 1968 I, as  
27 a Canadian doctor in a Canadian plane with a desperately  
28 sick Eskimo child on board, was stalled from landing  
29 on the Dew Line airstrip in Tuk because the permission  
30 for landing had to be obtained from the States. In 1970





1 at Cambridge Bay Dew Line site, offhandedly and without  
2 realizing any untoward implications, I passed some  
3 information to a visiting staff from Ottawa of a  
4 sophisticated seismigraphic laboratory in the process  
5 of construction<sup>monitoring of</sup> the site was intended for the/under-  
6 ground atomic explosion which our own general staff did  
7 not have the slightest conception of.

8 During the Royal Visit to  
9 Tuktoyaktuk in June of 1970 the station chief on the  
10 Dew Line received secret instructions from the U.S.  
11 Air Force to hide all the classified information from  
12 the Queen and Prince Philip. Now fortunately for  
13 everybody concerned, the basic goodwill and a community  
14 of interest existing between the two nations prevented  
15 such incidents from getting out of hand, but we would  
16 be very naive not to be aware of these Americans'  
17 fears and sensitivities, because the Dew Line is a  
18 trivial matter compared to what might happen when  
19 the Alaska-Mackenzie Valley Pipeline comes into  
20 existence because it will be their life-line to be  
21 guarded and protected at all times. We should keep that  
22 in mind before undertaking this decidedly risky involve-  
23 ment.

24 Now many people are confused  
25 by the statement of the oil companies responsible for  
26 the Mackenzie Pipeline that it must branch out and link  
27 up with the oil-rich fields in the Prudhoe Bay in Alaska  
28 in order to be commercially feasible. Inuvik and adjacent  
29 people for a number of years now were told time and time  
30 again by the oil industry of the rich possible deposits



1 in the Mackenzie Delta waiting to be tapped and exported  
2 to the Canadian market in the south. Thus it was the  
3 presence of these vast petro-carbon deposits on the  
4 Canadian soil which made sense to the government and  
5 to the people of Canada for the construction of this  
6 Mackenzie Valley Pipeline. So far these predictions  
7 by the oil industry did not prove correct because at  
8 the moment the proven gas reserves in the Western  
9 Canadian Arctic are less than half required for the  
10 construction of such a pipeline. The fact remains that  
11 after many years of unprecedented effort by the oil  
12 industry and after spending hundreds of millions of  
13 dollars, the industry has reached a point of no return  
14 almost beyond the point of human and environmental  
15 consideration in its desperate search for gas and oil.

16 So far not enough for the  
17 Mackenzie Pipeline and thus the stage has now been set  
18 for offshore drilling in the Beaufort Sea, one of the  
19 most hazardous undertakings in the history of the oil  
20 industry. I have been frequently asked by the people  
21 in the south as to how the Eskimos feel about a pipeline,  
22 and also should their demands for land claims not be  
23 fulfilled, would they blow up the pipeline? Now this  
24 is a dangerous and mischievous notion much publicized  
25 by the sensation-seeking writers in the south. For the  
26 last five years I have witnessed literally hundreds of  
27 applications submitted by the oil companies for seismic  
28 work and drilling/ <sup>which were</sup> almost invariably approved  
29 by the people of Tuktoyaktuk because the people here  
30 do not seek a confrontation with the oil companies, and



Dr. H. Schwartz

1 always act in the spirit of co-operation and goodwill.  
2 Generally speaking, the people here are not opposed to  
3 exploration and to the pipeline, if only they could  
4 participate as equal and honourable partners and not  
5 on a subservient basis.

6                   However, this spirit of co-  
7 operation and goodwill which characterizes the people  
8 of Tuktoyaktuk has not always been matched by the  
9 oil companies in their quest for gas and oil. In the  
10 past the seismic work took a heavy toll of marine life  
11 in the Husky Lake and Crossley Lakes, and for the last  
12 two years the seismic line, which extends across the  
13 Kuqmallit Bay to Toker Point, and which operates from  
14 around the 20th of August until October, resulted twice  
15 in the disappearance of herring in fall time, an unheard  
16 of local phenomenon. Because of the disappearance of  
17 herring, the seals which feed on them have vanished too.  
18 So the people have no herring, and the people have no  
19 seals, and the few remaining dogs -- dog teams in town  
20 will soon disappear.

21                   The biological and scientific  
22 evidence used by the oil companies to facilitate the  
23 extension of their seismic work is loaded heavily in  
24 their favor. To use a case in point. In 1973 a report  
25 on the movement of whales in the Beaufort Sea prepared  
26 by Dr. Paul Brodie, one of the foremost whale experts  
27 in the world, was shelved by the Slaney Research Assoc-  
28 iates. The subsequent report prepared by the Slaney  
29 Research Associates in 1974 for Imperial Oil categori-  
30 cally states that whales appear in the delta in the





The companies went into great lengths to obtain the acquiescence of the Tuk people for the construction of the artificial islands in the Beaufort Sea, and on many occasions groups of people were flown from Tuk to Calgary and instructed in the safety features of these man-made islands. But last year when one of these islands cracked up in a not too



Dr. H. Schwartz

1 severe storm, and 70,000 gallons of fuel narrowly  
2 escaped from being dumped into the sea, the people were  
3 not informed. Another disaster in the Beaufort Sea was  
4 similarly buried in a cloth of secrecy.

5 Yet, in the event of an  
6 ecological disaster, the people primarily affected will  
7 be the people of Tuktoyaktuk and other coastal communi-  
8 ties. The wage economy such as we understand it in the  
9 south does not apply to the majority of people here.  
10 To begin with, there is never enough year-around  
11 employment for all the people. At the best of times  
12 the employment is seasonal, and we are just totally  
13 not equipped for subsistence in the far north. The  
14 cost of goods and foodstuffs brought from the south  
15 are the most costly of any other place in Canada, and  
16 the life-style of people which evolved after thousands  
17 of years of living off the land is such that at the  
18 moment the people here cannot compete successfully with  
19 the working force imported from the south. Because  
20 of that, they are dependent on the land, the lakes and  
21 the sea to provide them with sustenance, and if this  
22 material advantage is taken away from them then they  
23 starve.

24 I am going to quote from  
25 "Tuktoyaktuk History":

26 "Who cares when the underwater seismics start  
27 in Husky Lakes? WE have dead fish by the  
28 thousands, but the seismic crew did their work  
29 at night and played a game of hide and seek  
30 and sped away to 50 mile lake from Charlie,



Dr. H. Schwartz

1 the Eskimo monitor, who tried to follow  
2 them in a small canoe. Who cares when the  
3 underwater seismic come into Parson's Lake,  
4 with dead fish under the ice? And who cares  
5 for the trappers and their dogs when there is  
6 no fish from the Crossley Lakes? Blasted  
7 out, its waters polluted with leaking gasoline,  
8 and the men had nearly starved and barely made  
9 it to Kugaluk. And who cares when the seismic  
10 boats exploded dynamite in the Sea of Beaufort,  
11 and that summer the whales have  
12 disappeared and there was no grub for the people.  
13 And who cares for the wanton carnage of destruc-  
14 tion of blasted lakes, the rivers and the sea,  
15 nature's mutilated dreams that threaten man  
16 and all the living things?

17 Consider the pipeline. The  
18 land along this coast and the bottom of the sea  
19 and in the Mackenzie Delta is not stable. It is  
20 a giant icecap, shifting and heaving with the  
21 formation of huge frost heaves and even the  
22 bigger fingers. To wit, close in the vicinity  
23 and the point  
24 of my house/there stood once a pingo which  
25 has since disappeared. The land is disappearing  
26 on one side and building up on the other. The  
27 subterranean pressures involved in the formation  
28 of such a pingo must have been enormous. Among  
29 all this, what would have happened had there been  
30 a buried rigid pipeline in the vicinity? This  
program is peculiar to the Mackenzie Delta and





Dr. H. Schwartz

1 the adjacent Beaufort Sea only, and does  
2 not appear in Alaska or anywhere else in  
3 the Northwest Territories.

4 Even with the installation  
5 of the heat pipes or the freezer power devices  
6 in order to maintain the outside temperature  
7 of the buried pipeline relatively constant,  
8 the subterranean forces that play in these  
9 regions will still cause considerable shifting  
10 and pressures.

11 Finally, if and when such  
12 a pipeline will be constructed, due consideration  
13 must be given to the old graveyards and ancient  
14 archaeological sites which abound in the Mackenzie  
15 District."

16 Mr. Justice Berger, the purpose  
17 of this Royal Commission is to let our government and  
18 the people of Canada know the implications pertaining  
19 to this Mackenzie Valley Pipeline, and from this remote  
20 settlement of Tuktoyaktuk, from the shore of the  
21 Beaufort Sea I make a special plea to the Prime Minister  
22 of our great country, the Right Honourable Pierre Elliott  
23 Trudeau, to consider the momentous issues at stake in  
24 this Inquiry, which will not only affect the existence  
25 of our northern people but in the years to come will  
26 shape the destiny of Canada. Therefore I respectfully  
27 submit that the government will redouble its efforts  
28 by all means available at its disposal to protect the  
29 fragile Arctic environment.

30 In the spirit of fair play and



Dr. H. Schwartz

justice which characterizes our nation, the Mackenzie Eskimo should be immediately compensated for the loss of use of their ancient lands, and built-in royalties be obtained for them for the extraction of any of the non-renewable resources in the land and in the sea. The traditional hunting and fishing grounds at Cape Bathurst and the Husky Lakes will be protected from industrial development and of the Mackenzie Valley Pipeline must be 100% Canadian, free of any foreign entanglements or any linkage to an outside system, and that in the construction of such a pipeline, the working priorities and general contracts should be given first to the northerners.

Lastly, included in this brief are pages from 150 to 173 from "Tuktoyaktuk History".

Respectfully submitted.

THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you very much, Dr. Schwartz. Perhaps Dr. Schwartz, you might confer with our interpreter and just indicate what highlights ought to be translated and while you're doing that, I think the rest of us might just break for five minutes and stretch our legs, and those of you who still wish to speak can collect your thoughts.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

(PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 10:35 A.M.)

(PROCEEDINGS RESUMED AT 11 A.M.)

(SUBMISSION BY DR. H. SCHWARTZ MARKED EXHIBIT C-255)

THE COMMISSIONER: Come to order, ladies and gentlemen, and if we could have quiet,



R. Pokiak

1 our interpreter will translate the highlights of Dr.  
2 Schwartz' statement. Dr. Schwartz' statement is an exhibit.

3 (INTERPRETER TRANSLATES)

4 THE COMMISSIONER: We are still  
5 here and we have some more time so I think we can hear  
6 from one or two more people. Maybe I should just tell  
7 you that this map here is one of the Inquiry's maps that  
8 shows the routes of the pipeline in the vicinity of  
9 the Mackenzie Delta. Those pictures over there are  
10 pictures of pipeline construction, supplied, I think,  
11 by Arctic Gas, and these are maps of traditional hunting  
12 and trapping areas used by the native people of Tuktoyak-  
13 tuk, and those maps are supplied by COPE, and this is  
14 a map prepared for COPE that shows what Dr. Shearer,  
15 who prepared the map, feels may be the way in which  
16 exploration and development will proceed in the Beaufort  
17 Sea. That doesn't represent any plans that the  
18 companies have to drill those wells or build those  
19 pipelines in the Beaufort Sea. It simply represents  
20 Dr. Shearer's view of the way things may develop.

21 At any rate, at any time we  
22 have an adjournment you're welcome to come up and  
23 look at these maps, and look at the photographs and so  
24 forth.

25 Well, we'll carry on then. We  
26 have some more time tonight, and anyone else who -- yes  
27 sir?

28  
29 RANDY POKIAK, sworn:

30 THE WITNESS: Well, first of





R. Pokiak

1 all I'd like to introduce myself. I'm Randy Pokiak and  
2 I've been recently elected the president of the Hunters &  
3 Trappers Association in Tuktoyaktuk.

4 I'll just say what I come up  
5 here to say anyway.

THE COMMISSIONER: O.K.

7 A First of all I'd like to  
8 thank you for coming down here to hear us out because  
9 there's been some things going on that we wanted to say  
10 for a long time, but we didn't have anybody to tell it  
11 to, so we thank you for coming down<sup>that</sup> we can say it  
12 to you, and I believe that you're going to get a good  
13 representative to speak for us at Ottawa or wherever  
14 you're going<sup>with</sup> whatever you find out from these  
15 inquiries.

16 Anyway, I've been trapping now  
17 for -- this is my fifth year in trapping, and living  
18 off the land right now, and the only time I find employ-  
19 ment so far, ever since I started trapping, was during  
20 the summertime when the trapping season is closed and  
21 spring hunt is over, and I'm waiting for the trapping  
22 season to start again, and so far I've had a chance to  
23 make my living off the land and getting what I need out  
24 of what I get from the land.

25 First of all I would like to  
26 say that we're concerned -- I am concerned about what  
27 happens to the animals and the wildlife that we make our  
28 living off of, and so far I've seen, as I grew up here  
29 and went to school here, and as I grew up how the  
30 hunters and trappers around here used to have quite a



1 hard time because we have no caribou herd being up  
2 in the land here, of it being gone, and hardly any animals  
3 coming down because of that; but recently these past  
4 few years there has been some caribou coming back down  
5 to our area, and because of that I've seen wildlife  
6 other than foxes, like wolverines and wolves, coming down  
7 following the herd, and now that it's back I find out  
8 how it is when there is no herd of caribou or a herd  
9 like that is driven away or is chased away, what that  
10 will do for us -- to us, and I want to see that this  
11 is prevented from happening again in the best possible  
12 way. Also, that's just part of -- I heard somebody  
13 talking about it too recently, as I've talked with them  
14 and what they say is true, that the scent of animals  
15 like a herd of caribou brings the other wildlife around  
16 to feed on them, and this is why I believe that we're  
17 getting the furs that we're getting now, and life  
18 living off the land is getting a little easier because  
19 of that.

20 Also, I'd like to say something  
21 on the ice and on the water there. That's part of the  
22 area that we make our living on, we get the foxes that  
23 we trap on the coast most of the time. Most of the  
24 winter they live out on the ice, they roam around out  
25 there, mostly they get out of the land and they go  
26 out on the ice and live out there with the rest of the  
27 animals, living off what's left over from polar bears  
28 and if anything happens to the water there, like if  
29 there's a blowout or anything, or gas that will kill  
30 all the marine life and the fish and the seals, well



R. Pokiak

1 then our livelihood too is gone and that's part of the  
2 reason, too, why I come up here just to say that.

3 Also to give my viewpoints on  
4 the pipeline and what I think of it, and what I saw  
5 -- I have trapped, as I've come back to the north, I  
6 would like to say first of all that I've been in Yellow-  
7 knife for five years going to school there, and after  
8 I finished I came back and I started trapping, and  
9 already Imperial Oil and the companies were already  
10 right in this area going about their explorations. I've  
11 seen and we had some difficulties with them. We've  
12 had things that happened that we didn't like but up to  
13 now it's improving, but we've seen it happen on the  
14 land, this thing happening on the land and now it's  
15 starting to go into the sea, after they've done their  
16 work on the land they've gone -- they're starting to go  
17 out on the sea now and to me and to you people I know  
18 for sure that the land and the sea are two different  
19 areas altogether, and you know, some things that you  
20 could do on land you could never do on the sea.

21 First of all I'd like to say  
22 something on the pipeline. You know, in my traplines  
23 in wintertimes you've got a lot of time to think, you  
24 know, when you have to camp early because of the short  
25 days, and the -- we listen to the radio and the news  
26 in the papers that we take out, newspapers to read,  
27 about these Imperial Oil<sup>and</sup>/pipelines coming on, you  
28 got a lot of time to think about these things. I've  
29 thought about them. I've seen the pipeline that's  
30 proposed, one thing I seen it for sure it's really



R. Pokiak

1 pushing exploration right now out beyond -- it's  
2 pushing it a little too fast because now that the  
3 exploration starts here, the pipeline is going to be  
4 built or proposed to being built, they are going out  
5 there and doing things that are pushing it too fast  
6 especially out in the water. Recently they've been  
7 starting to make artificial islands in shallow water,  
8 in water that they could make artificial islands on  
9 because it's<sup>not</sup> too deep, but lately they've been trying  
10 to go out into deeper water where it's another ball game,  
11 the way I see it.

12 On the pipeline, I've really  
13 nothing against it being built, the only thing is that  
14 they should consult with the people and find out -- or  
15 the engineers of the pipeline anyway -- they should have  
16 an idea of what's the layout of the land and the things  
17 that happen in that land and surroundings, the animals,  
18 and everything that where that pipeline is going to be  
19 the engineers should have an idea of the land and --  
20 because the land up in the north here is altogether  
21 different than that of the south, especially in this  
22 area here, right around Tuk, where it's the permafrost,  
23 the ice is not very far below the moss and the tundra,  
24 and the land is even a lot different than just up here  
25 by Inuvik or Aklavik where I think it's a little thicker  
26 there, but it's altogether different down here, and  
27 you know, this pipeline could be built but they should  
28 be -- it should be taken care of how it's built to  
29 make sure that, you know, because we've looked at the  
30 way the white man has come down to the north, the





R. Pokiak

1 way they have done things, the way they have built  
2 things, without taking the advice of the people that  
3 know the land, that know what's going to happen, and  
4 then they go ahead and do it and they see it's a waste  
5 of time and a waste of money. We look at them and say,  
6 "Boy, you know, they don't know what they're doing there."  
7 You know, we look at them and say, "They shouldn't be  
8 doing that, and yet they are doing it."

9 One reason why it's like that  
10 is because, especially with the government, is it's run  
11 from the south instead of up here where the people know  
12 the surroundings. They take orders from Ottawa, like  
13 I've been to Ottawa and the people down there are in  
14 the office and I've talked with some of the people and  
15 they figure that what they do down here is real good  
16 like, the way they operate -- especially in Tuk, I'm  
17 just going to talk about Tuk because I'm from here and  
18 can't talk about any other settlements -- anyway, about  
19 some of the things that happened here, like let's just  
20 take for example the trench down here they're building  
21 in front of the school. They built that to keep the  
22 hill from eroding and going into the sea, and they  
23 built one and it cost a lot of money, and the way they  
24 built it was not built right, so the first storm that  
25 came along wrecked that whole thing. Now they've got  
26 to start over again and I hope they do a better job  
27 this time.

28 About, you know, another  
29 thing is about the houses. When I was in the office  
30 at Ottawa they said one time, they were talking about



R. Pokiak

1 the houses and how good they were and how it was the  
2 best in the whole Northwest Territories, the houses  
3 that they built here, and during my summer jobs I worked  
4 with the houses and I've seen some disadvantages in those  
5 prefabs that they built. That's just part of it. I  
6 just take that for example, anyway.

7 Anyway, they don't know too  
8 much of our land and what goes on here, like the weather  
9 is pretty unpredictable sometimes. Sometimes we get a  
10 good season, sometimes we don't get too good of a season.  
11 We've experienced that within the past few years, out  
12 in the ice there out in the ocean one time there's  
13 hardly any ships ever went east, I think one ship went  
14 east and never came back because of the ice conditions,  
15 and you see, these things you could never tell, eh,  
16 and before they go into like drilling out in the ocean  
17 or building a pipeline, they should look at these things  
18 and take them into consideration and I think when they  
19 do that -- and I believe they're going to do that --  
20 that it will be all right for the pipeline.

21 Also about the exploration  
22 that's been going on around this area, seismic work.  
23 When I first came down here there was a lot of blasting  
24 and seismic work out in the ocean, and they killed a lot  
25 of fish and during the summertime, the first two years  
26 that I came to Tuk I've been trapping with dogs, dog  
27 team, and I depended on the fish I get to feed my dogs  
28 during the summer as I piled it up, depended on it to  
29 feed my dogs, and because of the blasting and the work  
30 that's been done in the land, blasting near the lakes,



1 I heard something about the concussion of the blast  
2 that could kill a fish under the ice, and because of  
3 that we experienced a time when there was hardly any  
4 fish in this area, and we had quite a hard time to  
5 get our food because that was part of our main diet  
6 anyway, it was part of my main diet and I believe it  
7 was the diet of a lot of the people here, and we were  
8 concerned about it, and work was being done into  
9 seeing that better care was taken in work that was  
10 being done.

11 Anyway, we've seen all this  
12 about when Imperial Oil first came they <sup>ploughed,</sup> made a road  
13 through the land, going over streams and plugging up  
14 those creeks and that's part of the reason too why  
15 there was no fish coming down. The fish that went to  
16 spawn in lakes never came down, the ones that never  
17 got killed by the blasts, and recently they've been  
18 cleaning out the creeks, and those that were not cleaned  
19 out, I heard somebody say that --and I think it stands  
20 to reason that the lakes where the fish were, well those  
21 lakes got so full of water after a few years from being  
22 blocked up and all this snow that fell and filled up  
23 them things, those lakes, and they just pushed their  
24 way through the blocks, and that's part of the reason  
25 why too, I believe that we're getting fish. Anyway  
26 that's getting real good now, those explorations,  
27 we're getting more say in what's going on, and -- but  
28 not enough because let's just take those land use per-  
29 mits that's been given out to the companies that's going  
30 to do the exploration around here, well, they're





R. Pokiak

1 being handled from Yellowknife, that's the first thing,  
2 and Yellowknife people is just like Ottawa, the govern-  
3 ment running the show down here when they're not down  
4 here. It's just about the same thing about the permits  
5 with Yellowknife handling it and they don't know what's  
6 going on down here, they don't know where we make our  
7 living, they don't know the lakes where we get our fish,  
8 they don't know the layout of the land, just by the  
9 map, eh, but they don't know -- they never been really  
10 around here to see the land and to see how delicate  
11 it is. Anyway, that's one thing that I do not like is  
12 when somebody else from a different place that don't  
13 know what's going on, don't know the land to give out  
14 these permits.

15 Right now we've got a Joint  
16 Land Use Committee going in the delta. I think you  
17 heard about it, it's from Aklavik and Inuvik and Tuk  
18 joining together in looking these permits over because  
19 most of the permits that's been given to the companies  
20 overlap our territories so we've joined together and  
21 we look them over as much as we could get together, but  
22 we have pretty hard time to find funds for that so  
23 we hardly ever met. But we've got together a few times  
24 and looked over the applications, but we've been trying  
25 to find ways to get ahold of that, some of the money  
26 anyway, so that we could get together and do a better  
27 work on the permits that come to us.

28 Anyway, that's starting to  
29 improve, but it's taking a long time and especially when  
30 developments come so fast and it didn't take very long



R. Pokiak

1 for Imperial Oil to get into this area. They just  
2 started a few years ago, and it's a big operation now.  
3 The longer you wait to find out about things and to  
4 get things going, you know, it could develop a lot more.  
5 That's one reason why I brought that up, because I  
6 would like to see, it would really help if we were  
7 given a chance to really do our thing in seismic work.

8                   We do not disapprove of those  
9 exploration work being done up here so long as the  
10 surroundings are never hurt, eh. Like we do not allow  
11 exploration in Bird Sanctuaries during the time the  
12 birds are down there because it endangers them, eh,  
13 it endangers them by keeping them away from there, and  
14 their nesting area should be left alone while the birds  
15 are there.

16                   Also the fish, you know,  
17 the seismic work that goes on the land, well, some of  
18 them go over lakes, but I hear they starting to stop  
19 blasting in the lakes but we never know without some-  
20 body over there to watch.

21                   O.K., that's about the seismic  
22 work there. Because of all these things, you know,  
23 we never know what's going to happen now that exploration  
24 is being done around here, and our livelihood as trap-  
25 pers is being endangered.

26                   I went to a meeting recently  
27 in town and they talked, I heard Imperial Oil talk,  
28 I've heard the people in the Town Council talk, and  
29 they're talking about things that's going to develop  
30 around here, but somehow the trappers always seem to



1 never get their views said, or they never ask what the  
2 trappers think, eh. There is three kinds of people that  
3 I see down there: There is Imperial Oil Company, and the  
4 people in the north, the Inuit that are employed, and  
5 then there are those people that live off the land.

6 Most of the time the people  
7 that live off the land are not really consulted before  
8 something is done, or when they do they're sort of  
9 pushed aside. I don't know why, but I get that feeling  
10 anyways, being a trapper. I mentioned that one time  
11 but they said it wasn't so, but at the meeting I told  
12 them that whatever they were talking about they never  
13 once mentioned what the people that live off the land  
14 think. They were just talking amongst themselves and  
15 I tell you, us trappers, we don't have any other  
16 income other than what we get off the land. This is  
17 our real concern, is what we -- to make sure that we  
18 get something out of it, and if something happens to  
19 the land, if something happens to the animals, if  
20 something happens to the wildlife, or our surroundings,  
21 well, what do we have? That's one reason too, why land  
22 claims should be settled and with this land claims  
23 being settled if something does go wrong, well we have  
24 something to rely on or something to go on to start over  
25 on.

26 Well anyway, especially out  
27 -- I'd just like to say once again about exploration on  
28 the water, I do not approve of it until, like I say,  
29 the reasonable solutions are made to prevent anything  
30 that will endanger the surroundings, because we make





1 our living off that -- out of the ocean too, and all  
2 it takes is one blowout out in the water to just about  
3 wipe out everything we make our living on, and if that  
4 is done, we've got nowhere to look or to turn to, other  
5 than being sorry our land claims is not settled. I am  
6 really in support to the land claims being settled  
7 and I know that everybody is, even the exploration  
8 companies are because they want to go ahead too, and I  
9 would just like to say that because land claims is  
10 settled that that's not saying they could do anything  
11 they want. They still got to follow -- I believe follow  
12 the same principles that we laid out right now. They've  
13 got to go consult the people b\_e\_cause they know more  
14 about the land, we know more about it, and what we  
15 don't know right now all the time we're finding out  
16 something else new about it.

17 One thing I learned about  
18 trapping, one thing I learned about hunting is that  
19 we never know everything all at one time. No matter  
20 how old you get, you I believe you keep learning, you  
21 find out something new and this is what I like about  
22 it, because sometimes you figure you know everything  
23 and then again there's times that you find out that it's  
24 not true and you sort of happy that there are other  
25 things to learn.

26 Well, that's about -- oh yeah,  
27 just before I go, there is just one other thing I'd  
28 like to make my viewpoint on, that concerns the people  
29 here not only the pipeline, but it's the highway that  
30 they have here between -- that they propose to build





R. Pokiak

1 between here and Inuvik. I've talked to people and  
2 not only the people around here, the hunters and trappers,  
3 a few of them, but other people that have seen highways  
4 being built in other areas like down south, eh, there's  
5 a lot of people that come down here to work, up here  
6 to work and I've talked with them, and some of them are  
7 interested in the way we make our living down here and  
8 they tell us how they used to do that down south, and  
9 how soon as the highway was built / <sup>through</sup> the Territory there  
10 how the wildlife have disappeared from there because  
11 of people, tourist people that go out with guns and  
12 shoot everything that's in their way.

13                   The way I see it, it's going  
14 to really endanger the livelihood of the hunters and  
15 trappers around here because down south you've got  
16 bush, trees, and anything just about to block the  
17 people that shoot game, eh. You've got -- you can't  
18 get from one place to another so quickly because of  
19 the bush, and around here when there is any highway or  
20 anything, it's just flat and there is a lot of warm  
21 weather in springtime and somebody with skidoos could  
22 roam around all over the place shooting everything that  
23 they could. I'm not saying it's going to happen, but  
24 it could. I see a danger in that.

25                   Also I've thought about it too  
26 and you know, there's still the winter road that comes  
27 down here and also during the summer there's the boats  
28 that come down here, I don't see why they can't have  
29 the road right to Inuvik and then from there they  
30                   during summer  
could work it out by boat/ because they've got a lot of



R. Pokiak

1 stuff coming down to go to the east anyway, they got  
2 to unload it here so I don't see why Tuk could be  
3 encountered with the equipment and stuff that goes to  
4 the east, and also the winter road to be used like  
5 right now for anything that comes down from the south  
6 that goes to Inuvik by the highway.

7 That's all I am going to say  
8 on that. But you know, I'd just like to remind you that  
9 there's still people living off the land here and  
10 they're the people that mostly are less heard of all the  
11 time because they're out of the town most of the time  
12 making their living, and for us too it's always pretty  
13 hard to just call a meeting all of a sudden because of  
14 that, because you just can't go out for a little while  
15 and then come right back. But most of the trappers  
16 have made an exception and they have come home and they  
17 are home and I believe that you'll be hearing more from  
18 them.

19 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
20 Mr. Pokiak.

21 (WITNESS ASIDE)

22 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, I  
23 think it's midnight or thereabouts, and we should --  
24 we'll be here tomorrow and again on Wednesday, assuming  
25 that you want us to stay. So we'll adjourn now and  
26 I think maybe we should start tomorrow afternoon at two,  
27 so I invite you all to come back tomorrow at two  
28 o'clock in the afternoon and we'll carry on at that  
29 time and then again tomorrow evening at eight. So we  
30 will see you then.

(PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED TO MARCH 9, 1976)



1 Tuktoyaktuk, N.W.T.

2 March 9, 1976

3 (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED PURSUANT TO ADJOURNMENT)

4 (MRS. ROSE ALBERT RESUMED AS INTERPRETER)

5 (VICTOR ALLEN RESUMED AS INTERPRETER)

6 THE COMMISSIONER: Ladies and  
7 gentlemen, we'll call the hearing to order this after-  
8 noon.

9 MR. USHER: I was just going to  
10 introduce these maps here, land use maps, and the  
11 trappers are going to talk about them after that.

12 These maps on the wall, these  
13 two maps here were compiled as part of the Inuit land  
14 use and occupancy project sponsored jointly by the Inuit  
15 Tapirisat of Canada and the Department of Indian Affairs  
16 & Northern Development. I conducted the research here  
17 in the Western Arctic and was assisted in this community  
18 by Bertram Pokiak.

19 This particular map series is  
20 intended to show the maximum extent of hunting, fishing  
21 and trapping by species and by historical period. The  
22 research for Tuktoyaktuk was done between July and  
23 December, 1973, and is based on interviews with 73  
24 adult male Eskimos who were resident here at that time.  
25 Each was asked to mark on maps similar to these all  
26 their past traplines, hunting areas, fishing areas,  
27 from the time they were old enough to engage in these  
28 activities on their own. These maps show the sum of  
29 all these men's land use.

30 The maps also include the land





1 use of people who lived in this area at some time in  
2 the past, but were resident in one of the other Western  
3 Arctic communities at that time. So there is information  
4 for somewhat more than 73 men on these maps.

5 In the same way, activities  
6 of those Tuktoyaktuk residents who had lived in other  
7 places such as the delta or Banksland are recorded on  
8 the maps for those communities. These maps show the  
9 activity of people who have lived on the coast between  
10 the mouth of the East Channel of the Mackenzie River and  
11 the mouth of the Horton River.

12 Two maps were compiled for the  
13 purpose of this hearing, one showing land use from 1955  
14 to the present, this one here; another one showing land  
15 use before 1955, which we didn't put up on the wall but  
16 it is on file with the Commission. It doesn't look too  
17 different from that one and we didn't have room here so--  
18 1955 was chosen as the dividing date because in that year  
19 construction of both Inuvik and the Dew Line began, and  
20 this as well as other events led to altered patterns of  
21 land use. There is also a composite map showing land  
22 use for the entire Western Arctic region, which is that  
23 one there.

24 The report which accompanied these  
25 maps entitled:

26 "Eskimo Land Use and Occupancy in the Western Arctic"  
27 dated 24th of September, 1974, and written by me, has  
28 been listed as a document with this Commission. A summary  
29 of that report, as well as the first draft of these maps  
30 were presented to a meeting of Tuktoyaktuk hunters and



1 trappers on the 2nd of July, 1974. Those attending  
2 verified the report and maps as an accurate representation  
3 of their land use and occupancy, subject to minor  
4 corrections based on their knowledge which they told me  
5 about at that time, and which I subsequently incorporated  
6 into these final maps.

7 I wonder if I can read one more  
8 thing into the record, because I will not be in Paulatuk  
9 at the community hearing there, and I guess I'm the only  
10 one that can swear to this, so I would have to read it  
11 now. I won't read the whole thing, just the relevant  
12 parts.

13 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, read  
14 whatever you think you should.

15 MR. USHER: O.K. I was also  
16 assisted in Paulatuk by Bertram Pokiak. We worked there  
17 in July and August, 1973, and there were interviews with  
18 15 people there.

19 The Paulatuk maps show the  
20 activity of people who have lived along the coast be-  
21 tween Horton River and the Croker River. Two maps were  
22 compiled for the purpose of the hearing in Paulatuk, one  
23 showing land use from 1959 to the present; the other  
24 showing land use before 1959. 1959 was chosen as the  
25 dividing date because in that year the people of that  
26 region started living together in one settlement, and  
27 this led to different patterns of land use.

28 The first draft of the Paulatuk  
29 maps was presented to a meeting of Paulatuk residents  
30 on the 2nd of February, 1974, and a summary of the report



B. Pokiak

1 to a similar meeting on the 14th of May, 1974. Those  
2 attending verified the report and maps as an accurate  
3 representation of their land use and occupancy, subject  
4 to minor corrections based on their knowledge which  
5 they told me about on those occasions, and which I  
6 subsequently incorporated into the final maps.

7  
8 BERTRAM POKIAK, sworn:

9 THE WITNESS: First of all I'd  
10 like to let you people know I'm here from Tuk. I was  
11 brought up in Aklavik where I first started to trap for  
12 my living. Then I moved up along the coast in 1930 and  
13 have travelled quite a bit. Then from Aklavik I went  
14 down Baillie Island and then from there I spent my next  
15 three years up in here. The next 15 years up in  
16 Victoria and south coast, south-west coast of Banksland,  
17 and also west coast. Every place I have been on, I  
18 owned dog team them days, no skidoos, and everywhere I  
19 been travelling, my dogs come around with me.

20 When I getting short of dogs  
21 some years I go along buy two or three dogs from another  
22 person to fill up my team for the next winter. Now  
23 after I quit the island, I made my home in Tuk, right  
24 here, I guess.

25 Before I moved to Tuk I go to  
26 Baillie Island and trap out on the ice, hunt seals  
27 there. It's one of the best place for seals in the  
28 north, and also on the west side of Banks out on the  
29 ice for my sealing there, foxes. Then when I got back  
30 to Tuk I trap out on the ice, start in January up along



## B. Pokiak

1 as far as Cape Dalhousie. Polar bears were too cheap  
2 then and I never bothered to save the skins to sell.  
3 Like if I got a big polar bear, too big to handle, I just  
4 /skinned, throw the skin away, take the meat for myself and my  
5 dogs. When I was in Banks Island we get a lot of foxes  
6 and my wife had enough work with cleaning foxes, it's  
7 better than cleaning a polar bear for \$15, that's what  
8 they were only worth them days.

9 Like in Aklavik, a lot of fur  
10 them days, just like you white people working for wages  
11 and you have money in the bank, well my bank was here  
12 all around with the fur, whatever kind of food I wanted,  
13 if I wanted caribou I go up in the mountain; if I  
14 wanted colored fur I went up in the mountain, in delta I  
15 get mink, muskrat; but I never make a big trapper, I  
16 just get enough for my own use the coming year. For  
17 next year them animals are going to be there anyway,  
18 that's my bank. The same way all over where I travelled.  
19 Some people said to me, "Why you don't put the money  
20 in the bank and save it for future?"

21 I should have told him that  
22 time, "The north is my bank," but which I never did,  
23 I just thought of it lately.

24 So that's how it goes. Now  
25 while I was brought up, when we started using guns. I  
26 did start driving with open kyak, open canvas-covered  
27 kyak with my grandad in Aklavik, and that's what I  
28 use for my winter sealing up in Banks Island and when  
29 I came back to Tuk I use a canoe; but in Banksland  
30 and Baillie Island and up here I use the open kyak





## B. Pokiak

covered with canvas, that's for retaining seals which I shoot in the open water.

Now the best spot here on the mainland for open water hunting seals, but the last few years it's been no more good. From the reports I've been getting from the hunters from Baillie Island, the seals are so poor they don't float any more. Most of the seals shot in open water sink and they lose them, the ones had they can't get them; they got/very little blubber to keep them floating. I don't know what caused that, could be short of feed.

All them years I trapped I went hunting seal Banks Island, up here, and in winter the seals were so fat they can't sink. Even out here, out from Warren Point 20 miles out; now what I'm worried about Baillie Island if the seals will never come back, because the last three or four years they just decreasing, decreasing. Finally this winter at North Star Harbour, hunters from here they only got one seal so far. I think that's about all.

I've been up in the bush, I know how to make my living out in the bush, know how to trap marten, but I didn't do too much in the bush for marten, the year I was going in there was a very poor year. That's back in here.

That's about all for now, I guess. These maps here, it's all in here, the printing is very small but anybody could look them over. They are from right Tununuk right down to Baillie Island and all these little settlements, them days; there's nobody



B. Pokiak  
 C. Gruben

living in them now, but they're all numbered in this here, places what the people used to live in and make their living. Them days camps are so close to each other you could just walk around to the next camp for a visit, and it's all marked down in here, all around in here, and then inside of Eskimo Lakes all along the coast. There's a few names I didn't mark down just a little ways off from town here. Well, they got names for each little point and each little bay, but I left a lot of them out, but the only ones I marked down on here was places where the old-timers and even nowadays we hunters around here use them.

Yeah, I guess that's about all for now. Anybody who would like to ask any questions about what I brought up, well they could just let me know anyway.

THE COMMISSIONER: Fine. Thank you, Mr. Pokiak.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

MR. BAYLY: Mr. Commissioner, we will make that document which I believe is entitled: "Tuk Land Freeze Proposal," an exhibit before this Inquiry.

(TUK LAND FREEZE PROPOSAL MARKED EXHIBIT C-256)

CHARLIE GRUBEN, sworn:

THE WITNESS: I was born in 1913, July 23rd at Kendall Island. 1914 we went to Kittit and Hudson's Bay started making a post there, and my dad was Hudson's Bay manager till 1926 he died. 1927



C. Gruben

1 the Hudson's Bay store closed. The only two posts  
2 was Aklavik and Baillie Island that was open then. I  
3 was 13 years old, I was left with two sisters, two  
4 brothers, and my mother, we had to make a living off  
5 the country.

6 That's a long ways for being  
7 13 years old to Aklavik by dog team where we used to  
8 get our supplies, what little we used to get.

9 Then since I was growing up  
10 we stayed back and forth between Kittigazuit and Tuktoy-  
11 aktuk till I was old enough so I could cover more  
12 country. In 1943 --

13 THE COMMISSIONER: Sorry, I  
14 tried to hear you because you speak softly, but if  
15 we're not quiet none of us will hear and it's important  
16 that I at least should. So maybe you'll take your time,  
17 Mr. Gruben, and Mr. Usher will see if he can get that  
18 mike up to your height.

19 A O.K. I'll keep on  
20 talking so I can finish this.

21 1943 I decided to go across  
22 to Banksland, which I was living for the first year I  
23 was staying at Blue Fox Harbour. Am I loud enough now?

24 Q Well, that's loud enough  
25 for me, but some of the others are maybe having diffi-  
26 culty, so just speak a little louder. Don't let us  
27 get in your way.

28 A So about eight years I  
29 was living in Banksland; DeSalis Bay I lived two years;  
30 I lived one year on account of the ice at Cape Parry,





C. Gruben  
 J. Jacobson

Booth Island; and another time I stayed in Cape Bathurst for one year, I couldn't cross because there was too much ice. 1953 I stayed there, I got 767 foxes and 14 polar bears. I came back to Tuk and about then, 1954, I went back to the same place, I get another 640 foxes, so I figured it was too much work for my wife so I came back to Tuk and that's the time I seen my house was gone. The Dew Line moved it and I was pretty mad.

Q That was your house that Dr. Schwartz was talking about.

A M-hm, that was my house. I was pretty mad but nothing I could do. That just goes to show you how the white people used to treat the native people, if they want something they don't ask, they just go and grab what they want. So ever since 1955 I stayed in Tuk. After that I never went north. I go around a little bit but not too much now. I guess that's about all I can say for now. Maybe later on I'll talk some more about it.

THE COMMISSIONER: Fine. Thank you, sir.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

JIMMY JACOBSON, sworn:

THE WITNESS: My name is Jimmy Jacobson and I was born on Baillie Island. When I first seen Bertram was around Pearce Point when I was 12 years old, and I've trapped there on foot, never did very much trapping. I used to go with my brothers and trap towards Inman River. After I stayed two years



J. Jacobson

1 at Pearce Point we moved to Maitland Point with my dad.  
2 That's close to North Star Harbour. From there I used  
3 to trap on foot. I used to trap on foot sometimes 30  
4 miles on foot in one day, pack my foxes and I remember  
5 one day I packed five foxes and dragged a wolverine  
6 30 miles.

7 THE COMMISSIONER: You said  
8 "dragged a wolverine"?

9 A Yes, because I had too  
10 much pack with my foxes. I used to meet people with  
11 dog team, only me on foot because I ~~have~~ no dogs. I  
12 used to camp where there was polar bear tracks, lots  
13 of polar bear tracks, <sup>no gun,</sup> because you know when the pack was  
14 heavy I didn't want to go too far. The only reason I  
15 was doing that, I was <sup>a</sup> given away as a kid, I was adopted  
16 you know, when I came back home I was just like nobody.  
17 So I rather go on foot and trap to keep away from home  
18 because I had too many brothers and sisters and I was  
19 unliked. So from there we moved to Wood Bay. We stayed  
20 there for two years and trapped. From there I went on  
21 my own when I was 15 years old and then ever since then  
22 I moved to Tuk, I trapped towards Anderson River. I used  
23 to run a size 7-800 traps, I know the last year, four  
24 years ago when I trapped inside of one month I got over  
25 500 marten, but I never trapped since. I'm a carver  
26 now. I make my living in carving.

27 So I've been pretty well all  
28 over. I used to trap rats and used to trap about 1,000  
29 rats in the spring, but now there is no more rats, hardly  
30 any, doesn't pay to go out. Used to shoot over a thousand.



J. Jacobson

1 Used to go into the delta once in a while and shoot  
2 rats but now I've settled down in Tuk for the last 30  
3 years. But now mostly I just hunt meat for my family  
4 and fish; but everything is getting harder every year  
5 to get so now I'm pretty well settled in Tuk on account  
6 of my kids, but at that time you didn't have to go very  
7 far to run into people every 20 miles or something along  
8 the coast here, you run into a few families living, they  
9 used to be scattered all along the coast.

10 But after the Dew Line started  
11 they all end up in one lump in Tuk, so you see everybody  
12 in Tuk now. I don't know what caused that, it may be  
13 easier living or they don't want to part no more, maybe.  
14 So now we're all pretty well -- but now they start, few  
15 families move back to North Star Harbour because it's  
16 easy living there and good hunting.

17 Well, it's pretty hard for the  
18 last few years since everybody moved here on account of  
19 Dew Line started. Ever since Dew Line started they move  
20 here and ever since then it's hard to move back with not  
21 a right outfit to go back into the country.

22 Then I've worked for Imperial  
23 Oil for about three or four years, made just enough for  
24 a living, but when I found I could make a little more  
25 money in carving, so I'm carving now for the last three  
26 or four years. I haven't got any more to say.

27 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
28 very much, Mr. Jacobson.

29 (WITNESS ASIDE)  
30



F. Cockney

1                                    FRANK COCKNEY, sworn:

2                                    THE WITNESS:    My name is

3    Frank Cockney.    I was born in Yukon in Shingle Point  
4    in 1922.    So from there on I was mostly brought up in  
5    my young days in Kendall Island, which is about here  
6    somewhere, and I live with my grandad, I didn't know  
7    when I lost my mom so they kept me just like they  
8    adopt me.    So I was raised with my grandparents.

9                                    We were there for many years  
10   until I got to be 14 years old. Then from there on, 1935  
11   we passed through Tuktoyaktuk with a schooner named  
12   "Saucy Jane", so we went up all the way up to Dalhousie  
13   and then going up to Husky Lakes, and we went up to  
14   the end of the Husky Lakes, which is right beside  
15   Sitidgi Lake, they call it.    Dennis Creek, that's  
16   what they name it right now, I guess you guys heard  
17   about that.

18                                   There was another boat with  
19   a guy and family, Tom Elanik, they went up with us in  
20   1935.    So next year, 1936, we went all the way back  
21   with it.    That time I just started on my own, like dog  
22   team, I had four dogs, I go with my grandad and Tom  
23   Elanik and also I guess you seen Charlie Gruben was  
24   talking before, he's right there, and his brother Willie,  
25   he used to reach us up there that time, 1935 when we  
26   were at Dennis Creek.

27                                   Then when we come back we  
28   come back to Kendall Island again, but I didn't really  
29   know how long we stayed there, and then we moved to  
30   delta. Well, them days the old people, like they never





F. Cockney

1 stay one place, they wanted to find better place, I  
2 think. That's why they always travel, and after they  
3 found better place, they stay a few years and maybe  
4 it's better living, easier too for game, fish, meat.

5 Then we live in the delta for  
6 a while quite close to Inuvik, about -- there was no  
7 Inuvik at that time, and from there on me and my brother-  
8 in-law used to one year whale, hunt marten, through the  
9 delta, Miner River which we didn't do much because we  
10 don't know the land there. You got to know the land where  
11 the game is. So maybe that's why the old people used  
12 to try to find out which way land, a good way to trap.

13 I prove it myself when you don't know the country, you  
14 can't do very well because you don't know where is a good  
15 place to trap. Good fishing, good hunting, unless  
16 you found out before that, then you could go back to  
17 it and pick out the best place.

18 Then from there I went to  
19 Sachs Harbour -- no, not Sachs Harbour, to Jesse Bay,  
20 1941 we were there one year with the same schooner,  
21 "Saucy Jane", myself, my family, and Bowen Island.  
22 Little Jim brought us and Roger Island that time they  
23 were living, they are two of my brother-in-laws. So  
24 when we went back and I stayed in the delta again, so  
25 after one or two years we stayed in the delta, trap  
26 around rats and trap all different kind of fur, mink,  
27 lynx, things like that, and then I went back to Sachs  
28 Harbour this time, which is Fred Carpenter, Paul Adam,  
29 and a few other different families -- what you call him,  
30 Big Dick and we went back from there, so I stayed another



F. Cockney

1 few years, maybe one or two years, maybe a year, I  
2 think. Then we went back out to the same place again  
3 into Jesse Bay with a different crew, though, except  
4 Owen was there again, my brother-in-law. So I guess  
5 you know Abe, he's sitting right over there, on that  
6 last trip he was with us. Isaac Simon , he and his  
7 wife, Abe was a very young fellow that time. So Little  
8 Jim was there also, and we went back all the way.

9 Oh yes, I skipped one place  
10 there you might be interested in. Then from there we  
11 stayed in Jesse Bay in the springtime, me and my wife,  
12 and Abe, we went to Holman Island for Easter. Then Abe  
13 went down by the police plane from Holman Island to the  
14 mainland, just to Aklavik. Then when we got home there  
15 was no one at home. We left Little Jim, Owen and Isaac  
16 while we were gone for Easter, they left the delta by  
17 plane, I didn't even know what kind of plane. It must  
18 have been big enough to take the whole family anyway.  
19 Therefore me and my family would get left alone all the  
20 way across the ocean , we left alone with the schooner.

21 So I was young that time and  
22 I didn't worry too much because I know the way already  
23 twice. Then towards the spring William Kuptan was  
24 right close to us, we know that year, which is somewhere  
25 around 25 to 30 miles this side of Jesse Bay. We call  
26 them Nahaluk, the Eskimo name is Nahaluk. I didn't know  
27 the English name. So we told him to stay with us  
28 in this past spring so we take him to wherever he want,  
29 and by that time Charlie Gruben and their family, they  
30 stay De Salis Bay. There were too much ice to go on the



P. Cockney

1 shore, so we went way out. We know they are there but  
2 we could hardly see their camp because we couldn't  
3 reach it, no way, there was too much ice close to the  
4 shore. So we went down to our way there to Sachs Harbour  
5 we wanted to catch -- I know there are two boats that's  
6 going to go across to the mainland, the "Omingmuk" and  
7 "North Star" So we did catch it there, we stayed only  
8 one night, we head across to Baillie from there the  
9 next day. Then from there on I didn't go back to Banks  
10 Island, so I went back to the delta from there, I think  
11 we went back in '55 at that time, '55 in summer.

12 So we went to Tuk -- oh no,  
13 that's right, we went to Tuk, we didn't go anywhere, we  
14 stayed around I guess too long and part of the summer  
15 here. We decided to -- we didn't decided to stay but  
16 the falltime come, the slush on the ocean here, we  
17 couldn't use it on the boat any more. Half-ways to  
18 Whitefish Station we had to turn back. That's why we  
19 moved down here, so ever since that time we been here,  
20 spring of year 1956, that year we lived at Tuktoyaktuk  
21 here, I didn't go anywhere except one year I went to  
22 Dew Line, Pin 1, Bar 4, I named them three places.--  
23 four places with Bar E, which is Horton River.

24 When we come back with the  
25 schooner I didn't leave Tuk since that time but I start  
26 to trap around, hunted, and then oil companies came  
27 somewhere around '65, I think, '65 or '66, and then  
28 winter of '67 I started working at base camp across  
29 there, which is on right now. So I work about a couple  
30 of years, so by that time my boys was big enough, I used





## F. Cockney

1 to take them along when they were very young, when I  
2 come back to Tuk from Sachs Harbour. Then they raised  
3 up here in Tuk.

4 So we couldn't leave it because  
5 after we found out easy living, lots of fish, lots of  
6 geese, lots of ptarmigan, no bush, you know, it's hard  
7 living in the bush sometime, there's too much snow, too  
8 much willows, you got to know the delta pretty good  
9 to make a living there, otherwise you work for nothing  
10 most of the time.

11 So when I started to work in  
12 the camp there two of my boys, one night they spent with  
13 me, so they talking to me, "Dad, you hunted for us, you  
14 teach us when we were small, travelling with us. Time for  
15 you to take it easy if you want to work across the camp,  
16 we could hunt meat and fish, that way we could help you  
17 out, you already brought us up, you don't have to work  
18 too hard and hunt."

19 That's why I slacked down on  
20 hunting, ever since I never do too much hunting except  
21 in the springtime, hunting geese.

22 So we still here. I travel  
23 around quite a bit into Husky Lakes, to trap Dalhousie,  
24 in fact all the way back to Bar 2. It's quite a long  
25 trip sometime, I used to trap that time with a Bombadier.  
26 Takes too much to trap with a Bombadier. You've got  
27 to catch enough fur to pay for your trip, gas, it takes  
28 too much gas. They're not like trucks, they could really  
29 burn lots of gas, maybe three hours you could finish  
30 somewhere around 8 to 6 gallons of gas. They take lots



## F. Cockney

1 of gas, especially when it's soft snow.

2                   So after that I decided to  
3 myself I couldn't keep up this way, I'd be going in  
4 the hole steady, and I couldn't keep up to maintain it  
5 all with my machine, so I quit using it and back to  
6 trap around with the dogs, which is not too far from  
7 here, just make few days trips towards the Kendall  
8 Island. I knew that's where I been raised in that  
9 country, so after that I didn't trap for many years now,  
10 ever since I start to work with the company, I work  
11 six years across the base camp up till 1973.

12                   After that I make my living  
13 at contract with Imperial Oil, now and then a little  
14 bit of work there just give me enough to make a living,  
15 don't make no money ahead. So I worked a little bit  
16 there, sometime work in the summer, sometime work in  
17 the winter, I never worked steady after that six years,  
18 but I was working six solid years, two weeks in, one  
19 week out.

20                   Well, I haven't got too much  
21 to say. I didn't catch much in my young days, you know.  
22 I worked hard but sometime you get quite a bit, but  
23 I didn't want to say anything about what I catch. I  
24 did catch a fair amount of fur all right sometime,  
25 rats, muskrats anyway. Oh yes, I used to work when I  
26 was in the delta because season starts in March,  
27 trapping season on muskrats, so we have to work very  
28 hard. If we don't work very hard whole summer, no jobs,  
29 no work, anything, we can't make no money at all. That's  
30 the only chance we got, March, April, May, June, until



F. Cockney

E. Felix

1 June 15th. I used to work very hard myself, hardly  
2 sleep, even lose weight quite a bit. I know I'm going  
3 to make up for that after June 15th. That's the way  
4 we used to live, most of us in the delta, not really  
5 from region but most of my young days I spend my years  
6 in the delta. I know lots of delta parts yet, with the  
7 boat and travelling with a dog team.

8 So I haven't got too much to  
9 say unless somebody ask me. It's pretty hard to continue  
10 on just like talking to yourself, unless somebody ask  
11 you. Thank you.

12 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
13 Mr. Cockney.

14 (WITNESS ASIDE)

15  
16 EMMANUEL FELIX, sworn:

17 THE WITNESS: I was born here  
18 in 1920, and since the time I was here I have been  
19 using my own language.

20 INTERPRETER ALBERT: Emmanuel  
21 Felix said he was born in 1920 and they used to live  
22 here at Tuk all the time, and he learn how to hunt and  
23 trap by following his dad around. He was only ten years  
24 old when he said they used to go to Whitefish Station  
25 every summer for whaling, and then they'd come back here  
26 to Tuk in August and they only had five nets, so they  
27 used to fish all the month of August, because they had  
28 to put fish away also for the winter.

29 Long ago when you have to keep  
30 fish for the winter, you have to bury in the ground,



E. Felix

1 that's what you call pit fish. He said when he was  
2 growing up there was only five houses in Tuktoyaktuk,  
3 and after a while they scattered for a few years between  
4 1927 and '32, there was only one house left. I guess  
5 he think that the other peoples must have used the other  
6 empty houses for wood. But he said he was 13 years old  
7 when his father finally gave him a dog team of his own  
8 so he could travel by himself.

9 He said after he had his own  
10 dog team, he still had to follow his dad around so  
11 he could trap same as him, and he said one time he was  
12 coming home alone and he been getting a fox, and it  
13 was a funny looking color, it didn't look like it was  
14 worth anything because it was blue. He said when he  
15 brought it home the neck was broken, he didn't think  
16 very much of it, but he said later on when his father  
17 sold the foxes, it turned out to be No. 1 blue fox.

18 He said after that he always  
19 hunt -- when he start hunting on his own, he could go  
20 as far as Sail Bay and also there is a place he could  
21 go in front of Kendall Island, and in 1944 he went to  
22 Sachs Harbour. He said after he spent a year in  
23 Sachs Harbour he came back again and him and Phillip  
24 North hunted together for a year, and after that he  
25 said the year after that again he also hunted with a  
26 guy named Tommy Chicksi. He said they were staying in  
27 Baillie Island at the time, and he said there was seals  
28 around there so every time they were running short of  
29 dog food they used to just have to go down to the  
30 open water and even in just a little while you could





E. Felix

1 get four or five seals.

2 He forgot to mention while he  
3 was on Baillie Island he got -- Pullen Island, one year  
4 he got three polar bears on Pullen Island, and he sold  
5 three of the polar bears, he sold two for \$20 each and  
6 one for a sleeping bag.

7 He lived in Baillie Island, he  
8 went back to Sachs Harbour again after a year. After  
9 he spent a year in Sachs Harbour he came back and him  
10 and Noah Elias trapped together around Russell Inlet.  
11 He said while they were travelling along they also  
12 trapped marten as far as Horton River.

13 THE WITNESS: No, Anderson River.

14 THE INTERPRETER: Anderson  
15 River.

16 THE WITNESS: Once I was, but  
17 most of the time we were at Crossley Lakes.

18 THE INTERPRETER: He said that  
19 year in 1955 when the Dew Line was just starting to build up  
20 they used to trap along the edge of the ocean because  
21 at that time there was quite a few foxes. He said in  
22 them days too, around 1955, even while you lived at Tuk  
23 he used to have to go out on the ocean here, and he  
24 also could catch seal. He said while he's out  
25 trapping they don't actually look for a polar bear, but  
26 they always used to see them around and he'd get one  
27 every year. He said since 1955 since the Dew Line  
28 started he work on the Dew Line, so he never been trap-  
29 ping very much, but he said in 1957 he trapped for a  
30 while also but he went to work again and his brother



E. Felix

1 had to pull out his traps.

2 He said in the year 1939 or '40  
3 long ago they used to live around in the coast here,  
4 but they used to go to the delta in the springtime to  
5 hunt muskrats. He said a long time ago too when the  
6 Hudson's Bay trading post was in Tuktoyaktuk, they  
7 used to have a net, him and his friend, Hiram used  
8 to fish. He say it used to be really good fishing. He  
9 said one time they had a net, it was about as long as  
10 this Community Hall, and when they went to check it they  
11 had 225 whitefish.

12 He said a long time ago when  
13 they work they used to get only 50¢ an hour and when  
14 they worked ten hours they get \$5.

15 He also said that although he  
16 never checked it himself, since last year he don't know  
17 for what reason that there's been a lot of dead fish  
18 around Tuk, and he said in the fall time they all got  
19 drifted ashore , right from here as far as close to  
20 North Star Harbour.

21 He said a long time ago when  
22 he remembered when they heard about fish dying, when  
23 the fish died from being pushed by the ice, they used  
24 to be facing one way or the other, and he said that's  
25 the way they used to die if the ice pushed them long  
26 ago. But he said these fishes must have died in the  
27 summer because they were flat on their backs.

28 He said a long time ago also  
29 around September 15th the people used to fish herring  
30 and they used to get really lots, especially up from



E. Felix  
F. Cockney

high water and wind, but he said the last two years they also get wind and high water but there's no herring.

He said the last of all before he finished talking, he want to talk about the drilling that they are planning out in the Beaufort Sea. He said if any of you ask the Eskimos that are living here, and the Inuit that are living here if they agree with it, he said he knows that every one of them say "No."

Thank you.

THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you, Mr. Felix.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

FRANK COCKNEY, resumed:

THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, I'm going to say a few words again and introduce myself again. I'm going to talk my dialect this time so Rosie and Victor are going to translate that. I'm going to have to talk my dialects.

INTERPRETER ALBERT: Mr. Berger, Frank Cockney said he just wanted to talk to you about what he learned while he was growing up and the first of all he said a long time ago he used to follow his grandfather around, that is how come he learned about different people from all over. He said at one time Eskimos used to get together in Aklavik after ratting and just before it was whaling season time. He said he was quite a small boy but everyone know how it is when you follow your grandfather around. But that's the way he grew up.





F. Cockney

1 He said he was big enough to  
2 understand and that was the first time he saw the Indians  
3 there, and the Indians and the Inuit used to mix  
4 together, and that was the first time he also found out  
5 that there was chiefs, and he said the Eskimo chief  
6 was Mangilaluk, and there was other peoples there that  
7 got together with the Indians -- Nuligak and Kaglik,  
8 that was the Eskimo leaders. He said the other Indian  
9 people he found out only later were Paul Koe and Jim  
10 Greenland and Chief Julius. He said he used to wonder  
11 how they always got together, but later he found out  
12 they were making plans about their land.

13 He said long ago, even from  
14 way back, he found out only later even though he didn't  
15 see them very often and not very many few times, but he  
16 said he found out only later that the older people  
17 always used to get together. I guess they always planned  
18 how they should look after their land, so he said now  
19 after he grew up he knew it's nothing new that peoples  
20 plan about their land, and how they look after it. It was  
21 done a long time ago also.

22 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, I was  
23 just trying to think something, I don't want to lie, I  
24 want to make sure I used it.

25 INTERPRETER ALBERT: He said he  
26 was thinking for a while and he'd like to tell you also  
27 long ago he said that their fathers and their mothers  
28 and their grandparents, whoever it was, used to talk to  
29 them. But sometimes he said while he was growing up some  
30 of the things they talked about didn't matter too much



F. Cockney  
C. Gruben

1 to him, maybe because he was a little bit bad. But  
2 he said after a while he found out that they were trying  
3 to talk to him so he could make a good living.

4 All the things that his grand-  
5 father said to him, he never thought much about it but  
6 after he grew up and start living on his own he know  
7 that all the words that his grandfather used to say to  
8 him all came out, and it was good.

9 He said that's all for now, and  
10 if anybody else want to talk he have a chance now.

11 (WITNESS ASIDE)

12  
13 CHARLIE GRUBEN, resumed:

14 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, I  
15 think I was cheating on my wife a little bit there when  
16 I said I got 14 polar bears. My wife got two herself.

17 (LAUGHTER)

18 Back to the migratory birds,  
19 1974 I was out hunting geese towards Kendall Island  
20 there was a helicopter flying around and I see all these  
21 geese passing through one place so I went over there.  
22 All I seen was just the snow bank was just yellow with  
23 eggs, that's on account of the helicopters trying to  
24 tag a grizzly bear. They don't realize that they drive  
25 all the geese away from their nesting grounds. They  
26 don't know it. They don't realize that they're killing  
27 about a couple of thousand geese just to tag one  
28 grizzly bear.

29 Now going to the pipelines,  
30 I want to say something that if they give us any choice,



## C. Gruben

1 I think I choose the pipeline because if they find a  
2 leak in the pipeline they got computers that can shut  
3 it off right now. But if they ever start taking the  
4 oil out with tankers, if there's any leak the whole  
5 coast is going to be soaked with oil.

6 Offshore drilling, I don't  
7 believe, I have no part in that because in deep sea I  
8 been travelling between Baillie Island and Banks Island,  
9 some waves get up to 50 feet deep. How they going to  
10 stop it if they have a leak? There's no way they're  
11 going to stop it. If they want to drill in the winter-  
12 time, in the line if they want they can drill it on the  
13 side and plug it off, but no way you're going to do  
14 that out in the ice because the ice is moving all the  
15 time, they'll never stop the leak. ✓

16 Under the ice is just like  
17 fork, too, you know ice is not smooth on the bottom of  
18 the ice. How they going to stop it with the rigs they  
19 got?

20 Going back to the law about  
21 hunting again, I'm going to say a little bit. The way  
22 the game wardens today is pushing the people, I don't  
23 think it's right because they just make them mad and  
24 they start getting off their minds sometimes. When  
25 we were young we had a Chief Mangilaluk, he tell us  
26 not to kill this and that, we don't dare do that because  
27 we want to listen to our chief so good we don't overkill.  
28 It was better than game wardens we got today, I think.  
29 That's the way the peoples used to handle their game  
30 that time. We don't kill game just for the sports, we



C. Gruben  
J. Jacobson

1 just kill what we need and that's it.

2 I think that's about all I  
3 can say for now.

4 (WITNESS ASIDE)

5  
6 JIMMY JACOBSON, resumed:

7 THE WITNESS: I'd like to say  
8 something about the pipeline too on Cape Bathurst and  
9 Eskimo Lakes. Lots of us Eskimos, they talk about  
10 Cape Bathurst and Eskimo Lakes. We feel that Eskimo Lakes  
11 and Cape Bathurst should be just like a reserve kept  
12 free, not just keep it free for two or three years,  
13 completely have it for a reserve in case a pipeline  
14 come up, we got something to go back on to keep our  
15 good hunting ground because if that pipeline ever come  
16 up, people will be only rich for one or two years.  
17 They won't have money for years and years because most  
18 of the people after they work on the pipeline they bound  
19 to go and have a heck of a good time, most of them, and  
20 come back broke. They got to fall back on something.  
21 It's something that would be good to keep for the  
22 young people because they got to go back to hunting  
23 and fishing for sure.

24 Another thing about the pipe-  
25 line, they should look a little bit more about the  
26 pipeline before they put it up because I run into one  
27 doctor at Holman Island one time, he stayed there all  
28 summer with his wife, and he told me some of them  
29 hills grow 18 inches a year, some of it six inches,  
30 some of it 10 inches a year, the hills grow. So I kind





J. Jacobson  
C. Gruben

1 of think if they put up the pipeline they should think  
2 a little bit because if the hills grow that much a  
3 year, I think they need almost an elastic pipeline .  
4 So I'm kind of worry about myself a lot of times to think  
5 about it a little bit. I don't show I'm worrying about  
6 it, but I think we got to think twice before -- and check  
7 them hills real good before they put the pipeline  
8 through because if it ever busts, there's rivers running,  
9 the rivers are not still. Some of that oil is going to  
10 go a heck of a long ways before they catch up to it,  
11 and it's going to be hard on birds and everything else.

12 So I haven't got much to say,  
13 so Mr. Berger I'll give this to somebody else.

14 (WITNESS ASIDE)

15  
16 CHARLIE GRUBEN, resumed:

17 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, I  
18 want to say one more what I've got in mind. I can't  
19 understand the government hiring all kinds of people  
20 for different things, working, spending a lot of money  
21 to send people all over; but they don't seem to find  
22 money to have monitors to watch the oil companies  
23 what they doing out in the ice such as what they're  
24 doing now out in the ice. When polar bear hunters come  
25 back they say that they see a cat trail out there and  
26 they don't know what they're doing.

27 Well, I can't understand.  
28 They find money for every other thing but they can't  
29 find money for an Eskimo to watch the oil companies,  
30 which would do the people, they like to know what's



C. Gruben

1 going on. But so funny to me, you ask the government,  
2 "Is there a way of finding money to send some Eskimos  
3 out to see what's going on?"

4 They say, "The government is  
5 broke, they are broke." But how in the heck can they  
6 find money for every other darn thing? That's what I  
7 want to find out, Mr. Berger, and I hope you find out  
8 about it because we want to know what's going on.  
9 But it's so funny, it's not even funny. That's all I have  
10 to say, Mr. Berger.

11  
12  
13  
14 THE WITNESS: Excuse me, Mr.  
15 Berger, I got more things that I seen myself. I used  
16 to be a monitor quite often and this was in Eskimo Lakes  
17 about four years ago. What I seen, they used to drag  
18 a cord about a mile long and sometimes it would get  
19 caught between the rocks, so they have to pull it back  
20 out, and I used to see them jugs, it's about six  
21 inches long and about so thick, they just coated with  
22 fish eggs. I never said nothing because I figure that  
23 they think I'm green anyway, I don't know what's going  
24 on, you know, but I kept this till we got to the main  
25 lake. They started getting wise to me, they wouldn't  
26 blast in the daytime any more. They wait till it get  
27 dark so I can't see nothing. I got wise to them too,  
28 I know where they going to land in the morning so I went  
29 across there with one of the boats, and they were about  
30 three or four miles away, then I went out with a canoe



C. Gruben

1 and kicker and then I even went two miles and counted  
2 over 400 fish, so I went back right away and phoned  
3 John Hunt, he was the fishery, and he took us to Inuvik  
4 right away, they got so mad they quit right there, we went  
5 to Inuvik. John Hunt and myself, we phoned Trudeau  
6 what they going to do about this?

7 Trudeau told us, "Stop them  
8 right now."

9 So we had to do, pretty mad,  
10 but they had no choice.

11 THE COMMISSIONER: That's Mr.  
12 Trudeau of the Fisheries Department?

13 A And another time in 1959  
14 and '60, that's the first time the oil company actual  
15 exploration was blasting at Liverpool Bay and all around  
16 the fingers up there. They use up to 200 pounds of  
17 dynamite sometimes in one blast, and you could almost  
18 walk on top the fish, it was so thick. I worked for  
19 two years with them when they were blasting up there.  
20 Frank Cockney could tell you the same thing, I guess.  
21 He was working two years with me up there. I started  
22 off with \$300 a month from here and I worked about a  
23 week and I started getting 15-\$1,600 a month working  
24 with them. They thought I was good for nothing, I  
25 guess, when I first started and they figured they were  
26 going to pay me 300 bucks a month.

27 I was trained as shot-bolt too  
28 that time, till I know everything that was going on.  
29 Even seals come belly up sometimes on the blast.

30 (WITNESS ASIDE)





F. Cockney

1                   FRANK COCKNEY, resumed:

2                   THE WITNESS: I wanted to add  
3 to that little story, he said I was there with him and  
4 I wanted you to make sure I was there, so I'm going to  
5 put a little joke on what we did that time.

6                   Three of us           stayed in  
7 them two boats. Him, he stayed in the "Omingmuk" and  
8 I stayed in my own boat, "Saucy Jane". He use it for  
9 kitchen , that's where they feed the men; but then  
10 again that boat named "Saline" work out in the daytime,  
11 me and Charlie, we stayed back, anchor out middle of  
12 the Eskimo Lake and we had a radio, we had to operate  
13 that radio. We were kind of green about them, you know,  
14 we didn't know much. So we used to teasing each other.  
15 We told Charlie, me and the cook, "You better handle  
16 the radio", so he did, but again we left that time,  
17 he didn't want to do it any more so I had to do it  
18 at the end so we had lots of fun, but anyway it's  
19 hard to talk through the radio when you don't know  
20 too much, I guess.

21                   Oh yes, another thing, Charlie  
22 was just telling there reminds me one time we didn't  
23 get along in some way up there. Anyway the whole crew,  
24 three older neighbors, me, Charlie, Abe, John Raymond,  
25 so we damn near quit one day. If they ever quit, us  
26 guys that time this company that was working with us,  
27 they would get stuck, eh. So that boat of mine, we  
28 were going to bring it back to Tuktoyaktuk. We all  
29 decided to go back home because they were using it for  
30 kitchen the same time, but maybe Charlie could add



F. Cockney  
C. Gruben  
B. Pokiak

1 that up a little bit after just to say we were there  
2 together. That's the way it works.

3 Anyway, Charlie could add that  
4 up, I guess, a little bit.

5 (WITNESS ASIDE)

6  
7 CHARLIE GRUBEN, resumed:

8 THE WITNESS: Well, excuse me,  
9 there was about four natives working there and one of  
10 us cooked. The engineer started making fun of him,  
11 call him a dog and everything behind his back, so I  
12 didn't like it and I told the boys, "We can't work when  
13 one of us acting like a dog."

14 So I told the boss.

15 "What's wrong with you guys?"

16 "We don't want to be run down,  
17 we working just as hard as anybody else, there's no  
18 use calling one of us a dog."

19 So they talked us into staying  
20 so we stayed there till the end. Thank you. I guess  
21 that's all I have to say.

22 (WITNESS ASIDE)

23 THE COMMISSIONER: I thought  
24 we'd stop for supper in a few minutes, but if any of  
25 the trappers have anything further to say, now might  
26 be the best time to do so before we stop for supper.

27  
28 BERTRAM POKIAK, resumed:

29 THE WITNESS: Well, I haven't got  
30 too much to say right now, but like I said before, I



B. Pokiak

1 travelled around quite a bit, seen a lot of changes  
2 going on in our hunting areas and all that, why every-  
3 thing is disappearing, and these governments spend a  
4 lot of money, thousands of dollars just to -- for  
5 this environment. The land animals and the marine  
6 life, they spent thousands of dollars on that.

7 I know a lot of old people,  
8 they could only ask them and get information, why spend  
9 thousands of dollars to hire somebody to study that  
10 wildlife? This is our land and we know what's in it.  
11 Why not come to us and get information instead of  
12 spending years and years studying the animal, why not  
13 just go in for a year just to prove it?

14 I just noticed on the map  
15 the other day for a Bird Sanctuary. They were marked  
16 on the map in red circles where the geese and ducks.  
17 I seen they left Baillie Island and Cape Bathurst  
18 Peninsula out of that. I never asked nobody, but why  
19 they left that place out? Right from Cape Bathurst  
20 even on Baillie Island itself the geese are travelling  
21 to Banks Island to breed. In a cold spring they come  
22 back to the mainland and that's where they breed,  
23 nesting and bring up their young. I notice that part  
24 is left out on the map of Bird Sanctuary. I was just  
25 wondering why?

26 MRS. ALBERT: Is there someone  
27 here to answer that?

28 THE COMMISSIONER: No, but  
29 I think that Miss Allison, you might make sure that  
30 Mr. Bayly raises that question during the cross-delta



B. Pokiak

1 evidence to be given at Yellowknife next week and the  
2 week after. It's a good question and I just want to  
3 make sure COPE pursues it at the hearings we're holding  
4 at Yellowknife next week and the week after.

5 THE WITNESS: And the last of  
6 all, I would like to see some more younger hunters that's  
7 hunting now trying to make their living, to speak out a  
8 little more while you're here. I'd like to see that done.  
9 They already know what kind of life we had before oil  
10 exploration started, all along the coast. Now everything  
11 just start disappearing. I'm not going out any more now.  
12 If I could, all that life which I had I would do it  
13 all over again, I enjoyed it. But I'm getting too old  
14 for that now. That's all I have to say.

15 (WITNESS ASIDE)

16 THE COMMISSIONER: I think  
17 maybe we'll adjourn for supper and come back tonight at  
18 eight o'clock. I invite you all to come back here at  
19 eight o'clock tonight and we'll carry on with the hearing  
20 at that time, and I want to thank all you gentlemen for  
21 the evidence you gave about the way you lived in the  
22 old days. It's very helpful and informative to me.

23 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 5 P.M.)

24 (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED AT 8:26 P.M.)

25 (LAND USE MAP OF TUKTOYAKTUK MARKED EXHIBIT C-257)

26 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, ladies  
27 and gentlemen, we'll call the hearing to order this  
28 evening, and repeat once again that anyone who wishes  
29 to say anything may do so now.

30 I think that --





M. Noksana

MARK NOKSANA, sworn:

THE WITNESS: My name is Mark Noksana. I been living here since '38, 1938 in Tuk. Before I say anything I'm just going to go to the map and talk about all the reindeer dried from Alaska, I'm going to start on first. It's going to take me quite a while though.

THE COMMISSIONER: Well --

THE WITNESS: I'm one of the guys that bring the reindeer from Alaska. Mr. Berger, I hear that people in Tuk want me to talk about the reindeer, the reindeer from Alaska so I'm going to talk about it. Tonight I'm going to talk in Eskimo, take my time, and she is going to translate.

THE COMMISSIONER: Fine.

THE WITNESS: I don't want to speak in English, get twisted all over.

THE COMMISSIONER: O.K.

THE WITNESS: I was born in Alaska, I was born in Point Barrow, I was born 1913. I'm going to talk about reindeer now.

(HELEN GRUBEN RESUMED AS INTERPRETER)

THE INTERPRETER: I was born in Alaska, Point Barrow, in 1913 and my parents and I were at Beach Point and they came over the mountain.

THE WITNESS: While she translate it in English, we heard the reindeer was coming from Kobuk and I was still with my parents trapping and living off of country, and I happened to be just



M. Noksana

1 15 or 20 miles up in the land and a white man came  
2 to supply a little store there for a long time, about  
3 6, 7, 8 miles, and the little store there and the man  
4 came from the river with a dog team and they happened  
5 to hit us, and they went down to get supply from the  
6 little store, and he came back to us and asked me, he  
7 says, "The boss told me we could get somebody to herd or  
8 take them to the herd."

9 I says, "I'm willing to work,  
10 so you can take me."

11 So he asked me that evening  
12 to stay with them that evening. When I think about it  
13 I was pretty young, and that evening I asked my mom if  
14 I can go because I was only a boy amongst the family.  
15 So my mother was thinking, she asked me, "How long you  
16 going to be out there?"

17 I tell them, "I don't know  
18 how long it's going to take the reindeer to take it to  
19 the cannery."

20 She says, "You can go if you  
21 want to."

22 So I went there, him and another  
23 guy, next morning went to the herd and we start going  
24 from Pitcher Point -- and this map is not far enough  
25 over here, it's just up to Herschel Island, this map  
26 here, and I was over here. This is Otter Island here.  
27 Pitcher Point is about 100 miles over that side and  
28 before we reached, we come around there, we come to  
29 the Ice River there, we stay there in summer. We just  
30 go by the foot when we travelling, we got about 20



M. Noksana

sleds

1 /of them just lined up and back and forth, the reindeer  
2 got to eat, all supply we had to carry it that way  
3 for reindeer, we only got one dog team, just in case  
4 of emergency or something, we just have it for the dog  
5 team. We stayed there that summer. We stay in the  
6 summer one place to keep the herd one summer and from  
7 there we left again around January when the ice is  
8 thick enough to travel by the reindeer. From there  
9 we started travelling and we come to the polar in 1933  
10 and we travel around there all winter. We don't travel  
11 too much every day, about 10-15 miles a day, not every  
12 day we don't travel, just depends on the weather.

13 THE COMMISSIONER: How many  
14 reindeer were there? How big was the herd?

15 A It was about 5,000 when we  
16 there. When the summer come we had a hard time to keep  
17 the reindeer because reindeer come from away over that  
18 side, they want to go back there. Every time they get  
19 stray, some of them just want to go back. So we just  
20 keep going along there till we come to King Point east  
21 of Herschel Island, we stay there summer again for  
22 another season. The following time before we reach  
23 this year the following year somewhere west of Herschel  
24 Island, just keep slowly travelling. We stay there  
25 all summer with the herd, and we had to be out every  
26 24 hours <sup>one person</sup> to keep the herd from chasing around here,  
27 24 hours, no tent whatsoever, even winter and summer.  
28 It doesn't matter whether weather cold or blow, we got  
29 to be out, just a packsack and a little grub on your  
30 back and you stay out 24 hours. No shelter, no place.





M. Noksana

1 We have to keep the herd around.

2 We stay there. The boss told  
3 us -- and that was in King Point -- he said, "We going  
4 to try to go across Mackenzie around February when the  
5 day is longer."

6 So we was waiting for that,  
7 and we was at King Point around December, towards  
8 Shingle Point, taking time to wait for when we going to  
9 start coming across the Mackenzie River.

10 So there's quite a few wolf  
11 around there at Shingle Point when we cut across, we  
12 have to keep the reindeer, sometimes we had to have  
13 two guys at a time for herding, trying to keep the herd  
14 because we don't want to lose them.

15 So when February come there  
16 we just, boss told us we were going to go there, when  
17 we going to start to go across the Mackenzie. So the  
18 bosses went to Aklavik to look for some man to guide us  
19 across the Mackenzie River. They hire another dog  
20 team, and the fellow that had the dog team with him  
21 was supposed to be a guide to come across the Mackenzie.  
22 He was an old man, not too young, that dog team man who  
23 came to us, he was old.

24 Just before we crossed, just  
25 before we start there the bosses told us, "Be ready for  
26 the morning."

27 We talked to that man who was  
28 supposed to guide us, we are drivers, about six or  
29 seven of us, pushing the reindeer, we start early in  
30 the morning just before daylight. We ask him how far



M. Noksana

1 to go across the Mackenzie.

2 "Well," he says, "it's not  
3 too far."

4 We don't know, and he pointing  
5 us down the ocean, we can't see no land. Well, we start  
6 that morning, we had our sleds there, we had some moss  
7 with us with the sleds, we had dog team, and start  
8 pushing the reindeer right in the morning. just keep  
9 going all day about ten miles east of Shingle Point and  
10 he told us to go north. So we keep going all day. When  
11 the day is finished and darkness coming we never eat,  
12 never stop, never even have a drink of water, going  
13 all day since the morning, just keep going pushing the  
14 reindeer, we had no time for lunch, just coming there  
15 midnight and I think we happened to hit the land some-  
16 where. Dark, no moon, no nothing.

17 So everybody was hungry and  
18 the reindeer was hungry. As soon as we hit the land  
19 we ask the guide, we said, "How's the feed there on  
20 that island?"

21 Well, he said, "It's a good  
22 place, good feeding place."

23 But we don't know. As soon  
24 as we hit the land, the reindeer on the land we just  
25 pitched a tent and we start putting the primer stove  
26 and everything, we were hungry, we just trying to make  
27 some tea and anything and we were tired. A little  
28 while after just one man who was a herder before me  
29 said, "The boss said to go and check the reindeer,"  
30 I just take a little cup of coffee or something and



M. Noksana

1 just went over there in order to check them. We been  
2 gone about half an hour and he came back and he said  
3 he can't see the reindeer any more, and we travelled  
4 from in the morning towards morning pushing those reindeer  
5 to come across here. He said he can't see the reindeer  
6 any more. He said they all went back. Then he came  
7 back and reported the boss told us, myself and the  
8 other boys, we just like that, just parka, no nothing  
9 else, just the parka and mitts and everything, he told us  
10 if you catch them, trail them, he says they might be  
11 stopped on the island, so we started again, just had a  
12 little lunch and we started going again after the  
13 reindeer, just keep trailing them till good daylight,  
14 we couldn't see even one reindeer, just going back to  
15 the land they came from.

16 So we turned back, to where  
17 we had tent around afternoon. I was tired and they were  
18 tired. Even when I was walking around I was sleeping  
19 when I was walking, all my clothes were wet, I was so  
20 tired, when we get to the camp the boss he was waiting  
21 for us, he had a stove, nice tent and warm and  
22 everything, we just have a little cup of coffee myself,  
23 just go to bed. Take all my clothes off. The boss,  
24 he's drying all the clothes while we were sleeping.

25 Next morning when we get up  
26 and had a good rest the boss told us again, three or  
27 four of us there, young guys, he say, "You take your  
28 packsack and get grub in your packsack, a primer stove  
29 and a tent." He says, "You fellows have to go back  
30 down there."



M. Noksana

1 Well, we started from the  
2 mainland walking on foot. No dog team, no nothing.  
3 He says, "If you see the reindeer, if they are not  
4 going back or anything, just go back down to Shingle  
5 Point where the school was that year." There was a school.

6 So we went over there on foot.  
7 When we come across there in the morning the one guy  
8 was -- we always tell him he had good clothes on, good  
9 clothes on his feet, always kind of proud of himself,  
10 you know, he's a big man, bigger than me. That morning  
11 when we come across there, we got wet feet and one side  
12 was frozen of his feet when we got to Shingle Point.  
13 We wait there about a month. Nobody comes. Them guys  
14 with the sled, when they cross there some place supposed  
15 to be in the station at Kittit, so we wait there, we  
16 never do nothing, just go and see the reindeer and never  
17 do nothing. We came back again, the boss say we have  
18 to stay another year at Shingle Point. We couldn't  
19 try it again that year, we just had to stay.

20 It come the month again,  
21 February month, he says he going to try again. So next  
22 year he told us he's going to get another man this  
23 time, another guide, Allen Okpik, Abe's dad. He was  
24 not too young either, a good healthy man. He told us  
25 that morning before we leave, he say, "That man, he  
26 took us in the wrong place." He said him, he's going  
27 to guide us around there, travel around the Mackenzie  
28 mouth of river and we going to stop there, he told  
29 us where we're going to stop, and he told us, "No food  
30 for reindeer, just the grass."





M. Noksana

1                                We stay overnight, we just have  
2                                seven of us  
3                                a shift every half an hour, to keep the reindeer in so  
4                                they won't go back again. So from there to Tiktalluck  
5                                we come across - whatever, they call it, the  
6                                reindeer, they call it Reindeer Channel now. We stopped  
7                                there again. The second day we just hardly pushing the  
8                                reindeer because there was nothing to eat. We come  
9                                to the place where we going to stay overnight. We stay  
10                               there and we had to, three or four of us we had hardly  
11                               sleep for two nights. When we get back to the tent we  
12                               just with our clothes on we sit down and half asleep  
13                               until we get time to go out, to take his place.

14                               From second night when daylight  
15                               come we started again to show us which river to follow  
16                               that's why it's got name, "Reindeer Channel". He just  
17                               told us to follow that river and down to Tununuk.

18                               Third day we was not too far,  
19                               we had a hard time pushing the reindeer, we pushing  
20                               them behind, just go back and forth walking. They don't  
21                               want to go any more. So daylight, we keep pushing  
22                               them. I was kind of young that time but I don't care  
23                               too much, I never feel tired. We haven't got even too  
24                               much wages either, I don't care because first time I  
25                               had a job since I been born, making money, I was really  
26                               glad making money. It wasn't too much money either.

27                               So the last day and the third  
28                               day we had a hard time all day pushing them. Just  
29                               about 6-7 miles when we got to the mouth of the river  
30                               again we can see the land, Tununuk, and the reindeer  
                             see it, they just went for the land. All that time we



M. Noksana

was pushing them, they started running to the land, Tununuk. We just walked behind them and just slack down, we just having a ride in the sled behind the dog team and just go behind them and we stayed there about one week. We never even touch the reindeer, we just looking at them with the binoculars, we don't want to touch them. The boss told us not to touch them, because have to build up again.

We stay there for one week, Tununuk, and from there after one week down where we supposed to corral, we went down. It was kind of a tough trip.

THE COMMISSIONER: How long did the trip take altogether?

A It take me four or five years, one year forage to the mountain from the on this side of coast, take them five years to Tununuk to the Canadian Government, five years.

Q Where did they deliver them, at Reindeer Station?

A Around Kitti.

Q Kittigazuit.

A Kittigazuit. That's where they had the plane there waiting for us.

We had a roundup there. It's not very easy. When we come along there, the guys come from Kitti, three lads and the one that was supposed to be the boss for the reindeer in Canada, he was supposed to be in charge of it, he came over to meet us, we were about 100 miles. somewhere there west of Herschel Island. He was helpless, he was really helpless.



M. Noksana

1 It was not too easy for  
2 travelling. For this reason, before we reached, few  
3 come across here. I used to ask around these natives  
4 somewhere around here in Shingle Point, I used to ask  
5 them, I know reindeer for Canada by the mouth of the  
6 Mackenzie, I know that but I used to ask, "What you  
7 guys ask for reindeer for?"

8 Well, some of them told me  
9 later on, they say the one man in Tuktoyaktuk by the  
10 name of William Mangilaluk, chief, he was living in  
11 there, and the Indians were living up here. I think  
12 the government that time came down to travel around  
13 by the river like what you do right now, and he was  
14 travelling down and he meet the Indians. What he wants  
15 from the government, that's what the guy told me, he  
16 said, "Indians ask for their treaty money."

17 I happened to meet that man  
18 there before he died, William Mangilaluk. I was talking  
19 to him about the reindeer, I ask him why he want the  
20 reindeer for.

21 Well, he told me about all  
22 these what was happening, all the Indians, that's what  
23 he told me. He say, "The government reached the  
24 Whitefish Station," Whitefish Station is just about  
25 15 miles out west there, there was whaling there, and  
26 the government came down and asked him after being  
27 through with the Indians, he been going down to Tuk  
28 and Whitefish Station and he ask him, "What you want  
29 from the governm ent?"

30 So old chief was telling him,





M. Noksana

1 he ask him if he want money, like Indians. So old chief  
 2 was thinking about it for I don't know how long, I don't  
 3 know, he told me he think about it, and he asked him that  
 4 night, he says he didn't say nothing. He just going to  
 5 think about it.

6 So when he make up his mind he  
 7 heard of some reindeer in Alaska somewhere, there was  
 8 no caribou at all here in Tuktoyaktuk, there was no  
 9 caribou at all, you have to go way far down to Baillie  
 10 Island somewhere to get your caribou. No caribou at  
 11 all at that time. So the chief was asking for reindeer,  
 12 if he could get the reindeer from Alaska. He asked  
 13 the government if he could get the reindeer from Alaska,  
 14 he asked the government if he could get the reindeer  
 15 for the Eskimos. See, they don't want no money. He  
 16 says money's no good to him. That's what he told me. He  
 17 said he'd rather get raindeer so he can have meat all  
 18 the time for the new generation coming, so they can have  
 19 reindeer meat all the time in Tuk area here.

20 That's what happened. So the  
 21 government back in Ottawa somewhere decided they would  
 22 go to Alaska, they buy one of the government's company,  
 23 the reindeer and drive them from there. I was one of  
 24 them, four years with them. That's what happened.  
 25 That's what the old man was saying, the old chief.  
 26 They don't want money. I'm glad about it because the  
 27 reindeer this year has been a real help for the <sup>Delta</sup> people  
 28 at Tuk, McPherson, Arctic Red, Aklavik, a big herd this  
 29 year. There's no caribou on the west side this year.  
 30 The reindeer have been real helpful for the people in



M. Noksana

1 the north. If it wasn't for the reindeer brought here  
2 a lot of them would have been hungry for meat at Tuk,  
3 all these places this year. All along these settlements  
4 it was really helpful for the natives here. I'm really  
5 glad about it.

6 But sometime I feel quite mad  
7 myself, because that bring the reindeer, all this  
8 talk about I shouldn't be here. Some people say, "Reindeer  
9 is no good." Sometimes I feel like I shouldn't be  
10 one of them, I shouldn't be in Canada here. We suffered  
11 for it, we had no shelter when we were driving. Now  
12 it's really helpful. That's why I was really glad about  
13 it, even sometime I feel mad about it myself when I'm  
14 going to buy the reindeer. After I suffer all that and  
15 bring all the meat, reindeer, I hate to spend 85¢ a  
16 pound myself and buy it.

17 (LAUGHTER)

18 A VOICE: It's better than  
19 buying steak at seven bucks.

20 THE WITNESS: Because I know  
21 I suffered for it because I know what I tried hard  
22 for it. Now I have to buy it at 85¢ a pound.

23 But that time after we delivered  
24 to the Canadian Government we started buying the reindeer  
25 at \$25. a reindeer for skin and all, everything, that's  
26 just to buy it, 25 bucks. Anybody want to buy a reindeer  
27 go to the igloo some place, as long as you got  
28 25 bucks you can go and buy some grizzly, everything,  
29 carcass and everything, skin and everything.  
30 Now it's come up to a whole 100 bucks just for meat alone.



M. Noksana

1 No neck, no legs, no nothing, just the whole 100 bucks.

2 But anyway, I'm glad about it  
3 that man is gone, the people using it now. The people  
4 around this area and Tuk, if you look after it right,  
5 it's just like a bank. That man use his head. He didn't  
6 ask for money. He's got just like a bank in that  
7 reindeer, just like selling, as long as somebody look  
8 after it.

9 One of the people asked me  
10 if I could be in it, but I tell them once I get away from  
11 my job I get away with it, because I been with it, I  
12 know how it is, I know how to suffer with it, I was not  
13 getting too young either so I don't want it. Somebody  
14 can look after it.

15 That's the way they are, the  
16 reindeer brought from Alaska. It's not too easy. When  
17 I think about it sometimes it's pretty hard just  
18 travelling here on this coast here. Sometimes we had  
19 to travel in the storm, sometimes we had to pitch a  
20 tent in storm, it's not too easy.

21 Now there's one man who's in  
22 it, the Eskimo is looking after it now the last two  
23 years, he's in Tuk but I don't think he's here tonight.  
24 I like to see him tonight and hope he talk about his  
25 reindeer, how he's going to handle it, but I don't  
26 think he's here tonight.

27 We were lucky that time, we  
28 was coming along here at the coast. When we got to  
29 Shingle Point the people reached it from the delta, they  
30 used to told us there was a lot of caribou some years





M. Noksana

1 around here, every spring and every summer. We were  
2 lucky for three summers here, we could keep the caribou  
3 running. There's no caribou now. We would have had  
4 lots if the caribou kept coming to us, you know. But  
5 we are lucky.

6 Well, I think I'm going to  
7 quit talking about the reindeer now. I think you got  
8 the most of it now about the reindeer, how they drive.

9 I was living here after reindeer  
10 were delivered to the government, I was in Shingle  
11 Point for a couple of years, 1935 until 1936 I had a  
12 winter there, I got married that year. I decided to  
13 go back to Alaska but you know how it is when you travel,  
14 young guy, you happen to find a girl or something you  
15 get stuck somewhere. I happened to find a girl and  
16 decided to stay in Canada. So we stayed there for two  
17 years and the missionary I was with, I was married by  
18 this missionary. Thomas Omuk, he went to Shingle Point  
19 to finish <sup>the</sup> school he went to Tuk '37 with his boat. He  
20 had to be a missionary there himself for the people,  
21 Eskimo people, he's the missionary, he's the preacher  
22 for Anglican. I stayed there about one year and I went  
23 with a dog team over there again to meet him and  
24 stay there since '38.

25 I used to be trapping there,  
26 Pullen Island, down to Dalhousie, but I never reached  
27 Baillie Island, I used to trap up here to Martin up  
28 in the Martin there. I used to hunt seal around here  
29 in the fall, around Tuk I used to get a few seals, and  
30 every time it fishing time in Tuk we used to get a lot





M. Noksana

1 of fish. We had dog team, we had supply all winter for  
2 fish. We had no trouble to get fish, herrings, white-  
3 fish, coneys, we could get any kind of fish here in  
4 Tuk that time. Every time we go out here, anybody  
5 who want to go hunt seal, we get a few seal every fall,  
6 even after freezeup. I used to go whaling, used to  
7 get a lot of whale there. A lot of fish in the land  
8 above Tuk about 10 miles, 15 miles, 10 miles, 6 miles.  
9 In the lake there used to be a lot of fish. We had no  
10 short of fish, anybody willing to fish, they had no  
11 trouble to get fish supply. The only time we had a  
12 supply of fish for Tuk. If you got no fish, we just  
13 have kind of a hard time to get through the winter,  
14 especially when you got dog team.

15 So we used to be whaling there,  
16 and I used to go out every spring there sometimes we  
17 would go in the delta at that time, we used to go  
18 shooting rats. We had no job that time, just we have  
19 to look to supply our family to look for rats, get a  
20 few rats. In the coming summertime go back to Tuk. We  
21 keep doing that, and I used to work there for a while,  
22 the Hudson's Bay transport  
23 was there I used to work in the summertime  
24 meantime, until finally Hudson's Bay, the transport  
25 guys who supply along the coast, two ships were there,  
26 they happened to ask me if I want a job. When they asked  
27 me if I wanted to look after the ship for the winter.  
28 So I told the guys, when they asked me I told them, "I  
29 don't know nothing what to do."

30 Well, he says even that he's  
31 going to show me, he's going to leave one white man with



M. Noksana

1 me and he teach me the winter how to look after the  
2 ship in the harbour here, with anchor out and it  
3 freezing outside, so I got the job next year and look  
4 after the boat, and about nine years in Tuk, and I  
5 used to work in the summer here in the transport of  
6 freight and handling freight just looking after it.  
7 Nine years I been working there, but the wintertime,  
8 I could trap out if I wanted to. No trouble to get  
9 any fish. The people was well off in Tuk here that time  
10 for fish and some of them willing to try to go out for  
11 trapping, used to get a few especially rats and fox  
12 and polar bear. Nobody cared too much that time for  
13 polar bear, too cheap skin. It was only 35-40 bucks  
14 that time, about \$10 sometime, it's not worth go after the  
15 polar bear skin.

16 Now I'm going to talk about  
17 something else now. I talk about

18 that hunting ground and everything. Since when we  
19 were living here we start hearing some seismic going  
20 around the land here. They never told us anything, they  
21 just coming from some place, just start doing seismic  
22 and all that on this land here above Tuk, cut across  
23 the land, and they start tearing the land. I still  
24 could see some of them tearing the land somewhere when  
25 you go out on tundra here you can see the land being  
26 tear up still. You go dog team some place you can't  
27 even go across it in springtime when you are hunting,  
28 in the water you can't even go across it. It's so far  
29 down in the ground, they digging it. They keep doing  
30 that and they happen to come close to Tuk, seismic



M. Noksana

1 start going around the good fishing places and later  
2 on last few years we don't hardly get any fish out of  
3 those lakes any more.

4 I know one place up here not  
5 too far, about ten miles, some people every year used  
6 to go fishing in that lake. Two years ago -- five  
7 years ago nobody get any fish any more. But I hear  
8 they start coming back a little again.

9 There was drilling there not  
10 too far from that fishing lake. There was drilling there  
11 while I was in Tuk. All good fishing lake is gone now  
12 pretty well some of it. We used to get a lot of  
13 seal in Tuk here come fall. After seismic start going  
14 on with explosion right here out on the coast here, we  
15 hardly see any seal any more. Even the herring, last  
16 two years -- it's three years now we hardly get any  
17 herring. We used to have a big run in the middle of  
18 July, herring, now if you get one or two in a fish net  
19 you can't hold it, you got to keep taking it out so  
20 much an hour. Now there is nothing. I used to put  
21 away lots myself in July month. I tried it last summer,  
22 I get hardly any, just a little bit of herring, that's  
23 all I get in the middle of July.

24 I thought it's going to run  
25 again September month, there's nothing.

26 So that's what happened, now  
27 in this area we got here depending on for the living  
28 for all young generation to live on, we are just about  
29 gone now, for game, fishing, sealing. That's only what  
30 we getting now this place here because we've been freezing





M. Noksana

1 it for last few years, it's the only one we are depending  
2 on now for the game. Caribou, anything in there. In  
3 the last few years none of the caribou is coming back  
4 to us from east country there, there was a lot of  
5 caribou here last fall around the <sup>back of</sup> Husky Lake was full  
6 there last fall. That's where we kill caribou there  
7 last fall. We used to go caribou hunting way over there  
8 close to Baillie Island there. Now this year we just  
9 go up to the other side of Husky Lake, we just get a  
10 few caribou, we get quite a bit of caribou.

11 Now another thing I want to  
12 tell you about the pipeline we was talking about the  
13 last few years, we hear it in every hearing, on the  
14 C.B.C. we heard it every day, talk about the pipeline.  
15 I even hear it by the news, they going to push it in.  
16 I never see the pipeline before but I figure myself  
17 if they have to put a pipeline here -- what they call  
18 that, gas --

19 THE COMMISSIONER: Natural  
20 gas.

21 A -- natural gas, I figure  
22 I'm scared of that gas there. If they ever put pipeline  
23 here some place it will bust or leak out some place in  
24 the country here and will leak out and spread it out  
25 in the air and that will fall on the land somewhere  
26 all in this country here, and we had a reindeer here,  
27 Reindeer Reserve here, and the herder can't pass it either.  
28 These reindeer here, have got to stay on the Reindeer  
29 Reserve. If they happen to spill that, that thing go  
30 down, and it's going to land on the land here, if it



M. Noksana

1 landed in moss the reindeer is going to be -- it won't  
2 live very long. It wouldn't live very long, I know.  
3 But I know when I was in Alaska they always used to be  
4 herding there, little herd one time when I was young,  
5 something was happening in the coast there, we lost  
6 half of it, in just a few hours. It's going to be  
7 the same thing here, if something happen coming down  
8 here we're going to lose all the reindeer and we are  
9 going to end up with nothing.

10 I'm not against the pipeline,  
11 but I'm just looking forward to the reindeer, and I  
12 don't want <sup>to give</sup> the reindeer for the pipeline.

13 But another thing I want to  
14 say about this, I'm not against the pipeline but I'd  
15 like to see the lands claim settled first and the  
16 Eskimo have the land claim settled, he is going to do  
17 something about Eskimo, decided whether he's going to  
18 build the pipeline or not. I like to see land claims  
19 settled first. I don't think the Eskimo going to  
20 say "No," because if the land claims settled, I been  
21 in a meeting there at Broad Inlet you been talking about  
22 the pipeline and the gas and everything because if they  
23 happen to have land claims settled, the Eskimos, they  
24 have the land claim here, they figure they have to  
25 get some money out of that oil to live on it, they have  
26 to get something out of it. We can't operate the  
27 Eskimos without the money in the land here. We have  
28 to get something out of it, that oil coming out of  
29 the north land here, we never ask much, it's only 3%,  
30 that's all they ask for.



M. Noksana

1 Another thing, I'll agree  
2 with what Jimmy Jacobson was saying today, the last  
3 speech he had because we are Eskimos sometime we ask  
4 for money from the government, we ask for money for  
5 something we want to do to develop here, always say  
6 "No." Always say, "Broke."

7 Every time the government want  
8 to do something from outside to northland here, always  
9 got the money, all the money he wants till he finish,  
10 till the money finish, all kinds of money. Every time  
11 we ask for money here to do something on the land, our  
12 land, he says, "We're broke. No money."

13 Because you know that time the  
14 seismic started going there, we don't know anything  
15 about it, if we had the right kind of men that time,  
16 if we had the right kind of leader in Tuk, if we had  
17 the right kind of chief we had, the chief would have  
18 done something about it / <sup>before they do</sup> all the damage on the land  
19 here. Because we call a chief here, because he's work  
20 for the government he can't do nothing, he's scared to  
21 lose his job. I don't know what he's scared for.

22 If there was anybody here for  
23 the chief here, if Mangilaluk was here, if Mangilaluk  
24 was living today, he would have never let it be damaged  
25 this way. If we had the right kind of man here to  
26 lead us here, it would never have been done that way.  
27 But I hear that they're going to drill here, talking  
28 about it outside of Tuk. We hear a few of them talking  
29 about it.

30 I know how is the land, how is



M. Noksana

in the ice  
1 the ice pressure, there's strong pressure there and you  
2 can't hold anything. I remember one time I was trapping  
3 there in February down at Pullen Island, I forgot what  
4 year, it was January and ice about 7-8 feet thick, I  
5 was trapping also at Pullen Island here about 6-7-8 miles  
6 out there and the pressure came in one time, tear all  
7 the ice in here, piled it all over. I remember that.  
8 I think some of the trappers knows about it.

9 When I went there trapline I  
10 couldn't even find some of my traps, it was all piled  
11 up in ice and smashed. We lost quite a bit of traps that year.

12 Yet the government want to  
13 drill in here. What they do if the ice start moving  
14 and what will they do if a big chunk of ice coming  
15 through where they drilling there, how they going  
16 to hold that? Yet every time Imperial Oil coming here  
17 and want to do something in Tuk, they always put a  
18 meeting here in the school, they just told us, they  
19 never even give us a chance to talk, the guys lead  
20 us here and Imperial Oil come from Inuvik and just  
21 say, "We're going to drill here."

22 He never even give us a chance  
23 to talk at his meeting. He told us after he had a  
24 meeting here, he said, "Come and see us and talk about  
25 it." He should open just like right now to give a  
26 few of us a chance to talk, somebody willing to talk  
27 about his land, to speak, instead of secret. That's why  
28 we always find out too late if they decide to do anything.  
29 Always we find out what he's going to do, and I'm glad  
30 tonight, I'm not ashamed to talk about this land here





M. Noksana

1 because I got a family here too. I got a big family here,  
2 not only me; they going to grow up, they're going to  
3 be depending on this land here and if there's nothing  
4 left to hunt, no fish, no nothing, they going to tell  
5 me why, Mark, you never talk for me that time when  
6 you was going to talk about this land here?

7 Now I got a chance to talk  
8 tonight because I want to see this land like long ago to  
9 live on free for the Eskimos. Thank you very much.

10  
11 (WITNESS ASIDE)

12 THE COMMISSIONER: I don't think  
13 that you have to interpret the whole statement Mr.  
14 Noksana made, but maybe just some of the main points.

15 (INTERPRETER TRANSLATES)

16 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
17 very much, sir. Are there others who wish to speak  
18 tonight?

19 Before you start, Mr. Carter,  
20 seeing you here reminds me you weren't here yesterday  
21 but Dr. Schwartz made a submission to the Inquiry last  
22 evening and he said -- and I'll read from his submission,  
23 he said:

24 "In 1973 a report on the movement of whales  
25 in the Beaufort Sea by Dr. Paul Brodie, one  
26 of the foremost whale experts in the world,  
27 was shelved by Slaney Research Associates.  
28 A subsequent report prepared by the Slaney  
29 Research Associates in 1974 for Imperial Oil  
30 categorically states that whales appear in



1 the delta in the middle or towards the end  
2 of July and move out of the area around the  
3 20th of August, and yet every man, woman and  
4 child living in this community knows only too  
5 well/<sup>that</sup>if undisturbed the whales will stay here  
6 at least until mid-September."

7 Dr. Schwartz there alleged that the Slaney Research  
8 Associates shelved a report by Dr. Brodie relating to  
9 whales. I know that Slaney has carried out research  
10 for both Arctic Gas and Imperial. I'm asking you in  
11 your capacity as one of the legal advisors to Arctic  
12 Gas to simply let me know by March 15th if any of  
13 the work that Dr. Schwartz has referred to was in fact  
14 done for Arctic Gas, and if the report by Dr. Brodie  
15 is one of the documents on Arctic Gas' list of documents  
16 filed with the Inquiry. It may be that the report was  
17 carried out for -- by Slaney for Imperial, for all I  
18 know; but in any event, would you look into that and  
19 if it was prepared for Imperial then I'll give instruc-  
20 tions to Commission counsel to obtain the document,  
21 if necessary, by subpoena.

22 I only mention it because I  
23 think we should find out whether there is anything in  
24 Dr. Schwartz' s allegation. If there is, we want  
25 the document; if there isn't, then the suggestion that  
26 Slaney Research Associates may have acted improperly  
27 should be dispelled.

28 MR. CARTER: Oh yes, I'll do that.

29 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you.

30 Go ahead.



Mrs. E. Andreason

1                    MRS. ELSIE ANDREASON, sworn:

2                    THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, --

3                    THE COMMISSIONER: I wonder if  
4                    we could have your name first? Sorry.

5                    A        Elsie Andreason. Our  
6                    land claims is very important to us as it is our  
7                    everything, it is our culture, our identity, and we  
8                    have a right to control over our traditional lands.

9                    I would like to see Grade 12  
10                    in our own community, if possible, and not to send the  
11                    children away from home.

12                    As for myself, I went to school  
13                    in Inuvik, Yellowknife, Edmonton, Alberta. I think it  
14                    is not very good to be away from home for long periods  
15                    of time. I know for a fact that I would not send my  
16                    children to school away from home. It is very hard to  
17                    go to a strange place and hard to accept the <sup>fact that</sup> you have  
18                    to get your schooling and training when you are so far  
19                    from your relatives and friends. Education is very  
20                    important and without this it's hard to get a job.  
21                    This is what the future generation is based upon.

22                    Mineral development. The north  
23                    is the last frontier and very rich in minerals. I think  
24                    any minerals should not leave the north and the country.  
25                    Canada is one of the richest countries in minerals  
26                    and therefore we should use it wisely and carefully,  
27                    such as oil and gas, which is now one of the biggest  
28                    projects happening. I think the north should get the  
29                    first priority from the development of gas and oil.  
30                    We have oil wells and gas processing plants right in  
                    our back yards, and yet no company has stated they





Mrs. E. Andreason

1 will build a feeder line to Tuktoyaktuk Community where  
2 it will benefit us first and not the south first, or  
3 the other countries.

4 The dredging of Husky Lake

5 I don't think this should be done as it will ruin the  
6 fish, as everyone in Tuktoyaktuk goes there every  
7 spring to fish. If dredging were to be done, the fish  
8 may all slowly die off and there would be none left  
9 eventually in the years to come.

10 Road to Tuktoyaktuk from

11 Inuvik. If this would decrease the high prices of  
12 food and items you buy at your local Hudson's Bay  
13 Store in Tuktoyaktuk, it would be good. As the prices  
14 here are extremely high, for example when you want to  
15 buy a fresh quart of milk, it is almost \$2., you just  
16 want to buy a quart of milk, not buy the whole darn  
17 building.

18 Pipeline. This is a 2-syllabled

19 8-letter word which is very important. It affects all  
20 Inuit people, their food, their land, their environment,  
21 their whole lifestyle is affected by this. Just what  
22 would happen, everything? As it is the No. 1 subject  
23 today, it cannot be ignored. Yet the government  
24 say it will be good, good for them but what about the  
25 people who will suffer from the effects of it? Promises  
26 were made to break.

27 Pipeline workers, to make sure

28 they are out of the town limits. We don't want no part  
29 of them as they will only cause us harm and trouble, as  
30 we have enough of this any time. I am sure the Royal



Mrs. E. Andreason

1 Canadian Mounted Police won't appreciate it if they're  
2 up and on duty 24 hours a day just so they can deal with  
3 trouble. What about the union? Natives should not have  
4 to pay union dues or join a union to work on the pipe-  
5 line. As for the ones who work on the pipeline, it  
6 may be the only and the best-paying job in this  
7 community in/ <sup>this</sup> small town.

8 The Hunters & Trappers Associa-  
9 tion of different communities should have the right  
10 to make their own decisions on laws that pertain  
11 to hunting, trapping, and fishing rights, as it is the  
12 people in each community who do the hunting and trapping  
13 here in the north. As for the trappers and hunters who  
14 are living off the land, if the pipeline comes through,  
15 the prices of ammunition, supplies, parts for skidoos,  
16 etc., will the prices go sky high? A trapper won't be  
17 able to afford the cost of such high prices just to go  
18 out hunting and trapping. Don't forget, he has no  
19 job, no income, just what he hunts and traps off the  
20 land. This is a serious matter of what to expect in the  
21 future.

22 In January of this year my  
23 husband and I flew into the cabin that he and Billy  
24 Jacobson built last fall where they spent over two months  
25 hunting and trapping. I was surprised to see seismic  
26 lines through the bush, as it looked like I was back down  
27 south looking at highways. I wonder how many years before  
28 the trees <sup>they cut</sup> will hide the scars on our land? If this goes  
29 on in the bushland, it should be stopped. We will end  
30 up with a lot of seismic lines and no bush.



Mrs. F. Andreason

Environmental protection. The environment should be protected no matter what the cost, because once destroyed it would take generations to grow back. This land is the last frontier. We do not want it to become polluted, spoiled, wasted or destroyed. For it is the air we breathe, the water we drink, the land we feed off. If polluted, spoiled or destroyed, we have not much left of what it used to be.

We are proud of our land, that our fathers, grandfathers, and great grandfathers founded years ago. I am sure as generations pass, if <sup>they</sup> only knew what the present and the future now holds, it would be very disagreeable to them. Who knows what the future holds for us? It may be better or worse, we are only to blame as we learn from our own mistakes. We thank the I.T.C., the COPE, who did a lot of work and time and effort to prepare for this Inquiry. Also all those who participated.

Thank you, Mr. Berger, for giving me your time and patience for this opportunity to speak.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

THE COMMISSIONER: Maybe you could spend a minute with our interpreter and decide which highlights that you'd like to be interpreted. Now could we have your statement so that it can be marked as an exhibit?

(SUBMISSION BY MRS. F. ANDREASON MARKED EXHIBIT C-258)

THE COMMISSIONER: Anyone else



J. Norberg

1 who wishes to speak may do so and -- yes sir?

3 JOHN NORBERG, sworn:

4 THE WITNESS: My name is John  
5 Norberg, and I sailed the Arctic Ocean and trapped the  
6 Arctic Ocean since 1924, and I think I should -- I know  
7 quite a bit about it, though I spent the last 20 years  
8 at Tuk.

9 In my travels I see a bit of  
10 difference all right. Looking at the map, I guess  
11 everybody would know, all the natives would know if I  
12 mention certain names, certain lands like from Baillie  
13 Island across to Nelson Head, all east of that there's  
14 been no change as far as game and hunting is concerned  
15 because there's been no seismic work done in that dis-  
16 trict. But you notice a little change this side of  
17 Baillie Island, not so much around Sachs Harbour because  
18 there's no ocean seismic work there, but I notice quite  
19 a bit of change out here.

20 I'd like to ask you a question,  
21 Mr. Berger. Has there been any studies on these big  
22 whales, bowhead whale? Any reports on them?

23 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, we've  
24 been told that all of the bowhead whales in the Beaufort  
25 Sea were taken by the whalers at the turn of the cen-  
26 tury and there are now maybe 100 or 200 bowhead whales  
27 in the Beaufort Sea. We've been told that there was a  
28 population of 5,000 beluga whales in the Beaufort Sea.

29 Two studies have been given to  
us, one by Dr. Sergeant of the Department of the





J. Norberg

1 Environment; another by Mr. Webb of Slaney Reserach  
4 Associates, and you will remember that Dr. Schwartz said  
2 there was another report carried out by Dr. Paul Brodie  
4 for Slaney Research Associates. I just asked Arctic  
5 Gas' lawyers just a few minutes ago to see if that  
6 report had been disclosed to us, and if it hadn't, to  
7 disclose it to us; and if Arctic Gas hasn't any interest  
8 in the report, that is if it was a report done for  
9 Imperial Oil or someone else, then I've directed my  
10 lawyers to obtain it by subpoena, if necessary.

11 Now, that's about where we  
12 sit with bowheads and belugas at the moment. We're  
13 concerned about what will happen to the belugas if  
14 you have a gas pipeline across the delta, then an oil  
15 pipeline across the delta, and many exploration and  
16 development wells in the Beaufort Sea. Dr. Sergeant  
17 told us that he felt that over a period of years with  
18 this expansion of oil and gas activity in the Beaufort  
19 Sea he felt the whales would be driven out of the  
20 warm waters of the delta and would eventually disappear.

21 So we are looking into that  
22 because we are concerned about it, as I'm sure others  
23 are.

24 A I know a few years back,  
25 as I say, out of here east the whales seem to accumulate  
26 off Atkinson Point but they won't come in closer than 40  
27 miles anyway because the water's too shallow, and there's  
28 feed out there all summer. I see quite a few of  
29 them just east of Cape Parry, that's about as far east  
30 as they go. But lately there haven't been very many.



J. Norberg

1 There used to be a whole school just feed out there.  
2 The people are wondering, actually they don't hunt  
3 them from here because we've<sup>got</sup> no equipment or anything.  
4 We're wondering if the seismic is affecting them too.

5 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, we  
6 haven't had any evidence of that, no one has suggested  
7 that. All that we've been told about the bowheads is  
8 that there's only about 100 or 200 since they were all  
9 virtually killed off at the turn of the century, and  
10 they are protected in the Beaufort Sea. No one is  
11 supposed to take them, and no one has suggested that  
12 the seismic anywhere in the Beaufort Sea has affected  
13 the bowhead whales.

14 A Well then, you can say  
15 there's been no study on it at all, what you just  
16 mentioned?

17 Q That's right. Lots of  
18 studies have come before me, believe me, but not one  
19 about that. I haven't had any study about the bowheads  
20 come before me.

21 A Another thing that people  
22 would like to know -- well, I just come in tonight, I  
23 happened, this is my first year in here -- I was wonder-  
24 ing why the government just go ahead, go ahead, give  
25 the companies permission to go out and yet like Dr.  
26 Pimlott write in the papers, say it needs ten  
27 more years more study and this and that. Yet the  
28 government just says, "Go ahead," like Mark says,  
29 boy when they want to spend money and Imperial, they  
30 don't need the people's go-ahead, say, and I think what



J. Norberg

1 worries the Settlements of Tuk, Aklavik, Inuvik, North  
2 Star Harbour, Paulatuk, these are the settlements that  
3 are worried about this offshore drilling. They're not  
4 worried about this inshore drilling, you know.

5 If you listen to the oil compan-  
6 ies they're pretty well one in 1,000 or 2,000 for an  
7 oil spill and I'm sure they won't go ahead unless they  
8 take every precaution; I'm surprised too the people are  
9 all ready for development, <sup>but</sup> /it seems to be the land  
10 claims that's holding everything up. I'm sure you agree  
11 with that too, don't you, with all your hearings? Other-  
12 wise they would be willing to say, "Go ahead, boys, go  
13 ahead, develop the country. But land claims first."

14 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, I've  
15 got to admit I've heard it said that land claims should  
16 be settled before development, that has been said once  
17 or twice.

18 A Before they even start  
19 drilling in the Beaufort Sea, but they're going ahead  
20 anyway.

21 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, the  
22 government in 1973 approved the idea of offshore  
23 drilling in the Beaufort Sea, and since then the  
24 companies have built artificial islands close to the  
25 shore. I've forgotten how many of them, and --

26 A Six, I think.

27 Q How many is it, Mr.  
28 Horsfield?

29 MR. HORSFIELD: Ten.

30 THE COMMISSIONER: Four since





J. Norberg

1 you --

2 A I just come from one of  
3 them. I've seen them.

4 THE COMMISSIONER: The companies  
5 have built ten of these islands where they drill, but  
6 they're close to the shore, fairly close, although  
7 Imperial plans two more this summer in Kugmallit Bay  
8 that will be drilled in something like 40 or 50 feet  
9 of water, I understand.

10 Now, the two wells that Dome  
11 wants to drill are in deep water --

12 A M-hm.

13 THE COMMISSIONER: -- quite a  
14 few miles out into the sea.

15 A I believe one is 40, one  
16 is 80 miles out.

17 Q Yes, something like that,  
18 and the government hasn't asked me to tell them whether  
19 I think that's a wise thing to do or not, but what I  
20 will be doing is looking into what would happen if  
21 you had not just one or two exploration wells in the  
22 Beaufort Sea, but a whole series of exploration wells  
23 and then development wells and then pipelines from  
24 the sea bringing oil and gas into the shore to join  
25 the trunk pipelines carrying the energy south to the  
26 middle of the continent. That might well be a risk  
27 of a different order of magnitude than the risk  
28 that you have when you just have one or two exploration  
29 wells, and that's why I've been listening to these  
30 people telling me what the consequences will be over



J. Norberg

1 a period of years -- evidence such as Dr. Sergeant's  
2 about the effect on the whale population. Dr. Sergeant  
3 said -- I might tell the people here that what he  
4 said was -- and he's a scientist with the Department  
5 of the Environment, he said you should establish a  
6 Whale Sanctuary in Mackenzie Bay to protect the calv-  
7 ing grounds, the warm water where the whales come in  
8 to have their young, and you shouldn't allow any oil  
9 or gas wells to be drilled in that sanctuary and he  
10 will be coming back to tell us more about where he  
11 feels the boundaries of this sanctuary should be. He  
12 felt that if you didn't do that you would after the  
13 passage of time, find that there were no more whales  
14 in the Beaufort Sea. He regards it as a serious  
15 problem, and we've asked him to work on it for us.

16 A Yes. There's nothing  
17 else I have to say, but you know, I'm just getting some  
18 of the people's views and I know for sure they're not  
19 against exploration and developing the country but  
20 there is that same question, you know,

21 "The land claims first, then you can burn it  
22 up if you want to."

23 Well, thank you very much,  
24 sir, Mr. Berger.

25 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
26 Mr. Norberg.

27 (WITNESS ASIDE)

28 THE COMMISSIONER: Does anyone  
29 else wish to say anything? You certainly are --  
30



Miss A. Etagiak

MISS AGNES ETAGIAK, sworn:

THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, my name is Agnes Etagiak and I'd like to make a presentation as a resident of Tuktoyaktuk. I am not representing any groups. I am not making any comments on the pipeline but what it has to offer on job creation.

THE COMMISSIONER: Excuse me just a second. Maybe you'll just sit a little closer to the microphone and maybe if we all just pay attention then we can all hear what's being said. So you just take your time and carry on.

A O.K. I'm not making any comments on the pipeline but what it has to offer on job creation. The natives want to control the pipeline and how are we going to control it if we do not have enough educational outlets here in our area to teach our younger generation on pipeline procedures? Is the pipeline going to employ people from down south or are we, the Inuit, going to participate in the construction and later in the maintenance of the pipeline?

What we need in this area of Tuk and Aklavik and McPherson and Inuvik is a Tech School of an on-the-job training for our younger people. As you know, at the present time we only have a few of our younger people in High Schools and universities. I believe the age of maturity of the Inuit comes at a very early age due to exposure to all the fast changes. It only goes to show that we need some sort of training centre up here in our area. Then we have -- then



Miss A. Etagiak  
Mrs. P. Gruben

1 maybe we'll have less dropouts, <sup>or dropouts</sup> for a better cause and  
2 maybe we'll materialize our slogan,

3 "Tuk tu u."

4 That's all I have.

5 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
6 very much.

7 (WITNESS ASIDE)

8 THE COMMISSIONER: Does anyone  
9 else wish to say anything?

10 (SUBMISSION BY MISS A. ETAGIAK MARKED EXHIBIT  
11 C-259)

12  
13 MRS. PERCIS GRUBEN, sworn:

14 INTERPRETER: What I want to  
15 show and tell the people is something on the map where  
16 my father used to travel. Victor Allen took him up  
17 here and help me with the map. I went with my father  
18 along the coast and I started remembering his travels  
19 since 1926 and he travelled with his uncle, old Adam  
20 close to Pearce Point.

21 After we reached Pearce Point  
22 we were the only people there for a while. My mom and  
23 dad both got sick and there was no one around but a  
24 few people called the Kugmallits, came and I'm not  
25 going to tell everything that he did but I'm just going  
26 to tell of his travel, his moves every year.

27 We stayed at Pearce Point  
28 that winter, and when the summer came around we  
29 travelled over to Herschel Island from Pearce Point,  
30 because every summer people used to go to Herschel





Mrs. P. Gruben

Island. For this trip to Herschel Island every summer was because people want to buy their supplies for the winter and everybody used to go there that used to trap, whether they were Eskimos or white people, they got their supplies from Herschel Island.

Even though people had no boats to travel with, they went in with their people that owned the boat and went to Herschel Island during the summer, and lots and lots of people would be gathered together there at Herschel Island. People used to want to help one another them days. Other people with no boats that went with the ones that owned the boats and didn't even have to pay for their rides to Herschel Island.

One year we stopped and wintered at Tom Cod Bay. The following winter we moved back to Pearce Point and wintered there again. It was quite late when we moved back to Pearce Point, quite late in the summer, so we didn't do much hunting seal, in the fall time, just some fishing in the lakes around there. As days got longer, the ice just didn't break away to make open leads, and my dad made a seal net and set it for my mom to look after. My dad went out to his trapline and to hunt caribou. My mom used to look after that seal net and take a look at it every day and bring home seals. She went alone. Us children, we stayed home. We had someone staying with us when she was -- Jim Wolkie's wife, she was just a young girl then.

After we wintered there at



Mrs. P. Gruben

1 Pearce Point in the summer we went back to Herschel  
2 Island and that summer we went to Banksland. That was  
3 the first trip my dad made to Banks Island, and the  
4 year was 1929. We wintered at Mary Sachs on Banks  
5 Island. At Mary Sachs there we found some old build-  
6 ings where people had lived, and an old boat made of  
7 steel / <sup>marked</sup> "Mary Sachs," and this is where some people had  
8 wintered. In the fall there was a lot of polar bears  
9 there. Our parents never let us play out because  
10 polar bears came from all directions. I think the  
11 bears were hungry, but we had a lot of seals piled up  
12 and this is where the polar bears used to come and  
13 eat. The men would never go out looking for polar  
14 bears to kill, they would kill them when they got them  
15 right to the houses.

16 I did not quite know if there  
17 were any caribou around there or not, but I don't  
18 ever remember eating caribou then. I used to eat  
19 polar bear and seal meat, rabbits and ptarmigan.

20 When winter was over, in the  
21 summer we went back to Herschel Island for more supplies  
22 and went back to Banks Island again. There was a lot  
23 of white foxes. Sometimes when we went over to Banks  
24 Island other people came with us, and one of the men  
25 that went along was Allen Ookpik, and his family.  
26 From then on I did not travel with my parents for two  
27 years because I went to school at Shingle Point and  
28 spent two years in school there at Shingle Point.

29 In them days no matter how  
30 much you wanted to spend your time in school, your parents



Mrs. P. Gruben

1 took you out of school as long as you could read a  
2 few words, they took you out. One year at home and then  
3 I went back to school, so all in all I've had three  
4 years of school.

5                   Them days when we went to school  
6 our parents left us, just left us there to put us to  
7 school and never came to see us again till the follow-  
8 ing summer when it was time for our holidays. In them  
9 days our schools weren't like the ones we have now. Our  
10 schools then were old houses abandoned by other people.  
11 A church was our school, and mission houses were old  
12 log houses.

13                   After I spent my years in  
14 school I went home to my parents and spent a few years  
15 with my parents. From year to year we never stayed in  
16 one place but the longest we ever stayed in one place  
17 was at Nanaluk because from all his travels, my father  
18 liked that place called Nanaluk on Liverpool Bay.

19                   Well, after I got married my  
20 husband and I, we start going across to Banks Island too.  
21 Sometimes we wintered at Tuk sometimes; other times at  
22 Baillie Island, but we built a house at Tuk and we  
23 built it across the bay where the Dew Line is now.  
24 While we were in Banks Island we just wait there at  
25 DeSalis Bay waiting to come across, and Don Violotte  
26 came over with his plane in April and brought us a  
27 letter. He didn't stay very long, just for a few  
28 minutes, didn't even give<sup>us</sup> time to read our letter.  
29 It was a letter from the Dew Line asking us to rent  
our house or buy our house, and they wanted an answer





Mrs P. Gruben

1 right away. But how could we answer their letter?  
2 There was no planes then, there was no way we could  
3 answer their letter.

4 We were stranded over in  
5 Banks Island for a while<sup>because</sup> the engine of the boat  
6 wouldn't start, there was some problem, and it was  
7 September when we finally made it across back to Tuk.

8 When we got back to Tuk our  
9 house wasn't in its place, it was gone, it was just  
10 lying on the beach and we never did go back to Banks  
11 Island again after that. We went around looking for  
12 someone to help us. A new school teacher by the  
13 name of Miss Robinson, she helped us and helped us  
14 talk with the people, and they dragged our house fur-  
15 ther up the land. Then we have been living here in  
16 Tuk, but every spring we go to where my dad used to  
17 hunt, where his old hunting grounds are, and we go  
18 there every spring for hunting.

19 The hunting grounds where my  
20 parents used to live and hunt used to have a lot of  
21 ptarmigan and moose and fish and what-not of wildlife,  
22 but now it isn't the same any more. We can't find  
23 moose. We go up there in the springtime, we don't see  
24 any more moose around there. I can't understand why  
25 the wildlife are gone. Maybe the oil that's been  
26 spilled around there; but the real difference I find  
27 is in the ptarmigan. When we were growing up, we  
28 were in the family we were nearly all girls and dad  
29 brought us up but we helped our dad with dog team by  
30 hauling wood and ice and cutting the wood. We never



Mrs. P. Gruben

1 let our dad do these jobs because he was our hunter,  
2 he was supplying us with food.

3 It doesn't matter if you  
4 were a girl and not a boy, you learned to work like  
5 a man. Your parents taught you how to fish and  
6 how to trap, and you had to have with fish net under  
7 ice all year, whether the ice was safe or not, and  
8 you went to look at your fish net all year around  
9 and this was the way we used to live long ago.

10 Now people don't live like  
11 that. I don't know why, when the government started  
12 building houses for the natives, they put them all  
13 together rather than putting them out where they used  
14 to live long ago. It's because there are no residence  
15 where school children can go to when their parents  
16 go. We have to stay where the school is in order for  
17 the children to go to school. Maybe if people lived  
18 out of town and lived far apart, maybe it would be  
19 better life for them, like long ago.

20 In the springtime when there  
21 was a lot of wildlife and hunting to be done, our  
22 people used to do a lot of hunting but they never threw  
23 away anything, and they put away food, dried the  
24 meat and stored up a lot of food. Berries grew, they  
25 picked berries and put that away too.

26 That's all I have to say.

27 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
28 very much, thank you.

29 (WITNESS ASIDE)

THE COMMISSIONER: Anyone else



Father H. Lemeur

1 who would like to say anything should feel free to  
2 just come forward and sit down and make themselves at  
3 home. Well, I think what we'll do is just we'll take  
4 about a five-minute break and just stretch our legs  
5 and we'll then carry on after that for as long as you  
6 want tonight, and while we're taking this little  
7 five-minute break those of you who would like to speak  
8 maybe you'd like to come up and sit here, and if  
9 there's two or three of you and you want to sit there  
10 together, that's all right with me. That's something  
11 we often do. So we'll just take a five-minute break  
12 and stretch our legs.

13 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 10:40 P.M.)

14 (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED PURSUANT TO ADJOURNMENT)

15 THE COMMISSIONER: Ladies

16 and gentlemen, we'll come to order. Ladies and gentle-  
17 men, we'll call the hearing to order again. We'll  
18 take a moment for some of the Inquiry staff members to  
19 take their seats.

20  
21 FATHER HERBERT LEMEUR, sworn:

22 THE WITNESS: My name is

23 Father Herbert Lemeur. I've been in the country for  
24 30 years now, and 25 years spent in Tuk here. The  
25 other places I went was Paulatuk, Stanton, Tuk and  
26 Sachs Harbour also, so I know the country quite a bit.  
27 I've been travelling for 15 years in the country by  
28 dog team right from Aklavik to Tuk, Stanton, Paulatuk  
29 right to Pearce Point, but I want to say a few word  
30 in Eskimo first, as an introduction.



Father H. Lemeur

We listened to the stories by the elder people in Tuk here, very interesting stories and true experiences. This afternoon and part of the evening we have heard some of the trappers. I'm not amongst, I believe, the older ones yet, I'm not part of the trappers, but some of the people in town here been asking me to say a few words and I would limit myself today to speak about the land and the sea, the land that the people are using and have used in the past, are using today and probably will be using again, when I go.

I would like to tell Judge Berger how much land you have been using in the past, how much land they needed in the past, how much land they are using today, and the same goes for the sea. It seems to me, and this has been quite a bit the subject of controversy in talking even now in the mass media, especially these days when they talk about the land settlement, they talking very much about the immensity of land asked by the Inuit.

Perhaps this has been said also of our country here, of the western part for the people of Tuk, we have been using so much land, they have been described this afternoon and I believe they could have put more line yet because the people from here are the people from Sachs Harbour and many of them in Paulatuk, so the people from here have been using part of the land from Herschel Island right to Sachs Harbour.

In the old days they have been !





Father H. Lemeur

1 using it by force of necessity the land and the sea  
2 because this was their living. It would be too  
3 long certainly to recall the story of the old persons,  
4 and a few of them are still living, you heard them  
5 yesterday, sir, but some of them have been walking  
6 years after years from Herschel Island as far as Baillie  
7 Island, and this was not to be fit for sport, but this  
8 was for necessity they had to live. For a person who  
9 don't know much the land and perhaps this apply to the  
10 person in the south, it seems like it's quite a big  
11 land. Yes, it is, but the people have not been using  
12 that land at all times, each part of the land the same  
13 year at the same time.

14 They had an unwritten ecology  
15 by themselves, certain <sup>year they</sup> / spend a winter at one place  
16 then one or two years after they been moving to another  
17 place, and this explained the reason of the migration  
18 of the people and the movement of the people. If one  
19 travelled, and I did travel a few times from Tuk right  
20 to Bar 1, that's Komakuk-Dew Line by Bombadier, and  
21 one travels past Herschel Island a long distance along  
22 the river they could see the remains yet of the stage(?)  
23 of the old days. This is not in use today, perhaps,  
24 but they maybe use again another day.

25 So this explains the meaning  
26 and the necessity of the land, of so much land in  
27 the old days.

28 Another point that I want to  
29 explain. If the people around here need so much land  
30 and so much sea, <sup>it's</sup> / because for them this is, I would



Father H. Lemeur

say their crop, this is their field. It is not like in the south where they have a potato field or they had a wheat field, everything is there compact in one place and good land to <sup>pick</sup> it up. Here we know these people should know that the animals do not gathered altogether, they need much land, for instance the caribou; in the sea for the fishes, in the seal also for the seal. So necessity of movement, necessity of going from one place to another, and we cannot limit and say that the people have been using so much, practically they have been using the whole of it at one time or another.

The people have been using this land, not the land only, and in the winter only, but we could say that this land has been used by the people on foot, by the kyaks, after that with the whale boat and the sail, after that at the time of trapping there was the schooners and they have been following roughly all the west part. It was not decided that this was Tuk long ago, not too long ago people from here, at least two or three families went from here by schooner to Herschel Island to hunt seal during the summer. So this explains the necessity and the reason why the people ask for land, because it's so important for them. People are now in a time of development. We know that this is going on, and perhaps it's important that if development going on is not known. There is better communication right now than there was a few years ago. They are certainly better relation also, but we believe that they still need quite a bit of



Father H. Lemeur

1 improvement yet.

2 For some at least the way  
3 of life has changed considerably, and with the changing,  
4 because this is human nature, when we look in the  
5 history here we can just look at what's going on or  
6 what's been going on in the country right, like some-  
7 body said yesterday, from the Ice Age to the Stone  
8 Age and the Copper Age and then after that the Steel  
9 Age. The people around here, the Inuit, have  
10 adopted themselves to circumstances, working for the  
11 whaler when the whaler was in and they needed help  
12 for food, after that was a time of trapping, they  
13 adopted themselves again for the time of trapping,  
14 and we arrived then, <sup>as</sup> you heard already but I want  
15 to insist on this, in '55 was the time of Dew Line.  
16 1957 the time when Northern Affairs finally for the  
17 better or the worse is the way we put it and said it,  
18 but anyway they came in around 1957. Then 1960 the  
19 exploration. These are changing a lot, they are chang-  
20 ing a lot the country.

21 But from the economy of just  
22 survival, if I could say, there were the wage economy  
23 work, but still the life and Dene life and northern life  
24 depend on sea and land. This is proved by the fact that  
25 each weekend people will go and hunt. In the summer  
26 we go in the sea. In the winter they go on land, some  
27 water. They do all their life only on land or by sea  
28 by trapping, fishing, hunting. So we know by this that  
29 certainly they love the country and their way of  
30 living. How could we explain otherwise the people will





Father H. Lemeur

1 leave a lucrative way of living, be at the Dew Line  
2 or be some other place because as they say, they don't  
3 want to be bored body and soul. They want to be on  
4 ~~the~~ir own. They want to feel the freedom and they want to  
5 return to what they know, what they like above all, and  
6 what they could find as security.

7 More could be said yet about  
8 especially this place, about the people of Tuktoyaktuk,  
9 who sometimes perhaps seem to be aggressive and they  
10 have many, many reasons to be aggressive as far as I  
11 know, because they have been overcome, they had to  
12 support frustration after frustration, especially in  
13 this location of Tuk and the area of Tuk. They have  
14 been plagued all the time by restriction. They lost  
15 quite a bit of income when the delta was closed to  
16 them, they can't go and trap any more, and this amounts  
17 to quite a bit, \$4,000, \$5,000 every spring.

18 Very hard to submit themselves  
19 to restrictions, they cannot hunt caribou in this land  
20 because this is Indian Reserve. They have a prohibition  
21 again as far as the polar bear is concerned, they put  
22 a quota on the polar bear. They had a quota before  
23 on seal, on marten, on beaver, perhaps sometime this  
24 will come also for seals. So what is going to be  
25 left for them to live off the country? We heard some-  
26 time, "Let the people live off the country." But it's  
27 quite difficult with so many restrictions.

28 We have an important situation  
29 and location here, it would be too close and too far  
30 from Aklavik in the old days, when administration was



Father H. Lemeur

at Aklavik. So we were partly the poor, what they say in Eskimo, the poor around here.

They had to fight for their rights.

The same could be said a little bit when the town was built at Inuvik, so this show you the spirit and the reason of this kind of what seems perhaps sometime some kind of an aggressive attitude on the part of the people which I oppose certainly.

Frustration again, sir, with all the people coming around here, may I call them scientists, researchers, anthropologists -- I don't want to label them by other names but I remember a few years ago the oldest man in town here, old Felix Nuyav iak come and visit me when I had the visit from an anthropologist. Years after years we have been plagued by anthropologists in town studying, asking questions and so on. The old man asked me who he was.

I explained to him the job that that man was doing.

The old man with his philosophy and his good common sense look at him moving his head, and he say, "Father, you tell him one of these days my grandson or my granddaughter perhaps will have diploma also. What will the people in the south say if my boy, my girl, go in the graveyard or look at the bones, measure the skull or count the teeth and what-not?"

But the point is that people have been/very often here because we have seen researchers, scientists and so on passing by. But there



Father H. Lemeur

1 was no opportunity to receive no feed-back from them.  
2 We have no chance to read, to study, we have no chance  
3 to see the recognition of a man getting particular  
4 /as far as the land and the sea and the ice, the animal  
5 life and so on are concerned. So you will understand  
6 again the kind of frustration that we could feel.

7 I know personally that I  
8 learned from them all that I received from my 30 years  
9 here, 30 years of my life so far. I learned their  
10 language, I learned their way of talking, their way of  
11 hunting, they corrected me, they screened me, I accepted  
12 their philosophy of life and I don't think, sir, that  
13 I will ever change for any kind of other philosophy.

14 I believe that scientists,  
15 researchers, and everybody coming here could learn so  
16 much from them, as has been said by the oldest one  
17 yesterday and even some young trapper, from their  
18 stories of true experiences, their knowledge of land,  
19 the sea, the animal life. Their/<sup>knowledge</sup> is not only a story  
20 perhaps, but there is also a picture of an animal ,  
21 for instance, there is the description of their  
22 habitat and so on.

23 So from all that I have said  
24 so far, this is my only remark. You can see that  
25 frustration really clear and evident. We stated  
26 clearly that we want to be part of Canada, certainly,  
27 and the settlement of I.T.C. is the <sup>proof</sup> /of it. We want  
28 to be part of the development, as I mentioned before,  
29 man cannot stay at the same stage, everybody want to  
30 get a better standard of life, a better house. But



Father H. Lemeur

1 they don't want to be put into the melting pot. They  
2 want to keep their identity and this has been beauti-  
3 fully expressed by the I.T.C. proposition to the  
4 government by implying the idea of development because  
5 they want to get the royalty; without development  
6 where could they get a royalty?

7                   The pipeline, the drilling off-  
8 shore, well, I leave these to the people to express  
9 their opinion, I go along with them. But I see cert-  
10 ainly the concern and the experience because they are  
11 insecure actually now about their land, about the sea,  
12 and I also would like to know what will be for the  
13 future. I only mention this in Sachs Harbour not  
14 too long ago, I mention in here a few times in the  
15 meetings, I witnessed what we call the black tides.  
16 Maybe you heard about it, the tanker that went  
17 adrift in the channel between England and the west  
18 part of France, what we call the black tide, and I  
19 went one year after the black tide and I know that  
20 my family and friends say that they had to go and  
21 sweep and clean each piece of rock and sand and  
22 turn everything over because of the fuel. They had  
23 to call the Army, they had to special salt from Germany,  
24 and I am concerned with the sea because as I mentioned,  
25 the sea and the land all year around, either we walk  
26 on it or we travel on it, and you could see the con-  
27 cern of the people. They need that land and that sea  
28 for the people that want to make their living entirely  
29 off land and sea and live trapping or living on the  
30 country.





Father H. Lemeur  
J. Raddi

1 But the other one we leave,  
2 I would say certainly for their job they need the  
3 land and the sea because this is part of their life,  
4 this is in their blood. The only thing -- and this  
5 will be my last remark -- they want to know if the  
6 pipeline is built, what are the implications? What  
7 will be their employment? Too often everything has  
8 been only <sup>in</sup> one direction, north-south, the point of no  
9 return. But the people here are very concerned and  
10 they want to know, for those who want to work what  
11 kind of employment, what is their future and so on?  
12 We do hope that it won't be like the past, only pro-  
13 mises and no return. This is all what I say, sir,  
14 and I apologize if I repeat what I said already,  
15 I want to give you the idea of why we had those lands  
16 and why we use so much.

17 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
18 Father Lemeur.

19 (WITNESS ASIDE)

20  
21 THE COMMISSIONER: Oh, that  
22 statement, could we have it so that it could be marked  
as an exhibit?

23 SUBMISSION BY FATHER LEMEUR MARKED EXHIBIT 1-241.

24 JIM RADDI, sworn:

25  
26 THE WITNESS: Judge Berger,  
27 my name is Jim Raddi. I have been working with the  
28 government for 22 years. First of all I would like  
29 to talk about the years I was working with the R.C.M.P.



J. Raddi

1 1953 I start working for the  
2 R.C.M.P. here in Tuk as a guide and interpreter. I  
3 did a lot of travelling, hunting, fishing for the  
4 dogs. First of all I would like to talk about the  
5 disappearance of the fish, especially the hearings.

6 1953, the summer of 1953  
7 I remembered when we used to have anywhere from 150-  
8 foot to 200-foot fish net. We used to put out the net  
9 from the beach, let it go all the way out to 200 feet  
10 and drag it back into the shore. I remember when we  
11 used to fill up our 22-foot freighter canoe, plus two  
12 18-foot canoes.

13 Then as the years go by the  
14 herring start disappearing when the barges start coming  
15 from Mackenzie River, the tugs pushing the barges into  
16 the Port of Tuktoyaktuk. We all know the reason why  
17 us fishermen, why the fish are disappearing, especially  
18 the herring, it's because there's more ships coming  
19 into the harbour every summer. Like I used to be a  
20 deckhand for the Hudson's Bay ship when I was about  
21 the age of 17. I used to help the engineer clean the  
22 engine and they used to hand me the 5-gallon pail of  
23 some kind of a thick lube oil, so from experience I  
24 know if a lot of ships start dumping out 5 gallons of  
25 lube oil or whatever they are dumping in the bay, or  
26 in the water, there's going to be a lot of oil dumped  
27 in the bay, and cause the fish from not coming inside  
28 the bay. I know that's the reason why we're not get-  
29 ting any more herring in this Bay of Tuktoyaktuk. There's  
30 all kinds of seismic out in the Beaufort Sea, like I was



J. Raddi

1 just mentiong a few years back we used to get all kinds  
2 of herring, and now we try and put a fish net out to  
3 get some fish for eating or for the dogs, we'll be lucky  
4 to get a bucketful.

5 I would like to mention another  
6 type of fish, whitefish. In the year 1953 when I was  
7 working with the R.C.M.P. I had three fish nets out  
8 in the bay here and when there was a fish run I used  
9 to get anywhere from 5 to 600 fish a day; and now people  
10 that's got the nets out, say about 20 fishermen with  
11 20 nets, they'll be lucky to get maybe 200 fish.

12 I believe what's causing the  
13 fish from not coming into this harbour any more, the  
14 whitefish, this last few years I did a lot of travel-  
15 ling with the skidoo trapping at the weekends and I  
16 used to run into some creeks where the oil companies  
17 build their road to cross the creek. We mentioned  
18 about that to the oil companies whenever we have meet-  
19 ings/ they say they didn't do it; but one time I  
20 checked especially the Water Creek, I went and checked  
21 and see if they been opening that creek that they block  
22 up for crossing the road. Sure, they been opening  
23 some of it, but there was a lot of ~~dead~~ logs that's been  
24 never removed, and once a dead log is not removed  
25 like that, there's a lot of other little dips of wood  
26 piling up, and first thing you know that creek is all  
27 mixed with dirt and mud and whatsoever is causing  
28 it to getting plugged.

29 I think the oil companies  
30 should look into that real carefully rather than telling





J. Raddi

1 us they already opened the creek that they plugged.  
2 What's going to happen another few years from now?  
3 We'll have no fish to eat once the pipeline is built,  
4 once it's settled down, we'll have no more fish, there  
5 will be no more fish for our family to eat.

6 Another thing I would like  
7 to mention about, is about this road they were talking  
8 about to build in between here and Inuvik. I'm really  
9 against it. The reason why I'm against it is because  
10 it's bad enough right now the way it is when there's  
11 a winter road in between here and Inuvik. We get a  
12 lot of taxi drivers bringing in liquor, bootlegging.  
13 Sure, sometimes they get charged but the judge give  
14 them very little fine, like John Steen was mentioning  
15 last night when he made the speech.

16 I'm really against that. I  
17 really think when a person bootlegs like this they  
18 should really put him in jail at least six months because  
19 what is this for a person that's making a lot of money,  
20 25 bucks is just like 25¢ for him. First thing you  
21 know he gets out of Court and he's just laughing at  
22 us and we don't want this to happen any more.

23 If they are thinking to build  
24 a road in between here and Inuvik, they should build  
25 a road in between here and Husky Lakes. It would do  
26 a lot of help for us. We could go in summertime if  
27 the road is built, go out fishing. I know there's a  
28 lot of fish up there because I used to fly in with a  
29 plane.

30 Another thing I'm against is



J. Raddi

1 this dredging that they're talking about. Gulf Oil  
2 are thinking to dredge Husky Lakes. Who knows how  
3 much damage it's going to make to the fish once they  
4 start dredging that lake? The reason why I mention  
5 about this is because that's the only place we bring  
6 our families in spring, up to Husky Lakes<sup>to</sup> jiggle  
7 through the ice, we bring school kids up in springtime,  
8 we let them jiggle through the ice. What's going to  
9 happen if there's no more fish in Husky Lakes? What  
10 our kids going to do if they grow up, and us? We're  
11 just going to be sitting here at home just waiting for  
12 the end of the month to come to get relief, and we  
13 don't want to see that happen here in Tuk.

14 That's all I have to say for  
15 now.

16 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
17 Mr. Raddi.

18 (WITNESS ASIDE)  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30



V. Steen

VINCE STEEN, resumed:

THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger,  
I'd like to direct some questions, if I may, to the  
representatives of the oil companies.

THE COMMISSIONER: Fine. Well,  
why don't we do this? Maybe Mr. -- no, Mr. Horsfield  
and Mr. Hnatiuk -- sorry Mr. Bayly. Well, I shouldn't  
have been-- Shouldn't point. Maybe you could just sit  
over here and you could bring this mike over and that  
way you could face across the room so the people can --  
So that you people know who these witness are. The  
gentlemen with the glasses and the cardigan is Mr.  
Hnatiuk of Gulf Oil and Mr. Hnatiuk's company, Gulf,  
is a partner with Dome in the offshore exploration  
wells that Dome proposes to drill this summer and Mr.  
Raddi, it's Gulf that you're concerned about, their  
plan to dredge the Husky Lakes to enable barges with  
the modules for the gas plants to get through to Parsons  
Lake.

The other witness, Mr.  
Horsfield, who is wearing the pullover, is from Imperial  
Oil and -- all right. I just wanted people to know  
who they are.

THE WITNESS: I'll ask these  
questions as a representative of COPE for Tuk. The  
first questions I have to ask concerns Dome and/or  
Imperial and maybe either one could possibly explain  
to us just what is a blowout?

MR. HNATIUK: Normally when  
a well is being drilled, there is mud in the hole which



Stop

and hold any oil or gas back in the rock. If, for some reason, this mud becomes too light and starts to come out of the hole, then it would be a blowout.

Normally, this would be detected long before it would happen. They would see the gas in the mud and the well would be brought under control by circulating the mud. Also, the offshore well would have at least five blowout preventors on it and it would be closed to prevent a blowout. So, the chances of a blowout are very, very remote; very little chance.

Most blowouts are gas and most blowouts will seal themselves. The answer to your question though, a blowout would be an uncontrolled flow of oil or gas from a hole being drilled in the ground.

THE COMMISSIONER: Just one thing. At Sachs Harbor, I think you told us that if there were a blowout, and you made it plain the chances were very, very small that there would ever be one, you said if there were a blowout, there would be something like 1,500 barrels a day of oil coming out of the hole in the sea. Is that --

MR. WATKINS: Yes, that is a reasonable estimate that the government is using. If this oil were collecting under the ice even for a whole year, the amount of that oil spread out, say one-quarter of an inch under the ice, would be four square miles and I wish to correct the record if I said four miles square at Sachs Harbor. I wish to correct the record.





V. STEEN

1 The correct figure is four square miles. That's two  
2 miles on one side and two miles on the other side.

3 That would be the area  
4 covered by the oil. However, we know that that oil  
5 will not stay in one place. The ice will break up and  
6 carry the oil away with it but if it could all be  
7 contained a quarter inch thick, it would be four  
8 square miles.

9 THE WITNESS: If 1,500 barrels  
10 a day would cover four square miles, how many square  
11 miles would it cover in a year?

12 MR. HNATIUK: That four square  
13 miles would be if it was out of control for a whole  
14 year.

15 THE COMMISSIONER: Well I think  
16 to be fair though to Mr. Steen and fair to yourself,  
17 Mr. Hnatiuk, you're talking about, are you not, the  
18 actual quantity of oil -- once the oil reaches open  
19 water, it doesn't stay a quarter inch thick. It spreads  
20 out so that what Mr. Hnatiuk's saying is that if you  
21 took all that oil, 1,500 barrels a day, and piled it  
22 up on the ground with something underneath it so it  
23 didn't leak, it would cover -- be two miles long, two  
24 miles wide and a quarter inch thick.

25 But, if it blows out of a  
26 hole in the ground for a year and stays under the ice,  
27 then when it reaches the open leads in the spring, it  
28 spreads out. It isn't a quarter of an inch thick. It  
29 may be a very thin film of oil spread out over a very  
30 great area. That's the problem that we're concerned



about. Is that a fair way of putting it? Tell me if you don't agree with that.

MR. HNATIUK: If I could give another example, on open water, if we said it was one millimeter thick, the area would be about 25 square miles and I think maybe a millimeter thick of oil would be a reasonable thickness. We know that the ice, however, will carry the oil a long ways to the west when it breaks up.

In the summertime, the oil would spread with the surface currents and depending on which way the winds are blowing, if the oil were not contained. But there will be almost a mill rubber boom or special rubber skirt on the ships and on the shore to keep the oil from spreading on the open water and as the oil were held in place, it will be collected by a boat.

THE WITNESS: If you have a blowout and we assume now -- I mean we've got a year's oil spread there, we assume that the next year you are planning to drill a relief well. Perhaps maybe you could tell me what's a relief well?

MR. HNATIUK: A relief well is a second well drilled at an angle to hit the porous rock that holds the oil or the gas, to hit that rock at about where the first well was when the blowout occurred. When the well reaches the bottom of the first well, mud would be pumped down to bring the first well under control. Most blowouts, however, seal themselves. Only some 20 percent need a relief



THE WITNESS: Well, I will deal with the 20 percent. Supposing -- I assure you that I did some ice studies out there, the movement of the ice over the last two years. The movement of the currents. I would like your opinion on the chances of your ship getting back to drill that relief well.

MR. HNATIUK: The ship would get back as soon as the ice moved out again if the cause of the blowout was the ice having moved in. The relief well might be drilled in the same summer that the accident occurs. It may not be out of control the whole year. Every attempt would be made to bring it under control that same year and the other -- there is a second ship there if the first one is damaged in some way. The second ship is required to be nearby to come and start the relief well. So, unless the blowout occurs during the freezeup, there is very good chance that the ship could get a relief well started and maybe even bring the well under control that same season.

THE WITNESS: You still haven't answered the question of how much of a chance as far as the ice is concerned, assuming you couldn't finish the relief well that year, that you have of getting back to drill that relief well next year?

MR. HNATIUK: Almost every summer, there is some open water. 1974 was an exception and possibly a year like that, there may not have been many days in which you could drill. I think it works





V. Steen

1 out to maybe 15 days of open water at the location  
2 north of Tuktoyaktuk in 1974 that could have been  
3 used, but that was an exceptional year. That was the  
4 worst in ten years. Most years, there is open water  
5 in which a drill ship could operate.

6 THE WITNESS: Now, this,  
7 while we are talking about that you can get back to--  
8 I assume that we're talking about the one at 40 miles  
9 out?

10 MR. HNATIUK: The one straight  
11 north of Tuktoyaktuk, 45 miles, I believe. That is  
12 the only well in which our company has a partial interest.

13 THE WITNESS: There's a lot  
14 more dots out in that map than one and does Dome have  
15 any idea of the ice movement where the rest of the  
16 wells are planned to be drilled?

17 MR. HNATIUK: I can't say  
18 what studies Dome has done and I don't know just  
19 whose permits those dots are on. My first comment  
20 is that exploration drilling will be conducted at a  
21 very slow pace in the Beaufort Sea. Those wells to  
22 be started this summer will cost about \$40 million  
23 each and they're not going to be a whole lot of ships  
24 drilling in here at once. By the end of 1977, only  
25 two wells will have been finished and there will be  
26 a lot learned about drilling in the Beaufort Sea, and  
27 oil cleanup techniques will improve during that time.  
28 There will be a lot of other studies done during the  
29 next few years.

30 THE WITNESS: I've also been



V. Steen

1 told that a drill ship, once drilling, can cut off at  
2 any moment. I would like to know if this is really  
3 true.

4 MR. HNATIUK: These drill  
5 ships have eight anchor lines each. They have a quick  
6 release system where just a -- different kinds of  
7 signals can be sent. The drilling line will part.  
8 They'll leave the anchors in place and the ship can  
9 move away. There is another emergency under which they  
10 could leave where they might have to cut the drill  
11 pipe itself. I don't know whether you were talking  
12 about cutting anchor lines or cutting drill pipe, but  
13 it is also possible to close the blowout preventors  
14 right on the drill pipe. It'll cut the drill pipe and  
15 hold the well safe.

16 THE WITNESS: Well, I'm talking  
17 about the drill pipe. There's no point of cutting the  
18 anchors if the drill pipe is still there. The other  
19 question that I have is what would you do if you had a  
20 blowout, concerning the oil other than sweeping it up  
21 with the booms. Say you have a blowout right at  
22 freezeup point and the ship has to get out.

23 MR. HNATIUK: If a blowout  
24 occurred right at freezeup and you couldn't use the  
25 booms any longer, I would expect that they would attempt  
26 to burn the oil in place. The oil and gas coming up  
27 would break any thin ice and the gas -- the natural  
28 gas coming with the oil would help it burn. So, the  
29 oil would be burned as long as possible. Then, when  
30 the ice would no longer stay broken or couldn't be



V. Steen

1 broken, then the oil would collect on the underside  
2 of the ice . Then, as a layer of oil collects on the  
3 ice, new ice grows below it and it becomes just like  
4 a sandwich with a layer of oil inside and we showed  
5 at Cape Parry last year where, in spring, this oil  
6 will come to the surface and can be burned off. It  
7 will be necessary to track the ice containing this oil,  
8 however, and this can be done by looking for the black  
9 pools or by setting radio beacons on the ice.

10 There are two experiments  
11 underway at Tuktoyaktuk -- north of Tuktoyaktuk right now.  
12 The government has one going and the people that plan  
13 to do the drilling, that's Canmar, have the other  
14 experiment going where they are checking the movement  
15 of the ice and when the ice breaks up, they will continue  
16 to track where that ice is going.

17 THE WITNESS: You say you  
18 have buoys out there now that you are tracking?

19 MR. HNATIUK: Canmar has  
20 equipment on the ice that sends the signal to a  
21 satellite and that satellite sends back information  
22 saying exactly where it is and it gives us information  
23 several times a day. I'm not very familiar with the  
24 government experiment other than I know that they are  
25 also tracking the movement of the ice and will continue  
26 to after breakup.

27 THE WITNESS: Assuming that  
28 you have this oil marked and you plan to burn it,  
29 what are your chances of getting there and lighting it?  
30 Now, you're dealing with ice moving steady, rough ice,



V. Steen

1 maybe even possibly ice only frozen over the night  
2 before where it isn't strong enough to hold a man  
3 walking even?

4 MR. HNATIUK: I understand  
5 that Canmar is planning some experiments for this  
6 winter to check different ways of setting fire to the  
7 oil. There was no problem setting fire to the oil  
8 at Cape Parry last year. It was just a matter of  
9 dropping a paper towel with some kerosene on it and  
10 it burned. You must get out there fairly soon and  
11 light that oil. It could be lit by dropping something  
12 from a helicopter or maybe even landing on the ice  
13 nearby and setting fire to it. But there would be so  
14 many pools, that it would be best if there were a  
15 method of dropping something out of a helicopter or  
16 maybe even out of a fixed wing aircraft and I understand  
17 that the people planning to do the drilling are going  
18 to do some work on that this winter.

19 THE WITNESS: My experience  
20 with the open<sup>water</sup> and moving ice is that 90 percent of  
21 the time you can't see nothing for fog, fog coming/off<sup>in</sup>  
22 of the open water. You say you have buoy markers or  
23 beacons on this ice that holds this pool of oil. What  
24 type of beacon is it and what is to keep it from getting  
25 smashed by the ice?

26 MR. HNATIUK: I don't have  
27 exact details on what kind of a beacon it is. It's  
28 not our company doing the work. I'm just told about  
29 this. They will set it on a large floe that looks  
30 strong, that looks like it isn't going to break up, I





V. Steen

1 presume or that is what I would do if I were out there.  
2 They might lose some of them, but the idea would be  
3 to put them on floes where they would likely stay and  
4 transmit their signal.

5 THE WITNESS: Well, the  
6 reason I mentioned the fog is that if the ice -- now  
7 you just finished telling me that this oil is going  
8 to be frozen to this ice at freezeup. Now, I can't  
9 assume that that ice is going to be 20 feet thick  
10 by spring because it only gets about 8 feet thick a  
11 year, if it doesn't smash up during the year. But  
12 at that place or at that area that you're talking  
13 about, we have moving ice year round. It very seldom  
14 gets more than three or four feet thick. Now, you're  
15 going to try to find a chunk of ice big enough and  
16 thick enough that is holding this oil and that can  
17 resist the pressure without smashing up that chunk of  
18 ice and moving your buoy maybe, say, 20 or 30 miles one  
19 side where there's no oil, and you'll be looking for  
20 the oil in the wrong place. Is my conclusion correct?

21 MR. HNATIUK: Every floe  
22 does not need to be marked. Just a few would be  
23 marked so that an airplane can follow the general  
24 track that that dirty ice took and then hopefully, when  
25 the airplane follows it, using these beacons, they'll  
26 be able to see the black pools. If it's foggy, they  
27 would have to wait for the fog to clear before they  
28 could set fire to it, but not every floe is going  
29 to be marked. Just certain large floes would be marked  
30 so they get a general idea of the track that the ice



V. Steen

1 took when it moved to the west so that they would  
2 know where to expect the pools of oil to come up through  
3 the ice when the ice gets warm in the spring.

4 THE WITNESS: Now that we  
5 sort of cleared that up, I have a question concerning  
6 those yellow pipelines up there on that map. I  
7 would like to know just how much exploration work  
8 has been done or maybe there's another word for it,  
9 but how much work has been done as far as finding  
10 out how you're going to bury that pipeline? I assume  
11 it's going to be buried from these offshore wells.

12 MR. HNATIUK: There have been  
13 studies done on the thickness of ice, using submarines,  
14 using drilling, using echosounding, so there is some  
15 idea of how deep the deepest ice keels might be.  
16 So, they think they have a pretty good idea of how  
17 far out or what the greatest depth of water might be  
18 in which scraping of the sea bottom might take place.

19 They've also done a great  
20 many surveys using high resolution, echosounding to  
21 determine how deep these trenches are. A feasibility  
22 study has been done on laying a pipeline out to 150  
23 feet of water, I believe. Our company did not do it,  
24 but I know that one has been done to determine the  
25 cost and to see if it was possible, and there is equip-  
26 ment available to bury pipelines deeply below the sea  
27 bottom. There may be other work going on that I don't  
28 -- that I'm not aware of. But I know of at least one  
29 study that was done.

30 THE WITNESS: To bury this



V. Steen

1 pipeline you would, I assume, have to dredge; right?

2 MR. HNATIUK: That's correct.

3 THE WITNESS: How far down  
4 would you dredge? 30 feet? 20 feet?

5 MR. HNATIUK: I don't think  
6 I can give you an exact answer to that right now  
7 except to say that the trenches in the vicinity of  
8 -- or in the area where we plan to drill are less than  
9 ten feet.

10 THE COMMISSIONER: That is,  
11 the trenches from ice scour?

12 MR. HNATIUK: Yes. There  
13 have been --

14 THE COMMISSIONER: You'd want  
15 to go at least below ten feet, at any rate.

16 MR. HNATIUK: Yes.

17 THE COMMISSIONER: You want to  
18 dredge ten feet or more.

19 MR. HNATIUK: That's correct.

20 THE WITNESS: I still don't  
21 quite get that, you're going to dredge ten feet below  
22 ice level or ten feet below the bottom of the ocean?

23 THE COMMISSIONER: No. Ten  
24 feet below the bottom of the ocean because Mr. Hnatiuk  
25 says that they found that at the bottom of the ocean,  
26 there are trenches ten feet deep that the ice has  
27 dug. So they have to, if they build pipelines out to  
28 the oil and gas in the middle of the Beaufort Sea,  
29 assuming there is any out there, they have to dig  
30 a trench in the bottom of the sea that's at least ten





V. Steen

1 feet deep and then bury the pipe below that. Whether  
2 ten feet deep is deep enough, is something that I really  
3 don't think they're sure of at this stage.

4 MR. HNATIUK: There would have  
5 to be a safety factor added and before anyone would  
6 consider laying a line, there would be very detailed  
7 surveys done once that pipeline route is known. But  
8 since there has been no oil or gas found in the deeper  
9 water, no one has done such detailed surveys of pipeline  
10 routes yet.

11 THE WITNESS: I assume that  
12 in 40 feet of water then, you would dig your trench  
13 15 feet because you're digging ten feet from the top  
14 of the pipe. The pipe must be two feet thick and then  
15 you give it another foot, is 15 feet and I would assume  
16 then, that if you go out into the 60 and to the 80-foot  
17 mark of water, you would have to then dig your trenches  
18 deeper as the ice is going to be heavier and dig in  
19 bigger trenches; right?

20 MR. HNATIUK: This will depend  
21 on detailed surveys yet to be done. If it's found  
22 that the trenches are deeper in the deeper water, I  
23 think what you say is correct.

24 THE WITNESS: Then, other  
25 than the possibilities of a blowout, we then also have  
26 now the possibilities of the ice taking your whole  
27 pipeline and maybe cracking it. What are the chances  
28 or what safety devices do we have that is going to  
29 shut that oil off right away?

30 MR. HNATIUK: I don't think



V. Steen

1 design has gone that far yet, but in other pipeline  
2 operations, if there is a pipeline break and loss in  
3 pressure, the thing will shut itself off. Do you want  
4 to comment on that Ian?

5 MR. HORSFIELD: No, Vince.

6 I'll just mention that there are pipelines in existence  
7 with automated shutdowns as Mr. Hnatiuk has mentioned  
8 and that these are proven equipment. They will shut  
9 down the line as soon as pressure is lost. So all the  
10 fluid that's lost is the fluid in the pipeline itself.

11 THE WITNESS: Mr. Horsfield,  
12 while you're there, do you plan to run pipelines from  
13 your man-made islands to the shore too, underwater  
14 pipelines?

15 MR. HORSFIELD: Yes, that's  
16 probably the way it would come ashore.

17 THE WITNESS: The safety  
18 devices and the trenches are going to be built, I assume,  
19 similar to Dome's?

20 MR. HORSFIELD: Yes, similar  
21 to the ones that have been mentioned just now. I  
22 don't think we can speak for Dome, either one of us.

23 THE WITNESS: In the man-made  
24 island, if there is -- if while you're drilling, I  
25 mean pumping on the man-made island, I assume that the  
26 man-made island's pump has all the safety factors to  
27 cut off if the ice should somehow climb on top that  
28 island and damage your pump?

29 MR. HORSFIELD: If there's  
30 any kind of problem on the island with the wells itself,



V. Steen

1 which is whether the wells are pumping or flowing,  
2 I suspect you're talking about damage to wellheads  
3 or things like that that might cause a surface problem,  
4 there are safety devices and shutoff valves down in  
5 the bottom of the hole that do close in the event of  
6 loss of pressure at the surface, and there's an  
7 automatic shutdown in the well itself that would shut  
8 off the wells.

9 THE WITNESS: A question  
10 concerning the oil that's in, let's say, this cracked  
11 pipe. Where is the cutoff? I have to assume that  
12 there's one at each end and none in the middle; right?  
13 All the oil that's in that pipe, being lighter than  
14 water, is going to float to the surface.

15 MR. HORSFIELD: Yes, the  
16 valves that would shut off the pipeline would be in  
17 accessible places which would be at either end of the  
18 pipeline.

19 THE WITNESS: So, if you have  
20 a 40-mile pipe, all the oil that's in between from  
21 each end will float to the surface?

22 MR. HORSFIELD: If it was 40  
23 miles in one piece with no other facility part-way  
24 along it, yes.

25 THE WITNESS: Well, I say 40 miles,  
26 because it is 40 miles to the closest offshore well.

27 MR. HORSFIELD: Well, Vince,  
28 what I mean is that if you look at that map, and I don't  
29 want to appear like I agree with map because I don't,  
30 but you can see that there are postulated several fields



V. Steen

1 along one pipeline. So that there would be valves  
2 at each spot if the pipeline ran that way, in which  
3 case there might be, at intervals of a few miles  
4 between valves, even though the line itself might go  
5 out as far as 40 miles.

6 THE WITNESS: Does Imperial  
7 have any more -- done any more exploration work as  
8 far as building their underwater pipeline than  
9 Dome?

10 MR. HORSFIELD: We have looked  
11 into this feasibility study that Mr. Hnatiuk talked  
12 about, and so we've done that much.

13 THE WITNESS: The other question  
14 I have, as far as the bases are concerned for these  
15 offshore wells -- I mean do all the lines seem to  
16 come to Tuk for the eastern, like for Cape Dalhousie  
17 and that, is Tuk going to end up to be a big base  
18 with a lot of men and a lot of people?

19 MR. HORSFIELD: Are you  
20 looking at the map?

21 THE WITNESS: Well, I'm looking  
22 at -- maybe Dome should answer it as I'm looking at  
23 the lines concerning Cape Dalhousie.

24 THE COMMISSIONER: Well without--  
25 is it fair to say that could happen? If you found  
26 oil and gas in the Beaufort Sea, where Dome is drilling,  
27 Tuk could become a big center. Is that a fair assumption?  
28

29 MR. HORSFIELD: Well, I think  
30 there's a good possibility that there might be a





V. Steen

center somewhere around that area or this area. Whether it's right at Tuk depends somewhat on Tuk itself.

THE COMMISSIONER: Yes. One would hope so.

THE WITNESS: Oh, that's a tough one.

THE COMMISSIONER: Maybe while Mr. Steen is considering his next series of questions and I think they've all been good questions, maybe I should tell you that the Inquiry doesn't -- I don't necessarily accept all that Mr. Hnatiuk has said about the capability that Dome claims for cleaning up an oil spill. There's a dispute about this.

On the one side of the argument you have the oil and gas industry and they say that a blowout is something that there's only the very slightest chance will ever occur and they say if it does happen, then they feel that they can clean it up and it won't damage the -- it won't cause serious damage to the fish and the birds and the mammals of the Beaufort Sea.

The Inquiry, I should tell you that the Inquiry has heard the evidence of the team of experts assembled by the Federal Government to conduct the Beaufort study and Mr. Allen Milne who headed that group from the Department of the Environment and the Department of Fisheries and his colleagues, not all of them, but many of them gave evidence at the Inquiry, and they agree with Mr. Hnatiuk



V. Steen

1 that a blowout is something that is very unlikely to  
2 occur. They agree that the chances are very small.  
3 They say it's a remote possibility and not anything  
4 more than that. But, Mr. Milne and his colleagues  
5 part company with Mr. Hnatiuk at that point, because  
6 they that if you get an oil blowout, they believe it  
7 will run wild for a year and maybe even two years  
8 because they say you will not be able to drill a  
9 relief well for a year or two years.

10 They said that what will  
11 happen is that in the spring, the oil which is under  
12 the ice will migrate to the open water. Of course,  
13 when it reaches open water, it reaches the very area  
14 that birds are seeking, that the seals are seeking, and  
15 the other life of the sea is seeking.

16 So they're concerned that<sup>the oil</sup>/will  
17 migrate to open leads, and Mr. Hnatiuk pointed that  
18 the oil could occupy an area of open water of 25  
19 square miles, and that is an awful lot of open water  
20 in the spring.

21 Mr. Milne says that the oil  
22 would then tend to migrate, that is to travel, to the  
23 shore where of course it would cause damage to birds  
24 and other marine life. Mr. Milne and his colleagues  
25 say that neither the Federal Government nor the oil  
26 and gas industry would be able to clean up the oil.

27 They point out that in other  
28 parts of the world where we have had oil blowouts,  
29 they have had great difficulty in cleaning them up.  
30 Where we've had great oil spills of large volumes of oil,



V. Steen

1 we've had great difficulty cleaning them up and they  
2 say for, really the reasons Mr. Steen has given, that  
3 they don't think that you could clean up a major oil  
4 spill in the Beaufort Sea.

5 They say that if you could  
6 get out there and burn the oil up, as it reaches open  
7 water, that would be a way of cleaning it up but they  
8 say there really is no possibility that you could do  
9 that. They point out that weather conditions, the fog  
10 that Mr. Steen has mentioned, conditions that make  
11 it impossible to get out there, impossible to find it,  
12 would make it impossible to burn it off.

13 They also say that they don't  
14 think you'd get there in time because once the oil  
15 has been exposed to the weather, it won't burn and they  
16 have told the Inquiry about the case of the "Torrey  
17 Canyon", which was a big oil tanker that went down off  
18 the coast of England, and the Royal Air Force dropped  
19 napalm on the oil to try to get it burn and it didn't  
20 burn, and they say that they don't think the oil in  
21 the Beaufort Sea would burn.

22 It's true that the oil and  
23 gas industry conducted an experiment at Cape Parry  
24 with something like 200 barrels of oil and got it to  
25 burn but that is not comparable really to a major oil  
26 spill in the middle of the Beaufort Sea.

27 So you have the two points of  
28 view and I'm -- Mr. Milne and his colleagues aren't  
29 here to testify tonight, so I'm simply saying that they  
30 line up with Mr. Steen on his side of this argument,





V. Steen

1                                   that  
2   though they agree/~~the~~ chances of an oil blowout  
3   occurring are very remote.

4                                   Anyway, this is a very  
5   serious question and as you can see, Mr. Hnatiuk and  
6   Mr. Horsfield and the industry are treating it very  
7   seriously and are very concerned about it, as I know  
8   all of you are and as Mr. Steen is.

9                                   Well, that gave you a moment  
10  to obtain some inspiration from an unknown figure in  
11  the audience, I think.

12                                  THE WITNESS: Well, the only  
13  other two more questions, I believe. One is concerning  
14  your pump in the 60-foot mark or over. I assume  
15  under 60 feet, you are going to build an island.  
16  What are you going to use to put the pump on in water  
17  deeper than 60 feet?

18                                  MR. HNATIUK: There have been  
19  feasibility studies done to look at structures that  
20  would sit on the bottom of the sea. They could be  
21  concrete or steel. They could be a pipe, a large  
22  pipe, breaking the ice similar to the one in the  
23  Cook Inlet which breaks the ice. The platform sits  
24  on top of this single cylinder. It's called a monopod.  
25  We have had feasibility studies done of using a cone  
26  shape with a large bottom and a large top, but with a  
27  smaller neck where it breaks the ice and it would be  
28  shaped in such a way to bend the ice up and the ice  
29  would break as it moved against it and these structures  
30  could be ballasted with sand or could be held in place  
  by pilings so they would not move. There have been



V. Steen

1 feasibility studies done in this regards. No final  
2 design has been necessary yet because there hasn't  
3 been oil and gas found in those water depths.

4 THE WITNESS: How high out  
5 of the water would this structure you talk about stand?

6 MR. HNATIUK: I don't recall  
7 the exact number, but it would be based on how much  
8 the ice might pile up as it crushes. There would be  
9 sufficient clearance so that the piling ice will not  
10 push against the bottom of the platform sitting on  
11 top of it.

12 THE WITNESS: Well, these  
13 feasibility studies that you've done, have they proved  
14 anything? Have you come up -- have they been able to  
15 come up with something that you think you can use?

16 MR. HNATIUK: Yes, they have  
17 been able to do cost estimates to show that out to  
18 some water depth, this type of structure would be  
19 economically feasible. Beyond some water depth,  
20 however, you could no longer place platforms, you just  
21 could not build them that tall and get them to stay  
22 there; so therefore you would have to complete the  
23 wells on the bottom of the sea and lay the lines to  
24 shallower water where you could build such a platform.

25 THE WITNESS: What harbours  
26 have Dome planned for their ships?

27 MR. HNATIUK: I believe they're  
28 still reviewing them and I really can't speak for Dome.  
29 That's an operational problem that we haven't yet  
30 been involved in, I'm afraid.



V. Steen

1 I could ask Dome to contact  
2 you and give you their latest thinking on it. I can do  
3 that, but I have not been involved in those discussions  
4 myself. To the best of my knowledge, they don't plan  
5 to dredge into Tuk harbour, but I really cannot speak  
6 for Dome. I'll ask someone from Dome to speak to you  
7 at the first opportunity.

8 THE WITNESS: Well, how much  
9 water does this ship draw?

10 MR. HNATIUK: I don't remember.  
11 We'll get you those numbers too. I knew them once but  
12 for fear of being wrong in the record here, I won't  
13 quote them now and I'll have Dome pass those on to you.  
14 There's nothing confidential about them and they'll make  
15 them available.

16 THE COMMISSIONER: Could I  
17 ask you, Mr. Hnatiuk, you said a feasibility study has  
18 been done to see if you can build a pipeline out to  
19 150 feet of water. Was that a study carried out for  
20 Gulf or Imperial or Dome or all of them, or what?

21 MR. HNATIUK: It was done for  
22 a group of companies who are members of the Arctic  
23 Petroleum Operators Association.

24 THE COMMISSIONER: An engineer-  
25 ing firm did it, I take it?

26 MR. HNATIUK: Yes, that's  
27 correct.

28 THE COMMISSIONER: Can you tell  
29 me who it was?

30 MR. HNATIUK: This pipeline



V. Steen

1 study was done by a firm called R.J. Brown. I don't  
2 know their correct name. They're actually a European  
3 company.

4 THE COMMISSIONER: I take it  
5 it was what you call a preliminary feasibility study.  
6 At any rate can you tell us whether it said it was  
7 feasible or no?

8 MR. HNATIUK: Yes, it said it  
9 was feasible to bury the pipeline. It gave cost  
10 estimates. It could not be a really definitive study  
11 without knowing just how deeply it had to be buried  
12 and it was not able to go into detail on whether  
13 insulation was required for the pipeline. The perma-  
14 frost that has been found in the Beaufort Sea has  
15 been found at such depths that it shouldn't be a  
16 problem in pipelining.

17 THE COMMISSIONER: Did R.J.  
18 Brown assume that they had to bury it to a certain depth?

19 MR. HNATIUK: Yes, they did.  
20 They were directed by the oil companies in this regard  
21 but our oil company was not operating the project and  
22 I just don't have all of the details handy.

23 THE COMMISSIONER: Maybe Mr.  
24 Horsfield, I don't know if you were here last night  
25 when Dr. Schwartz read his brief --

26 MR. HORSFIELD: Yes.

27 THE COMMISSIONER: -- at page  
28 9 he said, and maybe you could comment on this and  
29 tell us whether you know whether this is so or not.  
30 He said:





V. Steen

1 "Last year when one of these islands,"  
2 that's one of these artificial islands,  
3 "cracked up in a not too severe storm, 70,000  
4 gallons of fuel narrowly escaped from being  
5 dumped in the sea."

6 He went on to say people weren't informed and so on,  
7 but did one of these islands crack up in a not too  
8 severe storm, and was there an incident of some kind  
9 involving 70,000 gallons of fuel oil?

10 MR. HORSFIELD: Yes, I take  
11 issue, I guess, with a couple of words in that. In  
12 the first place it was a very severe storm, and with  
13 winds over 50 miles an hour and very high waves, I've  
14 forgotten the size. To say the island cracked up is  
15 not really true. It took a corner off the island.

16 THE COMMISSIONER: What island  
17 was it?

18 MR. HORSFIELD: Netsurk.,

19 THE COMMISSIONER: Netsurt?

20 MR. HORSFIELD: Netsurk.

21 THE COMMISSIONER: Where is  
22 that?

23 MR. HORSFIELD: Oh, right  
24 there.

25 THE COMMISSIONER: More or less  
26 west of Pelly Island, on a line west of Pelly Island  
27 intercepted by a line north of Olivier Island.

28 MR. HORSFIELD: Yes, it is.

29 THE COMMISSIONER: That's just  
30 for the record.



V. Steen

1 MR. HORSFIELD: The waves took  
2 a piece off the north-west edge of the island. The  
3 rig was laying down on the island and I might mention  
4 first of all that these islands are not intended to  
5 be permanent structures. They're built only to last  
6 for sure through the life of the well being drilled.  
7 If we should want the island any longer than that  
8 we would go out and prepare it for a longer period.

9 The well had been drilled,  
10 the rig was laying down. There was some fuel on the  
11 island. There were three tanks, almost all empty.  
12 There was 70,000 gallons in one tank. When the storm  
13 took a piece off the island our people were alerted  
14 to the storm. As a precautionary move they took the  
15 fuel from the tank and moved it to the back of the  
16 island where it was safe.

17 As far as I am concerned,  
18 there was nothing at risk on the island.

19 THE COMMISSIONER: Were any  
20 of the tanks endangered by the storm?

21 MR. HORSFIELD: Yes, some  
22 of the tanks, some of the fuel tanks, the original  
23 fuel tanks which were dyked were sitting on that  
24 part of the island, and that's why our people, when  
25 alerted of the storm, moved the <sup>fuel</sup> to the back side of  
26 the island.

27 THE COMMISSIONER: And the  
28 dykes that were protecting these fuel tanks were in  
29 fact destroyed.

30 MR. HORSFIELD: Destroyed, yes.



V. Steen

1 THE COMMISSIONER: By the  
2 storm.

3 MR. HORSFIELD: Yes, that's  
4 the part of the island that was eroded away.

5 I mention, sir, that that  
6 could not have happened during the drilling of the  
7 well, of course, when the fuel was in the tanks, when  
8 the tanks were full, the reason being that the well  
9 was drilled in winter. It's solid ice out there.

10 THE COMMISSIONER: It's your  
11 turn again.

12 THE WITNESS: One more question  
13 and that's about it. Do you people, do the oil  
14 company people feel that the amount of experimental  
15 work they've done as far as offshore drilling is  
16 concerned, have they had enough time, do they feel  
17 that it is safe to drill?

18 MR. HORSFIELD: I say very  
19 definitely because we wouldn't be out there if we  
20 didn't feel it was safe to drill.

21 THE WITNESS: IN other words,  
22 no government or anybody is forcing you to drill,  
23 nobody is telling you that you have to drill say next  
24 year or the year after,<sup>or</sup> anything like that, eh?

25 MR. HORSFIELD: We are not  
26 forced to drill. The locations are chosen voluntarily  
27 by ourselves. If you're meaning that is there some  
28 kind of deadline ahead of us, there is of course a  
29 termination date on exploration permits.

30 THE WITNESS: That's what I





V. Steen

meant; and these deadlines don't force you to drill?

MR. HORSFIELD: Well, they do  
in a sense/<sup>in</sup>that we are obligated when we took the  
permits to spend money in an exploration program or  
pay the money to the governm ent. Those were the  
terms of the permit. We have greatly exceeded that  
expenditure so we have no obligation to drill in terms  
of having to pay out a financial penalty if we don't.

The only obligation or the only, say, thing encouraging us to drill is the fact that the exploration permits do terminate in, I believe, this and next year, a lot of them do; but they can be extended. The cost, of course, goes up considerably to us, so there is that much encouragement to drill. That is not, however, our main incentive. Our main incentive is to get out there and find oil and gas.

THE WITNESS: What about you  
Mr. Hunt -- Mr. John?

THE COMMISSIONER: How about  
Rockerfeller?

MR. HNATIUK: Our permits are satisfied by the amount that we have spent on seismic to date. There was a commitment on some of our acreage to be spent by 1975, but this was satisfied by our commitments to construct, to help in the construction of drill ships by agreeing to use them. So our obligations on these permits are satisfied at this time and the permits have quite some time to run yet.

THE COMMISSIONER: So that you



V. Steen

1 don't have to drill this summer to keep your permits  
2 and leases in good standing. Is that the point?

3 MR. HNATIUK: This would be  
4 the case in most of the permits out there. There  
5 were five unique permits taken, which carried what  
6 they called a work bonus commitment on them, and this  
7 is being satisfied by committing to use the drill ship  
8 and I don't know the exact terms of that agreement  
9 with government but I presume it's something to the  
10 effect that we will drill them as soon as equipment  
11 is available.

12 THE WITNESS: One more question  
13 here. Do Gulf or Imperial know about the five-year  
14 \$6 million project in which Arctic Navigation is  
15 involved, has it been given the go-ahead?

16 MR. HNATIUK: I'm not familiar  
17 with it. There again if it's associated with Dome's  
18 shore base, I can have Dome speak to you about it. I've  
19 seen the trucks hauling gravel, so I presume there's  
20 been some sort of approval given.

21 MR. HORSFIELD: I was going to  
22 say, Vince, do you know anything more about it that  
23 might help us identify it?

24 THE WITNESS: I don't know  
25 nothing. I just ask the question.

26 (LAUGHTER)

27 I'd like to thank Imperial and Dome for the questions  
28 they've answered for me and the people, and it might  
29 have cleared up some questions but it also put a lot  
30 of doubt on others.

(WITNESS ASIDE)



1 THE COMMISSIONER: Well,  
2 that's what happens when you ask questions. Well,  
3 thank you, Mr. Steen. Sorry, do you want to add anything?

4 MR. HNATIUK: Justice Berger,  
5 I would like to make two or three comments while I'm  
6 up here, if that's in order.

7 THE COMMISSIONER: Sure.

8 MR. HNATIUK: I'm just a  
9 little concerned about your interpretation of what I  
10 have been saying about cleaning up oil in the  
11 Beaufort Sea. Let me put it this way, we are much  
12 more optimistic about our oil cleanup capabilities  
13 than the government was in their report. We do not  
14 claim to be able to clean up all of the oil, and we  
15 do agree that if in that very remote instance<sup>of</sup>/the  
16 worst case there was an oil blowout, I have said  
17 that some birds would die if there was a blowout, pos-  
18 sibly some fish, and some seals could be affected.  
19 There would be some oil in leads that we could not  
20 handle. There would be some oil stay in the ice and  
21 get into the deeper waters that possibly we could not  
22 get at, oil in pressure ridges. The oil that got on  
23 shore we hope we would be able to clean up in its  
24 entirety. All of the oil companies would certainly  
25 work together if there was such a disaster, we'd  
26 work with the government and every effort would be made  
27 to limit the damage.

28 I do not want to go on record  
29 as saying that we would clean up all of the oil and  
30 I don't want to say there would be no damage; but I



1 want -- I think the other companies would agree that  
2 every effort would be made to clean up as much oil as  
3 possible and <sup>to</sup> limit the damage.

4 I have one other comment.

5 There is concern about dredging in Husky Lake. Gulf  
6 does not propose to do any dredging in Husky Lakes.  
7 The surveys of the water have indicated that dredging  
8 would not be necessary.

9 THE COMMISSIONER: Excuse me,  
10 what about the Eskimo Fingers?

11 MR. HNATIUK: I'm sorry I  
12 wasn't at the Inquiry in Inuvik, and whatever they  
13 said there stands.

14 THE COMMISSIONER: I see.

15 MR. HNATIUK: Roly says they  
16 said none.

17 THE COMMISSIONER: They said  
18 none, eh?

19 MR. HNATIUK: I was told by  
20 our company that we do not propose to do any dredging  
21 in the Husky Lakes.

22 THE COMMISSIONER: But are you  
23 saying that you don't intend -- Gulf doesn't intend  
24 to do any dredging to bring barges around Liverpool  
25 Bay and through the Eskimo Fingers and the Husky  
26 Lakes to Parsons Lake? No dredging in that whole  
27 route?

28 MR. HNATIUK: That was my  
29 understanding.  
30





1 MR. HORSFIELD: That was  
2 virtually what they said at the hearings.

3 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, maybe  
4 you're right. At any rate is there anything else that  
5 you wanted to --

6 MR. HNATIUK: I am concerned,  
7 if I may take a moment here, with regard to the sugges-  
8 tion that Dr. Schwartz made about us proposing -- that  
9 is the joint industry-government research program --  
10 proposing a 50,000-gallon oil spill in the ocean. I  
11 was involved in reviewing these studies well in advance  
12 of them taking place, and there was never a proposal  
13 to spill 50,000 gallons of oil in the ocean. They  
14 poured four drums, that is two drums in one hole and  
15 two drums in another hole, out north of Cape Parry,  
16 and even though they thought they might not be able  
17 to clean it up, they did get back in June and burned  
18 off as much as they could.

19 In another experiment which  
20 I discussed before, in an isolated bay with a very  
21 narrow mouth, they poured about 12,500 gallons of  
22 crude oil under the ice into plastic skirts and it  
23 was essentially all burned off the following June.  
24 Contrary to what Dr. Schwartz suggested, the study was  
25 explained to the people of Paulatuk in detail in  
26 September, 1974, well before any oil was spilled. It  
27 was explained by Mr. Dan Billings of the Northwest  
28 Territories Government, Mr. Allen Milne, who is in  
29 charge of the project for the government, the contractor  
30 who was responsible, and Mr. Hunt, John Hunt from



1 Fisheries was also there but I don't think he was  
2 very familiar with the project. They had the project  
3 explained to them in detail, but there may have been  
4 some misunderstanding regarding the four drums that  
5 were spilled out in the currents.

6 I think that covers the comments  
7 I wanted to make.

8 THE COMMISSIONER: Mr. Horsfield,  
9 do you want to comment on what Mr. John Steen said  
10 yesterday about the possibility of a stocking plant?

11 MR. HORSFIELD: As I recall  
12 what he said, sir, he was referring to the liquids  
13 that are produced at the gas plant when the gas is  
14 processed, and I believe he mentioned something like  
15 100,000 gallons per day from the Taglu gas plant.  
16 There will in fact be, if our plant is finally built  
17 to the one billion cubic foot per day rate, there  
18 will be 15,000 barrels per day of liquids produced, which  
19 is considerably more than Mr. Steen mentioned.

20 To get this number in some  
21 perspective, Norman Wells produces about 3,000 barrels  
22 per day and supplies all of the communities in the  
23 western and central Territories. So this plant would  
24 in effect <sup>put out</sup> about five times that much product.

25 Now the material that is put  
26 out is not in usable form. It's analogous to or similar  
27 to crude oil in that it has many components and it is  
28 an unstable fluid. It cannot be used safely in the  
29 form that is produced at the plant. To be used it  
30 would have to be fractionated or refined. When gas



1 plant liquids are involved it's called fractionation  
2 and stabilization; but it is in effect a refining  
3 process where the fluid is broken down into its  
4 usable components that we know of, like diesel fuel,  
5 gasoline, furnace fuel, and so on. It cannot be used  
6 until that happens. So there is a refining process,  
7 then there is a storage process or storage required  
8 for the fluid; then there is a distribution process  
9 required to get it to a community like Tuk, for example.

10 Now all of that is quite an  
11 expensive proposition. We have analyzed it roughly and  
12 just for screening purposes and we have concluded that  
13 it's unlikely that products from the plant could com-  
14 pete with fuel oil from Norman Wells, for example, in  
15 this area. For that reason we have taken an initial  
16 approach of using some of that fluid, as much as  
17 possible, to fuel the gas plant itself, to provide  
18 the fuel for the gas plant. This can be done cheaper,  
19 of course, with the gas plant because there is no  
20 storage required, it's a continuous use. There's  
21 also no transportation required. It's done right there.

22 The gas plant itself would  
23 only use about 3,000 gallons per day. The rest then  
24 is planned to be reinjected into the ground pending  
25 possible installation of an oil pipeline at a later  
26 date in which time this fluid would be produced back  
27 and put into the oil pipeline, and sent south where  
28 there would be existing processing facilities.

29 That was our initial plan.  
30 We have since found out from analysis of the fluid that





1 it might be a little more complicated than that  
2 because the fluid contains some components that are  
3 not good for fuel purposes, and these in our terms  
4 are called aeromatics. These would have to be  
5 separated out from the fuel, making -- or from the  
6 product, making it a much more complicated process  
7 than we had thought of in the first place.

8 Therefore we're now looking  
9 in more detail at it and we may find that we cannot  
10 even use the fuel in the gas plant and that it would  
11 all have to be injected. That is under study at the  
12 present time.

13 We are also aware that the  
14 Federal Government<sup>and</sup> the Department of Indian and  
15 Northern Affairs, has proposed a study of the  
16 possibility of using plant product to fuel some of  
17 the communities. They have approached some of the oil  
18 companies about a joint study, we feel for some  
19 reasons that this is not practical but we have advised  
20 the government that we will co-operate with them in  
21 providing all the information they request, and I have  
22 no idea when their study might be completed.

23 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you.  
24 Well thank you both, Mr. Hnatiuk and Mr. Horsfield,  
25 thank you very much, and thank you, Mr. Steen.

26 It looks as if there are  
27 still quite a few more people who wish to speak, so  
28 I think that it being, I'm sure -- I don't have a  
29 watch but I'm sure it's after midnight -- I think  
30 maybe we should all go home and go to bed and maybe

347

M835

vol.44

Community

Canada.National Energy Board

Mackenzie Valley Pipeline-  
Inquiry

~~1111-5334~~  
~~But on~~

~~Tony~~

347

M835

vol.44

Community

1 we should come back at two o'clock tomorrow afternoon  
2 and we'll hold a hearing then at two o'clock, and then  
3 if necessary, we'll hold another one tomorrow night at  
4 eight o'clock.

5 So thank you for coming and  
6 we'll see you again tomorrow.

7 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED TO MARCH 10, 1976)  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30







CA1  
Z 1  
-74M211

MACKENZIE VALLEY PIPELINE INQUIRY

Government  
Publications

IN THE MATTER OF APPLICATIONS BY EACH OF

(a) CANADIAN ARCTIC GAS PIPELINE LIMITED FOR A  
RIGHT-OF-WAY THAT MIGHT BE GRANTED ACROSS  
CROWN LANDS WITHIN THE YUKON TERRITORY AND  
THE NORTHWEST TERRITORIES, and

(b) FOOTHILLS PIPE LINES LTD. FOR A RIGHT-OF-WAY  
THAT MIGHT BE GRANTED ACROSS CROWN LANDS  
WITHIN THE NORTHWEST TERRITORIES

FOR THE PURPOSE OF A PROPOSED MACKENZIE VALLEY PIPELINE

and

IN THE MATTER OF THE SOCIAL, ENVIRONMENTAL AND  
ECONOMIC IMPACT REGIONALLY OF THE CONSTRUCTION,  
OPERATION AND SUBSEQUENT ABANDONMENT OF THE ABOVE  
PROPOSED PIPELINE

(Before the Honourable Mr. Justice Berger, Commissioner)

Tuktoyaktuk, N.W.T.

March 10, 1976.

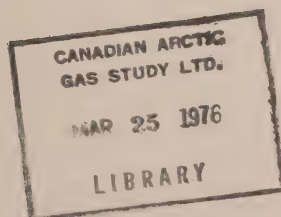
---

PROCEEDINGS AT COMMUNITY HEARING

---

Volume 45

547  
14855  
Vol. 45  
Community







1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30

APPEARANCES:

Darryl Carter, Esq. for Canadian Arctic Pipeline Limited.

John Bayly, Esq., for C.C.P.L.



I N D E XPage

## WITNESSES:

Dr. Herbert SCHWARTZ	4454, 4399
William NASOGALUAK	4355
Jimmy KOMEAK	4358
Vincent STEEN	4361, 4371, 4399
John NORBERG	4367
David ANDERSON	4374
Mrs. Ethel TOWNSEND	4380
Alphonse VOUDRACH	4389
Mark NOKSANA	4396
Mrs. Annie NOKSANA	4403
Silas KANGEGANA	4406
Mrs. Helen GRUBEN	4407
Pastor Dave FREEMAN	4409
Sam RADDI	4413

EXHIBITS:

C-261 Submission by W. Nasogaluak	4358
-----------------------------------	------

224  
17435  
101.45  
Coportunity



1 Tuktoyaktuk, N.W.T.

2 March 10, 1976.

3 (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED PURSUANT TO ADJOURNMENT)

4 THE COMMISSIONER: We'll call  
5 the hearing to order, ladies and gentlemen.

6 (MRS. ROSE ALBERT RESUMED AS INTERPRETER)

7 MR. CARTER: I'd like to  
8 deal with a matter that was raised yesterday. You  
9 asked me a couple of questions arising out of Dr.  
10 Schwartz's brief, and in that brief Dr. Schwartz has  
11 suggested that a 1973 whale study by a Paul Brodie had  
12 been suppressed by Slaney and you wondered whether  
13 Arctic Gas sponsored the Slaney studies at that time  
14 and whether we, that is whether Arctic Gas, had a copy  
15 of such a report by Brodie.

16 I got together with Mr.  
17 Horsfield of Imperial Oil this last evening and this  
18 morning and we spoke by telephone with Mr. Slaney, the  
19 president of the Slaney Company, and also Mr. Webb, who  
20 was the project manager in charge of the Slaney studies.  
21 They advised us that their 1973 mammal studies were  
22 headed up by Dr. D. Fisher. He was designated the  
23 senior mammalogist, and Dr. Fisher is a member of the  
24 Faculty of Zoology at the University of British Columbia.

25 Paul Brodie was a member of  
26 Dr. Fisher's study team, and he had been hired to con-  
27 duct studies on the whales. This was in 1973, sir, and  
28 at that time Arctic Gas was not a sponsor of the  
29 studies, and I believe from speaking with Mr. Horsfield,  
30 Imperial Oil was the only sponsor at that time.





Subsequently, Arctic Gas purchased the rights to the Slaney Reports, including the ones for 1973, and we will be calling Mr. Webb as a witness when we deal with the cross-delta route when we return to Yellowknife.

Now as I said, Paul Brodie was a member of Dr. Fisher's study team in 1973 and he produced that material as a part of that study team for Dr. Fisher. He reported to Dr. Fisher, who was the senior mammalogist, and I suppose his material might have been called a report to Dr. Fisher, but it was not a report to Imperial Oil or to Slaney itself. It was a report to Dr. Fisher, as senior mammalogist. I can confirm that neither Arctic Gas nor Imperial Oil have ever received a copy of Mr. Brodie's report.

Now in preparing the report for Imperial Oil -- that is Slaney & Company -- took Mr. Brodie's material, and along with that of their other employees on the project, incorporated it into a report for Imperial Oil, and that report is entitled:

"Environmental Impact Assessment, Immerk  
Artificial Island Construction Mackenzie  
Bay, N.W.T.,"

January 1973, and this report was filed with the Commission, I believe Mr. Ballem filed that in Inuvik.

Now Dr. Fisher confirmed to Slaney that Mr. Brodie had reviewed the report to Imperial Oil and he was satisfied that it contained all of his pertinent information. In addition, Mr. Brodie had made a number of recommendations and these



Dr. Schwartz

1 recommendations were all placed in an appendix to the  
2 report, without any change, and this appendix is  
3 attributed to Mr. Brodie. So we have Mr. Brodie's  
4 pertinent information incorporated, along with others,  
5 into the report to Imperial Oil, into the text of the  
6 report, and all of his recommendations without any  
7 changes whatsoever have been placed in an appendix,  
8 and that appendix was also filed along with the other  
9 reports by Mr. Ballem.

10 As I've said, Mr. Webb, who  
11 was the project manager, will be called by Arctic Gas  
12 in Yellowknife as part of our panel on the environmen-  
13 tal impact of the cross-delta route, and this could  
14 perhaps be explored further at that time, if necessary.

15  
16 DR. SCHWARTZ, resumed:

17 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger?

18 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes?

19 THE WITNESS: I very much  
20 appreciate that the original report of Paul Brodie  
21 was attached to the report in which his findings are  
22 included in the report prepared by Slaney Research  
23 Associates. I wonder if it would be possible --

24 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, Dr.  
25 Schwartz, Mr. Carter, who is one of the legal advisors  
26 to Arctic Gas, has given us the history of Dr. Brodie's  
27 participation in the preparation of the report that  
28 Slaney carried -- that Slaney did for Imperial Oil.  
29 We're going to be pursuing this whole question at the  
30 hearings next week in Yellowknife, and the week after,



Dr. Schwartz  
W. Nasogaluak

and I think that you can leave it to Commission counsel, who is the Inquiry's lawyer, Mr. Scott, and to Mr. Bayly, who represents COPE at those hearings, to pursue the matter if they think it should be pursued further. I think Mr. Carter has done very well to find out all of this since last night, and I appreciate it. If Commission counsel or Mr. Bayly decide that they think it's appropriate to compare Mr. Brodie's original report to Slaney with the report prepared for Imperial Oil -- that's your point -- then I think they will arrange for that to be done.

So I think that we can expect that we'll have the full co-operation of Arctic Gas and Imperial Oil in getting to the bottom of this, one way or the other.

THE WITNESS: Thank you, sir.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

THE COMMISSIONER: Here we are again then and I think that this will be our last day in Tuktoyaktuk because we agreed to go to Paulatuk tomorrow, so the people who still have something to say should be prepared to speak today. So anyone who does wish to, just step right up and --

WILLIAM NASOGALUAK, sworn:

THE INTERPRETER: William  
Nasogaluak.

THE COMMISSIONER: Go ahead,  
sir.

THE WITNESS: I am William



W. Nasogaluak

1 Nasogaluak. I live in Tuk all my life. I'm presently  
2 vice-chairman of the Town Council and I've been working  
3 for the town for five years. Every spring in Tuk we  
4 have hunted geese, as far as I can remember. The geese  
5 are excellent eating that time of year, May 15th to  
6 first week of June. We also use the down and feathers  
7 for parkas, down pants, pillows, mattresses, etc. It  
8 has meant a lot to us because it was a yearly holiday  
9 to most of us after a long, cold winter.

10 We also hunt geese when they  
11 pass through here in the fall time, but not as much as  
12 we do in the spring, because most of the geese are  
13 in poor shape, the meat and the down. Also some people  
14 go down to Shallow Bay area to hunt just before the  
15 geese go south, the last part of September. Around  
16 that time the geese are excellent eating but less hunt-  
17 ing is done at Shallow Bay area because of the  
18 distances.

19 Over the last few years since  
20 the establishment of Tununuk Imperial Oil base and  
21 Gulf Oil Swimming base, and the activities in the  
22 mouth of the Mackenzie, very small amounts of geese  
23 are taking the route that they used to, which is  
24 through the mouth of the Mackenzie and along this  
25 coast. This has meant some hardship for some people  
26 if they don't get any geese, and social problems created  
27 by exploration activities.

28 This has caused a lot of  
29 confusion and misunderstanding between people, oil  
30 companies, and the government. If people complain to





W. Nasogaluak

1 the government about these things, the government don't  
2 understand. How can they? They don't depend on these  
3 things for survival. Every complaint we make just  
4 expand the department and the government and create more  
5 confusion and the spending of the tax dollar.

6 If there is gas gathering  
7 stations established at Parsons Lake and Taglu, there  
8 will be more activities around the mouth of the Mackenzie  
9 and I am afraid by that time the geese will be taking  
10 a different route altogether. This means that we will  
11 not be depending on this renewable resource as much as  
12 we used to. This geese-hunting has been one of the  
13 treasures that nature has provided for years. Nobody  
14 will understand it except us who have been doing it over  
15 the years.

16 Gulf Oil, which has a base  
17 at Swimming Point, has been established for a few years.  
18 It has hired a very small amount of work force from  
19 Tuk, and I believe that most of their native workers  
20 come from Coppermine area. These bases for oil companies  
21 that are established in the mouth of the Mackenzie have  
22 had a positive effect on migration of geese which only  
23 the native hunter would know.

24 I am using this positive effect  
25 noticeable by people that live and hunt in Tuk as an  
26 example. Even if we tell our government these things  
27 that are going on, we are shrugged off as just another  
28 complaint from us. How are we going to depend on the  
29 department if they don't understand or believe that these  
30 things are happening to us?



W. Nasogaluak  
J. Komeak

I want to say that with the future exploration I know that you will be making recommendations, but I'd like to make the recommendations here myself too. Unless we, the people, who depend on these renewable resources have complete control, there should not be any pipeline and offshore drilling.

I would like to make the following recommendations:

. There be a panel of seven people to decide about offshore drilling and pipeline, elected by the community that is going to be affected.

. Compensation for the loss of renewable resources that are lost on account of exploration activities and the pipeline, for all people that depend on these animals. This to be handled by the seven people that are elected. Elected people would come from Aklavik, Inuvik, Tuktoyaktuk, Sachs Harbour, Paulatuk, Holman Island, and North Star Harbour.

Thank you.

THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you very much, Mr. Nasogaluak. We'll mark this as an exhibit.

(SUBMISSION BY W. NASOGALUAK MARKED EXHIBIT  
C-261)

(WITNESS ASIDE)

JIMMY KOMEAK, sworn:

THE WITNESS: I am Jimmy Komeak, born at Cambridge Bay in 1928, in Victoria Island, N.W.T.



J. Komeak

1 I'm going to tell you a  
2 picture of myself <sup>and</sup> mostly about the Tuk area.

3 After I finished school at  
4 Aklavik for three years, I went back home one year,  
5 and that's when I was 15 years old. I never went to  
6 get home to my parents, and I started to work for the  
7 R.C.M.P. there. There were few people that speak  
8 English at the time in 1941, and I just have to work  
9 for them guiding them for one year.

10 By next summer I go right  
11 back to Western Arctic, that was 1942, and I started  
12 to work for reindeer herd that time as Northern Affairs,  
13 NANNR, and I work with them for 13 years. That's how  
14 I learned the Tuk area and Western Arctic, part in  
15 the delta area, and I learned this, most of the Tuk  
16 area by foot, by skis, by boat, by dog team. Most of  
17 my life those was with my own power, and later on just  
18 a few years on the skidoos, for the last few years.  
19 That's how I learned this area.

20 Not very many settlements  
21 like this area, like in Tuk itself. I think this is  
22 a rich area, that's what I thought, because I been  
23 through right along the Arctic coast in Canada, part  
24 of it in Alaska, Hudson's Bay site, I been to all  
25 the settlements all along the Dew Line sites, and  
26 I know what's going on quite a bit. That's what I  
27 learned from here and there.

28 I'm going to tell you about  
29 a picture of Richardson Island itself, that's where  
30 most of my spending years I've been to, by walking,





J. Komeak

1 by skis, by dog team, it was a hard life that time but  
2 it's happy life. I tell you this is the best country  
3 I ever saw. When you want to get some meat, some kind  
4 of animal, different kind of animal, you could get it,  
5 you could name it. If you want to get some moose meat,  
6 rabbits, anything you could think of, you could get it  
7 a little bit here and there, especially the Fish Lakes  
8 in the Richardson Island. That Richardson Island is  
9 not very big, about 60 miles long and 30 miles wide,  
10 and I pretty know every lake without a map, because it's  
11 in my mind, every hill I've been walking through on that  
12 island for eight years. Part of it from Inuvik and  
13 down and across the Husky Lakes, Eskimo Lake, that's  
14 where we spend the summer and winter, the winter we  
15 move back to inland. At summertime we keep the herd  
16 at Richardson Island, that's how we learn the country,  
17 and that's where the wild animal is.

18 I think it's just like you  
19 have to go out from your door, from your house and you  
20 name it, you go and get it. Not very many settlements  
21 along the Arctic coast are like this place, like in  
22 the delta, and some places in the Arctic coast you  
23 just get very few seal, maybe fish at the most, and  
24 when you want to get some caribou meat you have to go  
25 a long way to get it; and here you just have to, if  
26 you want it, maybe the caribou is quite a ways but you  
27 always get it on certain months.

28 I think the way I feel  
29 we had to leave this area, the way it is and if it is  
30 going to destroy, if we let it go too quick, we're



J. Komeak  
V. Steer

1 not going to see the same country again in the near  
2 future.

3 I was talking to an old man  
4 at Edmonton, I forget about from the south from here.  
5 I been into the Indian Village, quite a few villages  
6 from here on south and some cities, like a little  
7 bit here and there. That's how I make a living and  
8 I'm not really expert on hunting and trapping, but  
9 I make a part-time trapping and hunting. That's most  
10 of my life, and I'm working for wages. Not very much  
11 money, but that's what I start out with and I think  
12 the Tuk area is the best place in the delta area.

13 I been working for the R.C.M.P.  
14 at Aklavik for one year and I learned a little bit  
15 about the delta area because I been travelling through  
16 with a dog team too, and that's how I learn about it.  
17 I know everything along the Arctic coast and what they  
18 eat. That's how I learned my life. I think that Tuk  
19 and this Western Arctic, you name it, you get it.

20 I think that's about all.  
21 I been passing through since I was 15 years old to now.  
22 Thank you.

23 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
24 Mr. Komeak.

25 (WITNESS ASIDE)

26  
27 VINCENT STEEN, resumed:

28 THE INTERPRETER: This is Vincent  
29 Steen.  
30



V. Steen

1 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger,  
2 before I go any further I would like to introduce  
3 myself a little better than I've been doing. I re-  
4 present COPE and I will be speaking for COPE right now.

5 THE COMMISSIONER: Excuse me,  
6 Mr. Steen, I'm having a little trouble hearing you, and  
7 maybe some of these people are too. I guess your  
8 voice is kind of low. Is that microphone close  
9 enough to you? Can you people hear at the back?

10 THE WITNESS: I would like  
11 to introduce myself a little better. I represent COPE.  
12 However, I'm a trapper, I make my living in the winter  
13 trapping, and I operate a boat in the summer. I've  
14 spent -- I'm 35 years old and I've spent about roughly  
15 most of my adult summers and winters on the sea. I  
16 say this because I would like to make some comments  
17 and point some things out concerning Gulf and Dome's  
18 and Imperial's answers last night.

19 First of all, concerning the  
20 oil blowout and the spreading of the oil over the  
21 ocean and how they say they're going to control it,  
22 I would like to be able to walk up to your map and  
23 if I may, speak from there.

24 THE COMMISSIONER: Sure.  
25 Go ahead.

26 THE WITNESS: First I would  
27 like to point out that there are two what you might  
28 call ice fields, it's probably a well-known fact,  
29 the polar ice that doesn't come all the way into this  
30 bay, and the year-old ice that forms every year



V. Steen

and generally melts, and I would like to show that where this proposed 40-mile drill well will be, this drill ship will be out forty miles, it's roughly right -- well, it would be in year-old ice, there would be no polar ice except a few odd pieces in that area.

Now, if the blowout did occur which is, they say, not much of a chance, but if the pipeline cracked that they talk about, then either one would have an oil spill. Now, what I would like to show is that in this area here if they were not drilling it would stand to reason -- I mean if they were drilling it would stand to reason that there were open water. If they had an oil spill in the summer, well I can't -- there is no point for me to show that if the boom, if the experience they had with booms and they had the same thing down south, then there's no point to show that oversize waves would just splash the oil all over, the boom won't hold the oil. More than likely they found this out down south.

But what I would like to point out is that if they had the oil blowout just at freezeup when the ship couldn't get there to drill a relief well, or if the pipe cracked anytime in the winter, this area here and the area for about 50 miles or 60 miles until you reach the polar ice, could be more than that if the polar ice is far out, that area the ice -- the ocean never completely freezes solid. There is always open water or open leads all winter. Sometimes from my experience there will be open water right from west of Herschel Island right to maybe even east





V. Steen

1 of Banks Island, from October, oh about the middle  
2 of October till about January 1st there could be a  
3 lead of open water right across.

4 Now they say that if the  
5 oil is floating and they can see it, they will burn  
6 it. Now my conclusions or my experience with oil is  
7 that if it is cold it doesn't spread very good, like  
8 that oil is going to be coming up in freezing tempera-  
9 ture water and when it gets to the surface it would  
10 be fairly thick, and would take quite a while to  
11 spread over this open water. However, if you burned  
12 it and warmed it up, I would assume that it would  
13 spread that much faster. As it's warmer it will  
14 spread out thinner.

15 Now, the reason this has  
16 open water is because of the currents and the wind  
17 steady either from one direction or from the other.  
18 Either from east or west, south, any kind of wind  
19 out there would open that ocean. All you have really  
20 is a foot and a half of ice up till about -- well,  
21 actually that ocean will freeze fairly fast if it  
22 could just stay solid. I mean the current wouldn't  
23 open it up again. But it doesn't get a chance to do  
24 that. There is so much current and so much wind that  
25 as the ice freezes it just pushes steady and piling  
26 up, piling up. If for instance, you get a calm period  
27 of a week, that ice might reach a foot and a half  
28 thick. But the next good wind either east or west or  
29 south, would just pile that ice up wherever it sent  
30 it, wherever it -- till it couldn't push it any more.



V. Steen

1                   Now what I am saying is that  
2 if this oil here, for instance, is coming to the  
3 surface steady, it cannot be controlled, it won't  
4 shut itself off. The skin that forms on the water,  
5 because you have maybe an air temperature of 25 below  
6 in November, plus a wind chill which might bring it  
7 down to about 60 below, now you have a steady skin  
8 on top of the water, sort of a slush, and if this  
9 doesn't succeed in putting out the fire, it would  
10 surely succeed in picking up all that oil and bringing  
11 it with it wherever the wind was going at that time.

12                   Now Mr. Hnatiuk says that  
13 the oil that is contained in the ice will be trapped.  
14 I would question that, or else he's -- because <sup>from</sup> /what  
15 I have said here and pointed out it would stand to  
16 reason that by the time spring came, you would have  
17 oil right from east of Banks Island to west of  
18 Herschel Island, wherever that ice felt like to take  
19 that oil, and it would not be in big enough quantities  
20 in any chunk that would actually be worthwhile marking  
21 unless he marked the whole ocean.

22                   As far as drilling -- I mean  
23 digging the trench on these pipes, like I said last  
24 night he says ten feet in 40 feet of water, and he  
25 also says that the feasibility study for a pipeline  
26 has been done in Europe or by a company in Europe.  
27 Now I just can't understand how they're going to do  
28 it in Europe when there is no permafrost to worry about  
29 on the bottom of that ocean in Europe, and we have  
30 permafrost. I know from my experience, and I would



V. Steen

1 like to call also on Mr. Norberg to show you roughly  
2 the movement of heavy ice, as he has got more experience  
3 in that than I have.

4 The other thing that I would  
5 like to point out is that if Mr. Hnatiuk, like he  
6 says, can mark it with a beacon right now on the ice,  
7 studying ice movement, I would have to say from my  
8 experience that that ice that that beacon is on  
9 couldn't possibly have been a chunk of ice that could  
10 have held oil, if there had been an oil spill, because  
11 to have a beacon on that ice, like I pointed out  
12 yesterday, the ice would have to be heavy ice to  
13 hold a beacon, so that the other ice doesn't smash  
14 it up.

15 Now if you're going to use a  
16 piece of heavy ice to put your beacon on, and he is  
17 studying that movement of that one piece of ice right  
18 now, that's not necessarily meaning in my opinion any-  
19 way that that piece of ice is going to do that again  
20 next year. It is not the type of ice that could  
21 hold oil, as it is too heavy.

22 I would call on John Norberg,  
23 now, if you don't mind, and point out the movement of  
24 the heavy ice.

25 (WITNESS ASIDE)

26 THE COMMISSIONER: I think we'll  
27 take a five-minute break. Then you can translate that  
28 and we'll hear from Mr. Norberg.

29 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 4 P.M.)

30 (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED AT 4:05 P.M.)





J. Norberg

1 THE COMMISSIONER: Come to  
2 order, ladies and gentlemen, and our interpreter can  
3 interpret what Mr. Steen said and then we'll hear  
4 from Mr. Norberg.

5 (INTERPRETER TRANSLATES)

6 JOHN NORBERG, resumed:

7 THE WITNESS: Last night I  
8 was at the table here but after listening to all the  
9 speakers at the microphone, I'll just make a short  
10 resume.

11 When I first come in the  
12 country in 1925 I distinctly remember coming to Tuk  
13 with my dad and my sister. We got caught in a storm  
14 out here, we had to head for the harbour, and that  
15 time there was only one little log building up on the  
16 hill here, there was not a soul even in it. Since  
17 then we went to Coppermine, the same way, there wasn't  
18 a soul, there wasn't a building there either. That  
19 was the same year -- next year.

20 Well, after that I've been  
21 sailing the ocean since, I've got a captain's ticket,  
22 I'm also a J.P. for the last 14 years, that's why I  
23 wouldn't touch the Bible last night. The other ones  
24 have touched it instead of me.

25 Anyway, like I said, I've been  
26 sailing the Arctic Ocean. I've seen ice up here right  
27 from here to Coppermine and east of that where a sea-  
28 gull couldn't even have room to land, and that's polar  
29 ice, real heavy polar ice, and I want to show you on  
30 the map the drift of the ice we've encountered in the



J.Norberg

1 last 50 years. As we all know, like Mr. Steen  
2 said, with the polar pack the average thickness --  
3 anyway, I know, I've seen ice grounded out here in  
4 ten fathoms of water and that's 60 feet of water,  
5 over here, and we all know too about 1/8th -- 8/8ths of  
6 ice is underneath underwater, and 1/8th above water.

7 Anyway you're talking about  
8 oil spills and the drift of the ice. One year a good  
9 ship, the "Lady of Lords", I believe Father Lemeur,  
10 he was around that time but he wasn't on it. Just  
11 to show you the drift of the ice, the maps are too  
12 small here, they left Paulatuk, got out on the ice,  
13 and they drifted 400 miles, 7 miles off Coppermine  
14 River, stuck on a chunk of ice with 40 tons of freight  
15 on. They couldn't move, they couldn't move until the  
16 good old Hudson's Bay ship reached them through and  
17 put a rope on them and yanked them off, load and  
18 all. So that explains how the ice can go through, in  
19 the summer, the drift.

20 Another time I was on a ship,  
21 first mate on the "Banksland" over here now, there  
22 was the "Banksland", two L.S.T.s, the "Pinabog" and  
23 the "Icebreaker". Off Cape Parry we got caught in the  
24 ice coming behind us. 27 days we drifted through there,  
25 drifted 350 miles to Dolphin and Union Straits way  
26 up here. So you see --

27 THE COMMISSIONER: What time of  
28 year?

29 A In the summertime, July  
30 and August.



J. Norberg

1 MRS. ALBERT: What year?

2 A So you see <sup>if</sup> you got a  
3 big oil spill you're not only going to be concerned  
4 about around here, you're going to be concerned 300  
5 miles away, and who in the heck is going to catch  
6 all that oil 300 miles away in the ice?

7 So that's wind and current.  
8 Even when there's no wind, there's no wind, that  
9 current rolls in, rolls in, and you're just drifting  
10 with it, you can't go, you can't do nothing with it.  
11 That's only one-year old ice. Just think what you're  
12 going to do when you get up in that big stuff.

13 One year, too, we come out  
14 of Tuk, three freighters, left 20th of July. We finally  
15 got east 27th of October, a whole summer just fighting  
16 that ice. But we couldn't get in if we tried from  
17 Baillie Island, Pearce Point, we have to come back  
18 to harbour, so that's the drifts and it depends on  
19 the drift, too; sometimes all that ice, that bad  
20 ice here, real bad ice here by fall time it's all  
21 drifted. Once the ice gets moving nothing will stop  
22 it, even it goes right against the ice, you could  
23 just see it bucking the ice and the whole field move,  
24 nothing will stop it. That's why you get that  
25 northern pack, that heavy ice coming down.

26 These last few years we've  
27 had trouble with the ice, and that's only one-year  
28 old ice. Like Mr. Steen was saying, it freezes up,  
29 piles up, freezes up, piles up, pretty soon it's  
30 30 feet thick, four feet ice all piled up together.



J. Norberg

Westerly winds do that because the pack comes down, the pack comes down and hits the year-old ice and just smashes it up, piles it up. Same as you're talking about digging trenches in 40 feet of water. The depth of your trench further out, you'll have to dig it deeper, which they've already said, because these big chunks of ice, a lot of them's over 30 feet thick. I mean 80 feet thick pretty near, and they'd goudge that think up. But they can't come into shallower water, so therefore I guess the trench, you wouldn't have so much trouble in the shallower water here.

Well, that's a long ways out for 80 feet of water. But in here past Baillie, all this is shallow anyway if it use the Mackenzie River, but up here you get any depth of water, Cape Parry you lay right alongside the shore, there's 40-50 feet of water right on the shore.

So you see my point of view is I don't know nothing about the land, you've got a lot of experts here, and the drifts that can happen in the fall, and a major oil spill, like I said you don't have to worry here, you have to worry about Holman, Coppermine, all the way through, and there's no possible way you're going to catch that oil and burn it up.

Thanks very much. That's all.

THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,

Mr. Norberg.

(WITNESS ASIDE)





V. Steen

VINCENT STEEN, resumed:

THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, I would like now to show how the seals and the polar bears and the whales, as we know them, their movements, compare to the -- well, I want to show how they move in that area, that same area that's proposed for this oil rig drill.

First of all I will point at whales here, both the bowhead whales and white whales -- the movement of the bowheads as we know them, the earliest that I've know that they come is not necessarily the earliest they do come. People have seen them earlier than I've actually seen them. I've seen bowheads only in the summer around Herschel Island at Cape Point, not far off the beach, maybe roughly two or three miles off of Cape Point, and in a straight line to Herschel Island. But this does not necessarily mean that's when the bowhead whales come.

I'm just stating where I've seen them. I've seen bowhead whales over on -- I've seen bowhead whales three miles off of Toker Point, which would be about here, and I've seen bowhead whales at Atkinson Point, or roughly five miles off Atkinson Point in August, and I've seen bowhead whales at Cape Dalhousie in August and September. I've seen bowheads off of between Cape Dalhousie and Baillie Island also in August and September. But I know that people have seen bowhead whales in the open water, in the leads in the spring.

As far as the beluga whales, the white whales, the people say that they come -- they've



## V. Steen

seen them at Baillie Island in the open water, they've seen them migrating west, in other words they're coming west in May. We don't know where they come from, though. We've seen them at Herschel Island in the open leads off of Shingle Point, and off of Cape Point coming east into the Shallow Bay. Whether these are the same whales or not, I don't know. But that is where we've seen them and the time of the year that we've seen them.

They use the leads, the open leads to come through. The seals, as we know them, we don't generally hunt like they do in the Eastern Arctic, they hunt seals by the holes. They wait by the hole until they get the seal. We usually hunt seal in the water, in the summer not too far off of shore, maybe up to ten miles offshore out of Tuk anyway.

Up to Warren Point, the further you go east, of course you get clearer water and the whales -- the seals come in. There is the odd few in the muddy water off of Tuk. Once you pass Warren Point, the water clears up and then you can find seals in the summertime anywhere from the beach out as far as you'll go; but as you go farther out they get thicker and thicker, there's more and more of them.

When we hunt in the winter we follow the shore, the landlocked ice. As the water moves out we usually go to the edge of the water and hunt seals from the edge of the ice flow out there to the water there. The seals seem to move out as the water -- as the ice freezes, they move out until there



V. Steen

1 is only the cracks, the leads, and they're always there,  
2 that's where the seals will be; if there is no leads  
3 then they're all in the holes. They have holes right  
4 in the edge of the open water even.

5 This open water that I am  
6 talking about by February is generally 40 to 60  
7 miles out of Tuk and it's generally between 20 and 30  
8 miles out of Atkinson Point. It would be in this area  
9 here that there is usually open water every year, or  
10 open leads.

11 THE COMMISSIONER: By what time  
12 of year?

13 A By this time of the year  
14 there's usually open water by March or April, there's  
15 usually open water in that area, leads, if not the  
16 whole ocean. If the whole ocean is not open, there's  
17 always leads.

18 The polar bear follow the  
19 seals, that is their food so they live on the edge  
20 of the leads or drifting with the ice, hunting in  
21 the ice, and if there is no seals, then there will be  
22 no polar bear. I don't think I have to point out, but  
23 I will, that if this oil is here, and if the seals  
24 and the whales and the polar bears are using these  
25 areas, they are going to be the first to feel the  
26 effects of the oil. They have no way of protecting  
27 themselves or cleaning themselves of this oil.

28 Mr. Berger, before I close,  
29 I would like to point out in all fairness that there  
are roughly one-third of Tuk population work for --





V. Steen  
D. Anderson

1 have permanent jobs, either for the oil companies or  
2 for the government, or for themselves. One-third  
3 might work seasonally, trap all winter and work in  
4 the summer on the ships or on the land loading and  
5 unloading ships, construction work; and the other  
6 third of the people live completely off of the land.

7 I would say that all of them  
8 at one time or another either on their weekends or  
9 on the off-seasons of the oil companies, they use the  
10 land, they live off, they hunt seal or they hunt  
11 whale, or they hunt polar bear, or they hunt birds  
12 and caribou; at some time or other, all of them use  
13 the land.

14 That is all I have to say,  
15 Mr. Berger. Thank you.

16 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
17 Mr. Steen. Thank you, Mr. Norberg. I certainly  
18 appreciate your discussion of the movement of the ice  
19 and the currents in relation to the sea mammals.

20 (WITNESS ASIDE)

21  
22 THE COMMISSIONER: We still  
23 have some more time, if anyone else wishes to speak  
24 they should come up. Sit down, please, sir.

25  
26 DAVID ANDERSON, sworn:

27 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger,  
28 ladies and gentlemen, I wish to introduce myself and  
29 put forward thoughts and ideas for consideration.

30 My name is David Anderson and



D. Anderson

1 I have been a resident of Tuktoyaktuk since 1963. I  
2 have a wife, Sarah, who was born at Baillie Island,  
3 and four children, three of whom were born in Tuk.  
4 Since 1964 I have been in business in Tuk, and every-  
5 thing my wife and I have made working at other jobs  
6 has gone into the business to make it what we have  
7 today. Because of this and the future we seek for  
8 ourselves<sup>and</sup> for our children, we feel we have a very  
9 high stake in the future of Tuktoyaktuk and Canada's  
10 north.

11 I seek for an identity the  
12 same as any other person, be he Indian, Eskimo, or  
13 Metis. The only thing is that in seeking my identity  
14 it becomes one for my wife and our children.

15 In establishing myself  
16 within the north, I sought the identify of being a  
17 northerner. This identity was growing, as was the  
18 whole of the north, a truly integrated identity cover-  
19 ing a great many cultures and types of people in  
20 many communities.

21 It is this that I see being  
22 split apart during this trying time of pro this and  
23 pro that, and it is at this time I will now go back  
24 to 1961 and work up so I can show why I feel the  
25 way I do.

26 Although Tuk really started  
27 toward development in 1935 when the Hudson's Bay  
28 Transportation decided it was the only suitable  
29 harbour within range of the Mackenzie River barge  
30 traffic, it was not until 1955-56 and the building of



D. Anderson

the Dew Line started a semi-wage economy, because of the Dew Line it brought with it northern transportation for a Crown corporation who were supplying the Dew Line, The expansion of northern transportation and the Dew Line continued until 1961 when the decline started on the Dew Line, and it was decided to shut down every second site, whereas they were called "eye sites" by 1963.

It was at this time that the Indian Affairs decided to broaden its base of government within the north. Tuk came into expansion in 1961, a new nursing station; 1962, a Community Hall; 1963, a new school, a new Bay, a new oil tank, and expanded administration.

1964 saw N.T. cut back on its shipping operation in the Arctic due to the decreased Dew Line, and Hudson's Bay Transport was bought out by N.T. I want to just insert a note here, that when the Hudson's Bay Transport worked the north, they supplied more jobs to native northerners than N.T. does 15 years later.

The spring of 1965 saw the first gravity crews, and the fall saw the first seismic crews; and mini boom had come to Tuk.

The spring of 1966 and the fall of 1966 saw the boom continue. The late fall of 1966 saw the Carter Report and the shutdown of oil exploration over taxation. That winter of '66-67 saw no employment and low fur prices, and an extremely hard winter for everyone. Changes came,



D. Anderson

1        though, and that year saw telephones in houses when  
2        they did not as yet have electricity. It was not  
3        until the following year that government houses for  
4        the people were first built in Tuk, and electricity  
5        made available to the native segment of the town.  
6        This in 1967.

7                                Also we saw the return of  
8        exploration, this time, though, exploration came  
9        in a big way and camps were segregated from communi-  
10       ties. But Tuk had changed that winter. People with  
11       more time had become more politically aware and an  
12                                      on political development  
12       Advisory Committee/had formed, an all-native community-  
13       elected committee which would become the Hamlet Council  
14       of Tuk, bringing Tuk into and making it the first  
15       hamlet in the Northwest Territories.

16                               This brings us into the  
17       first period of expanded exploration and development  
18       area we've worked into today in our pros and cons.  
19       In fact Tuk is very important because of the very  
20       existence of the harbour that the Tuk Council have  
21       worked toward development since they took over their  
22       political and economic community problems, and does  
23       not fit into the scheme of "No development without  
24       land claims."

25                               I would remind everybody at  
26       this point I talk only for myself and my family, and  
27       not as the council, which I'm on.

28                               The council, though, is on  
29       record as favoring land claims before a pipeline is  
30       built. I feel and know that to be realistic and





D. Anderson

1 maintain control over local development, one cannot  
2 ignore what is happening and must take full advantage  
3 of what cannot wait. People must be able to support,  
4 themselves to maintain and have pride in community,  
5 and being. This right should not be ignored and it  
6 is to this right and the future that I address the  
7 following comment.

8 I, over the past ten years,  
9 have made many trips to Alaska prior to Prudhoe Bay,  
10 after Prudhoe Bay, prior to the pipeline and during  
11 the pipeline. I've seen many things, but like Canada,  
12 I saw and see little pride, particularly within the  
13 communities where the government owns the majority of  
14 everyone's house. This has not changed and people,  
15 although they have land claims, do not own their own  
16 house and I'm not talking about not receiving the land  
17 titles to the large tracts of land, I am talking about  
18 the family dwelling which no one made provision for.  
19 No one made provision for the people living within them  
20 to become a home-owner.

21 To clarify this I will go back  
22 to my arrival in Tuk and before I was a resident. I  
23 used to play ball between the homes, and I've underlined  
24 "homes" where the school now sits. Some will tell you  
25 they were just tent frames. I tell you they were  
26 homes, homes where I was welcomed, as were the log  
27 houses the government talked people into leaving for  
28 the match boxes they call houses; and as the government  
29 built these houses from 1968 till now, they supplied  
all the services one could need, all the services



D. Anderson

except pride of ownership, pride of community.

They started with lousy match boxes and worked up each year to what we have this year; but with every year/<sup>of</sup>new houses, they created splits within the community over who would get the new houses. Still no pride. As a matter of fact, loss of pride as they began paying people to rake the town, a simple thing which people used to do with loving care when they lived in tent homes and log homes.

A simple problem this, and unrelated to the pipeline?

No, not at all.

The pipeline and land claims is the same problem magnified a thousand times. Who is going to own what land? Where is the boundary to be between Eskimo, Indian, Metis, white? Who says who is who? Who speaks what language? Who says what language will be spoken and where? Until a year ago I was involved in many political and non-political battles and many arguments and a few fights. But until land claims came along, I or my family never suffered from prejudice, as we often do now. So my plea is for the future. A common goal, rights as Canadians, people unified toward a strong north, a common language, home ownership, real community where no one is afraid to walk down the street or leave his door unlocked. Thank you.

THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you very much, Mr. Anderson.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

THE COMMISSIONER: Well, we still have time this afternoon to hear from one or



1 two more people, if anyone would like to say anything.

2  
3 MRS. ETHEL TOWNSEND, sworn:

4 THE WITNESS: I'm wondering,  
5 since I am not from the Community of Tuk and I'm bilin-  
6 gual, I am fluent in Slavey, if it would be possible  
7 for me to speak in Slavey first? I realize it's out  
8 of context because of the people here, they speak  
9 Eskimo, but I did not present myself in my own home  
10 community and I want to take this opportunity to do so.

11 THE COMMISSIONER: All right.

12 What is your home?

13 THE WITNESS: Slavey, Fort

14 Norman.

15 THE COMMISSIONER: Fort Norman?

16 A M-hm.

17 Q Well, I think that's

18 all right.

19 A I could give a speech  
20 in Slavey, make my presentation in Slavey and then I  
21 could translate it into English. It won't be word for  
22 word because I have not written down a speech as such.  
23 I have my notes but that's it.

24 Q O.K., sure, that's fine.  
25 Maybe you could just give us your name first.

26 A O.K., I was just going  
27 to do that. My name is Ethel Townsend and I was born  
28 in Fort Norman. I am 25 years old and I teach in the  
29 school here in Tuktoyaktuk.

30 Q Oh, you're a teacher here





Mrs. E. Townsend

1 in Tuk?

2 A Yes, I am.

3 (SPEAKS IN SLAVEY)  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30



Mrs. F. Townsend

Okay, that was my message was more or less to my people down home and I would just sort of like to go over what I said and I have to first of all make a point about the language barrier. This whole pipeline Berger Inquiry just simply is not easily integrated and doesn't really fit into the language, my Slavey language.

I think we have -- like the word for "pipeline" has had to be invented recently in the last couple of years because -- and just anecdotedly I think I would say that perhaps my ancestors did not intend for a pipeline. Perhaps there is no language for it, perhaps that is the reason. I don't know but it is just sort of a remark I would like to make. It is extremely difficult to speak in Slavey and relate to the whole pipeline and all the human factors and relationships.

Anyways I feel that I am a fairly educated person and I was educated in the north. I have been to many many communities in the north. I didn't start school until 1959 when they opened Grollier Hall. I have lived on the land. I can't say the "good old days" because it wasn't that easily living with my parents off the land and off the land was living in Franklin. We were very backwards. In 1962 when we moved to Franklin from Fort Norman, I never would have thought that there would be such a dramatic change but the change will be nothing comparable to what will happen if a pipeline will go through.

This is why I feel



Mrs. E. Townsend

there is a great need for informing the people. I feel that the people are not informed enough. I feel that when the Inquiry comes into a community, people more or less come and listen and then when they find out what it is all about, they will speak. It takes a lot of time because there is a barrier there.

I myself was very uninformed about exactly the workings of the Berger Inquiry, even a simple thing like how much did it cost the government for the whole Inquiry, you know. These are things that I had to find out myself. Information from the oil companies. I am not well versed and chaptered on environmental impact and that sort of thing. I am just not, but I have a feeling because I was born in the north, I know how the people feel and my travels have taught me a lot.

I know down south when I lived in Edmonton for instance, there was a lot of sensationalism about the pipeline. There was a stirring in the north that was happening before the Berger Inquiry even happened. In fact I remember the excitement over a judge that was picked to head the Berger Inquiry.

It is very different being up here and speaking and seeing things from down there. It is very very different. Now, I feel that there will be a pipeline and yet something inside me -- the tie that binds my language, the life that I have lived says "Please no, no, we do not want it!" Perhaps this is because I have such a reverence for the older



1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
0  
1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
0  
1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
0

8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30

22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30





Mrs. E. Townsend

People are beginning for the first time in the north -- I remember years back when people used to come into the community, nobody even questioned who they were or what they should be accountable for or anything. We just accepted things as they were because we knew nothing else and there were a few that protested. These were the people that were not even educated and yet had such an understanding for the goings on of how people work and what they do.

They were the people that protested and were pushed back into the dark and never heard from again, or were called trouble makers, whatever. But I think the younger people -- I cannot lament on the past because the younger people have the future. I have a future and I feel my stake in this is just as big as anybody else's.

I think there is room for all kinds of people in the north and I pay tribute to the people that have come from the south and have given me the opportunity and the education to learn and to be able to sit here today and to say what I have to.

I think it is really a great thing that they did. How many they were I don't know. NOT everybody that came, came with great gifts like that but there were a few that have come up and that have helped us, and I am sure with any degree of rationality we as the northern native born people are grateful. But it is time that we take things into our hands and are able to control what we want in the north.



Mrs. F. Townsend

1 I think that we need to  
2 train people and my main concern is we do not have  
3 enough time. We need more time to train our people.  
4 I think people that come from the south to live here  
5 have to be accountable -- their goals have to be more  
6 defined. So that if progress is made, it can be visible.  
7 We can say "there is progress." They have to be  
8 accountable for what they are doing here.

9 In the same way I feel  
10 we northerners who are holding responsible positions  
11 which affect the people, our goals have to be defined  
12 too. Not only that, we should have some say in what  
13 happens and things are beginning to happen.

14 People are beginning to  
15 fill positions that are important, not only in  
16 education. I am not taking an educational stance on  
17 this. I am speaking from many many different -- in  
18 different areas, and I think just as an example, there  
19 are many more people on the Territorial Council that  
20 are native than there used to be. But the one thing  
21 that I wondered about and that I asked ~~was~~ aside from  
22 the translators, the native translators on the Berger  
23 Inquiry, I don't see one single native on the whole  
24 Inquiry as to the ins and outs of the Inquiry as far  
25 as public relations and that is a question I have for  
26 you. I was wondering if you could answer it and I was  
27 told part of the reason for this is that C.O.P.E. and  
28 the Native Brotherhood are integrated into the workings  
29 as far as their inquiries and collecting data and that  
30 is concerned.



Mrs. E. Townsend

1 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, I should  
2 say that I thought about that when we started the  
3 Inquiry, and I felt that the best thing would be for the  
4 native people who were able to act as advisors and in  
5 other positions to work with the Indian Brotherhood of  
6 the Northwest Territories, with C.O.P.E., with I.T.C.  
7 and with the Metis Association and the Council of  
8 Yukon Indians. All of those were funded by the Inquiry  
9 so that they could go out and get legal advice and  
10 experts to help them because I wanted them to participate  
11 in the Inquiry on an equal footing with the pipeline  
12 companies and the oil and gas industry.

13 I felt at the time that  
14 it would be better if the native people, and you have  
15 made the point that there aren't that many of them  
16 who are educated, that those who were educated would be  
17 able to work with their own organizations, make their  
18 own presentations to the Inquiry and that's the reason  
19 for that and I think that's all I can say about it.

20 THE WITNESS: M-hm. Well, this  
21 just goes to prove that timing -- the timing is bad.  
22 We do not even have our own expertise -- I'm not saying  
23 that we will ever will. We do not even have our own  
24 expertise to advise the native organizations, you know.  
25 Things are beginning/ <sup>to happen</sup> and it is really really hard for  
26 me to accept the fact that why rush, you know. The  
27 people are finally getting to realize --

28 THE COMMISSIONER: I am not  
29 rushing.  
30





Mrs. E. Townsend

1 THE WITNESS: Yes, I know, but  
2 other people are very anxious, you know, and it is  
3 a very sad thing and another -- I think an advantage  
4 of the pipeline would be the job creation. It will  
5 be at its highest peak but to what extent will we  
6 participate? The adaptability of our people will be  
7 stretched to its limits and there is a breaking point.

8 The whole working ethic  
9 of the pipeline will be new to most of the people. It  
10 will be a new thing that they will -- if they are in  
11 a responsible position -- I am not saying they are not  
12 responsible and can't hold their own but it's a whole  
13 new different thing. And people will have to adapt and  
14 the northern people as you know have been the greatest  
15 people for adapting. They have had to. They have  
16 had no choice but to adapt in many different circum-  
17 stances. I think that whatever happens if the pipeline  
18 goes through and if it doesn't I am an eager participant  
19 and my heart goes with the northern people -- the people  
20 that are born here. I intend to stay in the north for  
21 the rest of my life and I share the same feelings as  
22 they do and I just hope that it all turns out for the  
23 best either way. That is all I have to say.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

24 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
25 very much. I'm glad you decided to speak here. Well,  
26 we can hear you, sir, before supper if you like or we'll  
27 come back at eight<sup>o'clock</sup> and you can speak then. Excuse me,  
28 is Mr. Bayly here? Do you think that there are many  
29 others who wish to speak, Mr. Bayly?

30 MR. BAYLY: I expect it is



A. Voudrach

1     worth coming back at 8:00, sir. There are a lot of  
2     people working who may want to make their presentation  
3     this evening.

4                     THE COMMISSIONER: Is it  
5                                 o'clock,  
6     all right if we come back at eight/ sir and we can hear  
7     you at that time.

8                     MR. VOUDRACH: I have got to  
9     think it over anyway.

10                    THE COMMISSIONER: Okay, we  
11     will all think about it and be back here at 8:00.

12     (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 5:25 P.M.)

13     (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED AT 8:30 P.M.)

14                    THE COMMISSIONER: Ladies and  
15     gentlemen, we will come to order then and invite those  
16     of you who wish to speak to do so this evening.

17                    ALPHONSE VOUDRACH, sworn:

18                    THE WITNESS: Well, sir, the  
19     last time you hear from the lady here who was speaking  
20     here before supper, she took pretty well everything from  
21     my mouth there, I guess. So I got to fill it in, I  
22     guess. Well, originally I am from Norman Wells. My  
23     mother is from Norman Wells and my dad is from Arctic  
24     Red River. I was born up here living amongst the Eskimos  
25     so I can't concern myself in Eskimo or Indian. I just  
26     get caught in between. I hope you guys excuse me for  
27     that. Since then I was living on the land. I was  
28     living on the land all these years. I never been to  
29     school. I can talk English. I can understand Loucheux,  
30     a little bit of Slavey, broken Slavey, and for English  
31     I think I pretty well can talk anything you want in



A. Voudrach

1 that.

2 My name is Alphonse  
3 Voudrach. I am 47 years old. I was born in the land  
4 and brought in the inland with my dad. I was brought  
5 up pretty tough, for these young peoples right now.

6 Somehow I drift down in  
7 the Arctic there. In 1940, that was my first year in  
8 Tuk -- in 1940 when I was 11 years or 12 years old, I  
9 guess.

10 This town was pretty  
11 small. There was about 10 houses, I guess. It just  
12 looked like a city to me because before then there  
13 was nothing where I was living off the land, you know.

14 Since then, I was brought  
15 up there and I didn't have no chance to go to school  
16 because the only/<sup>way</sup>we can go to school is <sup>if</sup> our parents  
17 take us to school by dogteam and that's the only  
18 transportation we had in those days. So we either have  
19 to go to school, if our dads say we stay on land, we  
20 stay on land. If we go to school, we go to school for 5  
21 years and we stay there for 5 years. I had a lot of  
22 brothers. I had 5 brothers and about 7 sisters living  
23 off the land. We was happy. We was really happy.  
24 There was nothing to worry about for food and  
25 everything. We were living off the land.

26 Since then, in 1940 we --  
27 the first time in Tuktoyaktuk. And then, in 1943, I  
28 got a little job from Hudson Bay Co. in Tuk -- I just  
29 spend one summer here. I get 75¢ an hour here. I get  
30 75¢ an hour. That really wasn't too much.



A. Voudrach

1 But I was happy with it.  
2 I had no way to spend it anyway. After that the DEW  
3 line started probably about '55 I guess. Then I got  
4 left alone. My dad passed away so I had to make this  
5 as everything goes along by myself.

6 After that I was working  
7 off the land since ever by myself. I had to do it by  
8 myself because I had no choice. Then comes along --  
9 I see lots of surveyors working around town, not around  
10 town but away up in the where I am living by the  
11 Liverpool Bay surveying around. I was wondering what's  
12 going on.

13 And now, today, that is  
14 the day -- I figured they should start a -- C.O.P.E.  
15 should have started that day while they were doing that.  
16 They were even using my house. Yes, I had a house.  
17 I had a cabin up in the bush -- what happened? I left  
18 there in the spring, next fall I come back to this house.  
19 I see an electric light stringing all over my house.  
20 There were light bulbs all over. I didn't know what  
21 was going on, you know. I see all kinds of good looking  
22 pots there and everything in my house. Nobody ever told  
23 me that -- none of the surveyors ever tell me that.  
24 My own log cabin there, you know, you would have been  
25 surprised too, I guess.

26 What was about there,  
27 I wondered what was going on there. There was all kinds  
28 of oil cans outside of my house, garbage piled outside  
29 of my house, cokes which I never used, which I used to  
30 live on.





## A. Voudrach

And I meet a few guys which are trapping there that fall and they told me -- they said they went to my house and seen that plywood, everything that what's going on. That is the time that C.O.P.E. should have started, you know. But I think we should drop that.

Since then, I was using that land, using all that land, I think all the map you got here, I use all that map I think -- the Anderson River, right up to Spence Bay. I was working for the -- let's see Cambridge Bay, Sachs Harbour -- I think, you know, I have never been to school but still I like to, you know, I am just curious and I ask a few questions every place I get to. What's -- what are the people doing around here? I like to find out, you know. I was way up in Spence Bay. I ask a few people what the peoples do around here, how they make a living, at Cambridge Bay, same thing, at Holman Island, the same thing; Coppermine, the same thing; Sachs Harbour, the same thing.

But I feel sorry today is how the white man came over the land. Like in my days, there was no white man. There was only white man I guess was Hudson Bay manager, I guess, a few white trappers. Well -- I was living off the land, you know, I was happy. The only white man I ever see living off the land from 1940 was the first year I was in Tuk. And the only one that visited us was the preacher. I guess you seen one here I guess tonight -- Father Lemeur. He used to come and visit us once a year



## A. Voudrach

1 and the late Father Franche. In 1940 the first  
2 preacher I ever seen was the late Father Franche and  
3 after that Father Lemeur. He used to come to our  
4 house. Of course, we have nothing, no fancy grub but  
5 I believe he had a good square meal. He had a good  
6 square meal. He had no butter or jam on the  
7 table, you know.

8 And then, I start to  
9 hear about pipeline which I never seen before which I  
10 can't even answer. I never seen a pipeline before. How  
11 can I answer. I never seen it. I got to see it before.  
12 Somebody can explain it after anyway. About that  
13 pipeline.

14 The last few years for  
15 the animal -- I had a cabin down at the bottom of  
16 Liverpool Bay. There was lots of moose. We had lots  
17 of caribou. The moose disappeared completely because  
18 the moose, the caribou -- they are migrating animals,  
19 they are turning in circle. But the moose is a still  
20 animal. If somebody disturbed them too much they  
21 move away and they will take awhile before they come  
22 back and that's what happened.

23 Now, I will go back to  
24 my cabin, you see nothing, no more moose. Last year  
25 I was lucky to get three moose. I was back in there  
26 all winter again and never seen a moose track or nothing.  
27 There must be -- there's seismic in there. They  
28 have been doing working in there. And I can't say that  
29 the seismic scared them away. I guess I am working on  
30 the country.



A. Voudrach

1 And now what I want to  
2 point out now. In a country where we worked like say  
3 about 3 or 4 trappers in a country. Like down the  
4 Anderson River, east of Anderson River, I hear there  
5 is a seismic camp blasting over in east of Anderson  
6 River, just because there was nobody in there. The  
7 oil company guys came in there and do some blasting  
8 which they never let Tuk people know it.

9 I am working in this  
10 area. Like right now leave some part of the country. I  
11 leave some part of the country, you know. I work in  
12 one part of the country maybe about a thousand miles  
13 square area where I am working, I leave one area there.  
14 Maybe I pull up the line -- I say, maybe next year I  
15 will work one this way. Just because you see no trail or  
16 nobody work there, I don't think oil companies should  
17 go in there and work in there free will, you know.  
18 Because we will leave that for a reason. You know, if  
19 you trap one place too much you kill everything off, eh?  
20 So you pull up the line and go the other way. By the  
21 time you have worked this off, this land will be built  
22 up again. And while you are doing this you get the  
23 oil companies there working in there, nothing can be  
24 there.

25 And there is not enough  
26 people like me. I never been to school. The people  
27 say that the guys have never been to school. They  
28 should know what they are doing. And they are the ones  
29 that really know what they are doing. They are the ones  
30 that really know what they are doing because they never





A. Voudrach  
Dr. H. Schwartz

1 been to school because they never been to school  
2 because they was brought up right from there. So I  
3 don't know what to say about the pipeline. I know it is  
4 going to hurt the country. I was watching this wild-  
5 life. I was working for wildlife. I was working for  
6 fisheries. I was working for Imperial Oil. I was  
7 working for every company. And I still -- like I say --  
8 how I'm going to say before I see it built -- I have  
9 got to see it first. Well, I guess that is about all  
10 I have got to say.

11 (WITNESS ASIDE)

12 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
13 very much. That's helpful for me to know about the  
14 things you have discussed with us tonight. Thank you  
15 very much.

16 DR. HERBERT SCHWARTZ, resumed:

17 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, my  
18 name is Herbert Schwartz and I made a submission. I  
19 would like to refer to some of the statement I made  
20 in the submission concerning the whales. The movements  
21 of the whales in the Beaufort Sea.

22 Now, if you recall, I took  
23 an exception to the statement made by the Slaney  
24 Research Associates in which they state that by the  
25 20th of August whales move out of the area and  
26 because of that it is perfectly safe for the seismic  
27 activities to continue and because of that the seismic  
28 activities cannot do any harm.

29 Now, for anybody at all  
30 familiar with this country knows that this statement



Dr. H. Schwartz  
M. Noksana

1 is not true. In case of a late summer and lots of ice  
2 in the bay, in the Beaufort Sea and Kugmallit Bay, the  
3 whales will not come in July; they may come early in  
4 August or even as late as the middle of August and if  
5 the seismic starts around the 20th, the people here  
6 have hardly any time at all to catch these whales which  
7 are essential for their survival.

8 Sir, I am not an expert of  
9 the land, I am just a witness. I have been here long  
10 enough to watch the people and I would very much like  
11 if some of the people in the audience, the people who  
12 every summer go hunting whales, if they could comment  
13 on this movement of the whales and the fact that appar-  
14 ently, according to this report, whales disappear from  
15 Kugmallit Bay by the 20th of August. So I invite all  
16 of you who have any experience at all to state your  
17 views because you are the experts of this land and  
18 nobody else is.

19 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
20 Dr. Schwartz.

21 (WITNESS ASIDE)

22  
23 MARK NOKSANA, resumed:

24 THE WITNESS: Well, I just  
25 heard what Dr. Schwartz was saying about the whales.  
26 I want to make a statement, it's not true about the 20th  
27 of August. Last fall I was one of them out hunting  
28 whales all the time every summer and last summer I was  
29 whaling around until late in August. I was there after  
30 the 20th, I got one more whale. I only got a little



M.Noksana

1 boat and I only got a canoe, 22-foot, I can't take any  
2 more; and other people were still whaling at that time.  
3 I was going to go out again, I know the whales still  
4 in there in the back of the island there, Hendrickson  
5 Island. I seen them, there's still whale there, and  
6 I was going to make another trip. I was waiting for  
7 the good weather, it was pretty near the end of August.

8 One morning I went there from  
9 Tuk across there, it was fine weather, no wind, I was  
10 sure to get another whale before the fall come, and  
11 I went on the other side of the island, I was looking  
12 around, as far as you can see no wind, no waves, no  
13 nothing, and I went out there and I had to go to shore  
14 on the island to look around on top of the hills if I  
15 can spot the whales. Been waiting around all day. I  
16 had binoculars, I looking around if I could spot the  
17 whales that were coming in. I was looking around with  
18 binoculars, I seen the boat about ten miles away,  
19 north of Hendrickson Island there, he was going back  
20 and forth, and he would go back and forth there. I  
21 spotted him with my binoculars, and he never stop all  
22 day, go back and forth, he'd go west and he'd go east,  
23 and go back and forth.

24 On account of that there was  
25 no more whales, they weren't going to take a chance  
26 any more to come into the shallow in the mouth of the  
27 river there to feed. So if it wasn't for that seismic  
28 or somebody that was just out there in the boat, white  
29 boat, there's no more whales after that. Whales got  
30 no chance to come in any more because the people was



M. Noksana

1 still whaling. When I went back, people asked me, "Is  
2 there any whale there?"

3 I said, "I didn't see any  
4 because on account of the boat out there go back and  
5 forth."

6 Sometime we whaling later,  
7 on account it's late sometime when the whale come, the  
8 people were still whaling. That's why I want to bring  
9 up this. I was one of them whaling all the time too,  
10 every summer, for my own good because that's what we  
11 depending on for the Eskimos and the whales.

12 You know, the white man might  
13 like potatoes, he love potatoes, he can't go without  
14 potatoes. White man, whatever he eat, he's got to  
15 have them. It's just like potatoes to us, the muktuk  
16 we had eating whales. We can't go without it. If we  
17 go without it, you know, it's just when you miss some-  
18 thing, when you've grown up and you're feeding all the  
19 time and you miss it, you can't feel good.

20 Always told many times when  
21 white man come around he ask me, "You get any whale?"

22 "Yes, I got a whale." I told  
23 him, I kidding, I used to talk with him. "Well, you  
24 eat potatoes?"

25 "Yes."

26 "That's what my potatoes, it's  
27 muktuk, that's what I live on." So the Eskimos got to  
28 have that.

29 One year I was on the Dew Line  
working there at Bar 2, and I had to listen the news,





M. Noksana  
V. Steen

1 and I hear the report one summer, they got only one  
2 whale in Tuk, just one whale all that season, on account  
3 of the boat go back and forth that year. But I didn't  
4 see it because I was working.

5 It could happen there, if  
6 they ever start on drilling outside of that island there  
7 it could happen. We might end up with no whales here  
8 in the harbour in Tuk. It could happen -- any animals.  
9 I'm glad that Vincent mentioned about it today, if  
10 they start drilling in there we're going to end up with  
11 no whales, no seal, no fish, but many times Imperial  
12 Oil come to the meeting once in a while when they want  
13 to do something, always say, "We going to look after  
14 it, today we're going to get down the seismic," and  
15 yet sometimes they never listen.

16 Because I'm talking for  
17 everybody in the north, in Tuk where they're living  
18 here, that's what we need. That's all I have to say.

19 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
20 Mr. Noksana.

21 (WITNESS ASIDE)

22  
23 VINCENT STEEN, resumed:

24 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, I am  
25 Vince Steen and I'm back again.

26 (LAUGHTER)

27 I'm very sorry I slipped up  
28 on my summary this afternoon, I left out the beluga  
29 whales. I had them lastly, saying at Shallow Bay  
30 they're coming on on the west side. I hunted beluga



V. Steen

1 whales quite a bit with my boats. I even supply people  
2 that are working and that don't have little boats to  
3 go out whaling, I supply a whale for them for a price.  
4 Usually about \$50.00, \$75.00 a whale, which is very  
5 cheap.

6 I found that the whales  
side  
7 will come in from Shallow Bay/by into the Kugmallit Bay  
8 side as soon as the ice will let them come in. The ice  
9 if it is sitting right on Pullen Island and they cannot  
10 come in then they will stay on the west side in Shallow  
11 Bay side. I will go up if you don't mind -- if you don't  
12 mind I will go up.

13 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes, sure,  
14 go ahead.

15 THE WITNESS: This is Pullen  
16 Island here and the whales are definitely on the west  
17 side first, maybe sometime even two weeks ahead of  
18 Tuk side. Maybe they would have whales here in  
19 Shallow Bay-Kendall Island area. Say on the first of  
20 July where if the ice won't permit them to come by  
21 Pullen Island because there is deep water right to  
22 Pullen Island, the ice will sit there and Kugmallit  
23 Bay could be open because the river would open it but  
24 they cannot get past Pullen Island on account of the ice.  
25 As soon as the ice moves off to let them through they  
26 will come into Kugmallit Bay. Not all of them leave  
27 Shallow Bay to come here but more than likely what I  
28 have seen of them, they seem to travel back and forth  
29 between the two areas like when we hunt them here --  
30 when they first come they might come one or two thousand



## V. Steen

of them in one night. Though there would be nothing there that day and that night if the ice for some reason were, an offshore wind moves off, they will come into this area by the thousands and no amount of hunting is going to drive them out the first week. They will not go back out. They have their young ones. Most of the time they already seem to have their young ones when they arrive here. They are not very big though. They are very small.

As the season goes by, I mean the spring goes by here say the whale would come in, well, they would come in definitely. I have killed whales here on June 28th around Hendrickson Island so that shows how early they will come in if they can come in.

One year I never killed a whale here until July 18th. That was the earliest they could come in on account of the ice. However, as this time goes by they -- less and less of them come back. Like when you hunt them later on after a week of hunting they will start going back into deep water if you keep bothering them.

If there is nobody here like during a west wind or too rough to hunt for the little boats, the whales would be there definitely. You can see them from the beach blowing and playing out there but if the wind goes down and somebody goes out to hunt they will right away move into deep water so it makes it harder to hunt them. They know that. If the whale is not bothered you can -- I have been out





V. Steen

1 here in the middle of September trying to hunt whale  
2 but by that time there is very few whales left that  
3 actually come back here and they are the old whales,  
4 big whales, the big bulls, the males. There is no more  
5 females or young ones hardly. I mean mostly big ones  
6 and they are very wild. As soon as they see the boat  
7 they take off but that is in September and you might  
8 have to wait a week, sit on that island a week before  
9 you will see a bunch of whales come in to hunt, that  
10 you can hunt.

11 In September also, well,  
12 right from the time the whales first come in to  
13 Kugmallit Bay, you can see them on the east coast here,  
14 Toker Point, Warren Point, they are there but it is  
15 deep water there and people don't hunt there because it's  
16 only in the shallow water area are they easy to get  
17 with little boats -- the way the people hunt them.

18 I have seen whales  
19 all along the coast right into Liverpool Bay any time  
20 in the summer right till the time seasons close for  
21 boating. I have seen the beluga whales right even here  
22 in Husky Lake and they have even had a school one time  
23 of 17 whales stuck in Husky Lake. They were frozen  
24 in, they couldn't get out and they starved to death.  
25 There were 17 of them.

26 Now, I mentioned this  
27 because it seems to be an important thing and I am  
28 sorry that I left it out at the start.

29 (WITNESS ASIDE)

THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you



Mrs. A. Noksana

very much, Mr. Steen. Anyone else who wishes to say anything may do so.

ANNIE NOKSANA, sworn:

THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, I just want to, myself, what I write down what I think. My name is Annie Noksana. I was born in Sachs Harbour in 1938. I have 5 children to think about. I hear about the pipeline a year and I have been thinking about the Inuit land.

THE COMMISSIONER: Excuse me, I'm sorry. I am not able to hear you. I think it is mostly because of this machine that is running over here. Okay, but maybe you should pull the microphone a little closer and just relax.

THE WITNESS: But so close. My name is Annie Noksana. I was born in Sachs Harbour in 1938. I have 5 children to think about. I hear about the pipeline for a year and I have been thinking about the Inuit land. I do not want to see the pipeline to come up because there will be no more games in our land. I don't want that to happen because I have children to think about. Not only that, for the whole community I am concerned about. And about the offshore drilling, I don't want that to happen. There will be no more polar bears, seals and fish or any other games left. I don't want that to happen because I myself like to fish and hunt. I have been fishing for a long time and it was about two summers ago when I look at the fish net about twice a day. We used to get two tubsfull and last summer, I look at the fish net



Mrs. A. Noksana

twice a day, I end up getting two fish a day and about Husky Lake, ten or fifteen years ago when we used to go and fish, we used to bring sledload of fish. Now, a year ago we go up to Husky Lake, we end up with one fish. It is a good thing I have five kids. There would never be enough for more. That is the reason why I don't want the pipeline and offshore drilling.

I would like to go back to the year I sent one of my boys to school. The first year he refused to go to school for two weeks so the principal and the J.P. came to see us. They had been bringing a bunch of papers saying that if my boy don't go to school, they would come to take his family allowance away so I told them to do it. If my boy wants to go to school, he can go without that family allowance. So it is only \$6.00 anyway. It is not even enough to get some clothes so I told them to write it down in front of me but they would not do it. So by the time my boy start school, every time I get my family allowance, I sent it to the principal. The family allowance went back and forth for five months. The principal sent it back to me so I told him to keep it. I didn't even give a damn, I told you can keep it so finally he has been leaving them in the post office so I took them. I wanted him to find out that even us Eskimos could be smart. The principal used the family allowance to scare the people.

Some of the people he had so scared, they don't want their children's family allowance to be taken. That's why they had to send



Mrs. A. Noksana

1 their children to school just for \$6.00 but I wasn't  
2 going to be scared because I heard the word even before  
3 my own children start school so I had to talk for  
4 myself if they want to have school they still could  
5 go to school without the family allowance.

6 Who knows, ever since then  
7 I think all the government workers are all alike so  
8 please think twice before you ever spoil our land  
9 because that's why -- that is one reason, that's the only  
10 land we always want for fishing and hunting for our  
11 children that's growing up. We don't want our children  
12 to think we never talked for them. We have to think  
13 ahead before it is too late. That is all I have to  
14 say. Thank you.

15 (WITNESS ASIDE)  
16

17 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
18 very much. Would anyone else like to make a statement?  
19 This is the last night that we will be here in Tuk  
20 and in case some of you are still putting your thoughts  
21 together, I think we will just take a 5 minute break  
22 now and stretch our legs and then we will see after  
23 that if anyone else has anything further to say. If  
24 they don't then I think we will adjourn the hearing at  
25 that stage so we will just take a 5 minute break and  
26 you can think about whether you want to say anything and  
27 then we will start again in 5 minutes.

28 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 9:30 P.M.)

29 (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED AT 9:40 P.M.)

THE COMMISSIONER: Ladies and





S. Kangekana

gentlemen, is there anyone else who wishes to say anything before we close the hearings tonight?

SILAS KANGEGANA, sworn:

THE WITNESS: I can't speak in English, I have to speak in Eskimo.

THE INTERPRETER: Silas Kangekana said I am an Eskimo and I was asked to speak. I don't have very much to say but because I am an Eskimo, I am going to say a few words.

I do not want to see an offshore drilling because there will be a blowout and the oil will go all over the ice, not only will it kill our wildlife of the sea but it will go all over the ice, the water.

Because we Eskimos like to have our wildlife from the sea like fish and the ducks and the whales and whatever comes from the sea. I am against the offshore drilling but I do not want to say stop the development. I really liked what Mark Noksana said a while ago because we Eskimos like to have our muktuk just as the white men like to have their potatoes.

The reindeer like to go out wading and swimming in the heat of the summer and if there is a blowout and the oil goes on the water, on the top of the water, they will get it in their fur and their skin and they would go up inland and drop the oil all over the moss where they eat and get it all over themselves and this oil would be so hard to get it off the reindeer. I do not want to see the pipeline come



S. Kangegana  
Mrs. H. Gruben

through because we hear sometimes that there is war going on or something anyway and if something should fall or drop on the pipeline, the oil would spill all over the land and because I am a herder and look after wildlife on the line of reindeer. I do not want to see the pipeline come through. This is all I have to say.

Silas Kangegana is a chief herder and he is the co-owner of the reindeer herd around Tuk.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you very much, Mr. Kangegana. Anyone else.

HELEN GRUBEN, resumed:

THE WITNESS: I shall say it in English and I shall also translate what I say in Eskimo.

These past three days we have heard about wildlife and what seismic does to our land and wildlife and we have talked about the pipeline and offshore drilling. Offshore drilling, there is a question mark. Why does it have to be done? If there is a blowout, how will we get rid of all the oil that will go all over the coast? It would come up through seal holes. It will go all over the leads and affect our seals and our fish and whatever is in the sea.

I feel that there should be more research done and we should learn more before



Mrs. H. Gruben

we go into these -- before we consent to these things to happen.

The other thing that has been bothering me is the land claims. We all heard that land claims-- about land claims being handed to Prime Minister Trudeau, the proposal. On the news, we heard that Inuvik was excluded. It wasn't included in the land claims and I thought of a friend there. I have a very good friend at Inuvik and I thought, boy, she sure will be upset and she was.

Now, if they want to be included in the land claim, they have to move out of Inuvik in order to be included and these people have made their home at Inuvik and have put down their roots at Inuvik and why are they excluded in this land claim?

I thought of my friend and I also thought I have a son there and I have a daughter there and I have a brother and my sister. Boy, that's really bad, my own flesh and blood and they are not included in the land claim when I am.

In order for them to get this, I said they will have to move out. Where would my friend go. She is a Metis. If she tried to go to the Eskimo side, they would say go away, you are a Metis. And where would I find my friend if she had to move somewhere else because she couldn't be included in this land claim.

Now, Indians and Eskimos never used to get along. And they are just learning





Mrs. H. Gruben  
D. Freeman

1 to get along now nicely. And this has brought up a  
2 thought that there is segregation going to come up  
3 because why is Inuvik with -- the Inuit -- the people  
4 that live there are Inuit and they are not included.  
5 It brings back the memory when I used to go to school  
6 with my little brother. He didn't know whether he was  
7 an Indian or an Eskimo because he used to be playing  
8 with the Eskimo boys and they would get mad at him and  
9 they would say, go away, you little dry meat. And  
10 then when he tried to play with the Indian boys, they  
11 would say, oh, shut up, you little uksuk. This is  
12 what is going to happen because the people at Inuvik  
13 are not included in the land claim and they feel they  
14 don't belong anymore. And why are they not included?

15 If there is an answer,  
16 boy, I sure would like to know.

17 (WITNESS ASIDE)

18  
19 PASTOR DAVE FREEMAN, resumed:

20 THE WITNESS: Justice Berger,  
21 Pastor Dave Freeman here. Just a few comments further  
22 to what I have already said the other day. A statement  
23 was made this afternoon that in all justice that  
24 statement was made by Vincent Steen which we -- everyone  
25 of us appreciate and I think that without doubt as the  
26 Eskimo people have expressed their strong feeling for  
27 the land and I don't think that there is anyone in the  
28 sound of my voice that does not want to see a just and  
29 equitable settlement arrived at in the far north here,  
30 both in land settlement and as far as social development



D. Freeman

and industrial development and exploration of natural and renewable resources is concerned but I would, tonight, just very briefly please like to address not only this hearing but also those people that I have come to respect -- very strong-hearted people of the northland, the people that love their land very very much.

There are some facts of life that I think should be borne out to all of us because we are here gathered as intelligent people seeking to find intelligent answers to some very complex and serious problems that are facing the northland today.

If I were to ask the people of Tuk how many of them enjoy their skidoos or how many of them profit by the advance of industry in producing the steel traps and in producing the canoes and the kickers, the motor cars and the various machines that are now used in the north. All of us appreciate electric lights. T.V. and radio has broadened our understanding, not only of our own life but also of the lives of others in far distant lands that are far removed from the high Arctic but if I were to ask how many enjoy the skidoos or the cars or the canoes, I am sure that all of us would answer yes, we all enjoy them.

I would want to just call to the attention very briefly to my Eskimo friends that those skidoos and those cars and those kickers and many of the blessings of our 20th century life are the direct result of an environment of the south that has



D. Freeman

been disturbed, when you see a canoe in the south a tree has fallen. If you have a kicker somewhere in the south or some foreign distant land, there has been a mining operation that has taken place. That has produced the steel and the elements necessary to go into producing that kicker. We live in the 20th century and we no longer live in the good old days. That in actual fact if we were to be placed back in those good old days were actually not as good as we make them out to be.

I just want to call to the attention that even in the south as it has happened so very often in the north that we feel that we get ripped off by the government or by industry. I want you to know that this is not a feeling that is just the feeling that we feel here in the north. It also happens in the south. Our governments in the south often build giant freeways where we think they shouldn't build them. They often do things that we feel that that's not in the interests of the majority of people but changes come and we don't altogether live anymore in what we might term a free society. We live in communities in settlements when it is necessary that cooperation between each other be maintained and it becomes necessary that if we are to sustain the way of life that we enjoy and even improve it that new items, new products, new energies be found and I just want to say that in development it is a two-way street. The Government of Canada for I don't know how long has been sending oil to the northland, has been sending the materials to build houses and I know as a builder





D. Freeman

1 that some of the houses you live in are very poor  
2 houses. I would be the first to agree and in some  
3 cases very fine log cabins, very comfortable, little,  
4 cozy little homes have been surrendered at the pushing  
5 and the persuasion of people from the south for houses  
6 that are not so comfortable, that are drafty but I  
7 think the time has come when we must realize that one  
8 of the joys of life is to take something that is good  
9 and make it better and I believe that properly controlled  
10 development can bring a better life to the people of the  
11 north. Certainly a more meaningful and productive life.

12                                 There are many things  
13 which will come in the days ahead and in the years to  
14 come that are unrealized at this time. Activity  
15 produces more activity and I think we of the north and  
16 should I rephrase that, I think the people of the north  
17 and those who have been here for generations unknown  
18 and who will remain in the north for this is their land  
19 and indeed they should be masters in their own house.

20                                 But I feel that if the  
21 opportunity is available to the people of the north to  
22 contribute not to be on the receiving hand as it has been  
23 in times gone by in the days gone by and as I spoke, sir,  
24 earlier, that it is not a healthy thing. It is not a  
25 healthy thing for any of us individually or as a  
26 collective group to be constantly on the receiving end  
27 but it is time that an exchange of goods and as I have  
28 previously stated my position as far as the I.T.C.  
29 proposal, land claim settlement in full agreement with  
30 it. I sincerely hope and would urge that a land claim





D. Freeman

1 settlement would be forthcoming that we altogether and  
2 the people of the north with the people of the south  
3 may build a better society for all those who live in  
4 the north and in the south. Thank you, sir.

5 (WITNESS ASIDE)

6 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
7 Pastor Freeman.

8 SAM RADDI, resumed:

9 THE WITNESS: I want to refer  
10 this -- I will make it very brief though. My name is  
11 Sam Raddi and I am with C.O.P.E. I also work very  
12 closely with the land claim negotiators, Nellie  
13 Cournoyea who is well known in the Western Arctic. She  
14 is the land claim negotiator for the Western Arctic.  
15 She will be coming to all the settlements the next  
16 few weeks to explain the whole land claim proposal.

17 There is some misunder-  
18 standing, I guess, right now because she has not been  
19 to the settlements yet to explain this land claim  
20 proposal. A while ago, Helen Gruben mentioned  
21 about land claims that Inuvik is not participating in  
22 land claims and I live there myself and so does  
23 Nellie. She is an Eskimo and there is a lot of  
24 Eskimos living there. My sisters are there and I  
25 have a lot of very close relatives living there also.  
26 There is a misunderstanding there, Helen, it is not that  
27 they will not be included. Every native that is born in the  
28 Territories will <sup>be</sup> included in these land claims when it is  
29 settled.

I guess what you didn't



S. Raddi

understand is that the Nunavut Territory had excluded Inuvik from participating in this Nunavut Territory. And the people, the Inuit, if they want to, if they so desire, they can move out of Inuvik and create another settlement if they want to but whoever want to live in Inuvik, it is their prerogative. It is up to them. They can live there and still have claims, whatever there is in the land claims proposal. They will be part, partakers so there will be nobody excluded from any land claims even the Dene land claims or Metis land claims or Inuit land claims, they will all be taking part.

So if Nellie Cournoyea comes here, Helen, she will be travelling to all the settlements and explain to all the Eskimos, we call in communities in the Western Arctic and she will explain the whole proposal to every home and she will be doing that for the rest of this next year, I suppose.

Next week, starting on the 22nd of March, the Inuit Tapirisat of Canada will be holding a conference. There will be about 115 people coming in and all the people in Tuk are invited to listen to and ask questions if they want to ask questions then. They will be holding it here in Tuk so if anybody here has any questions or wants to take part, they are welcome to take part in this conference. It will start on the 21st and if there is anymore questions from anybody in Tuk, like I said, Nellie Cournoyea will be here to explain the whole land claims issue, that



S. Raddi

1 is her job. Is that clear enough, Mr. Berger?

2 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, I  
3 think it is and it is clear enough to me but I am --  
4 it sounds like I am not eligible so --

5 THE WITNESS: Well, you may  
6 be eligible, Mr. Berger, if the people so desire, if  
7 they want to give people the first five years, the first  
8 five years of the settlement, the people in each  
9 settlement can include anybody, whoever they want to.  
10 They have five years to decide who they want to be, who  
11 they want to have involved in the land claims. If you  
12 live in Tuk and if they want, if the people of Tuk  
13 want you to take part, you will be welcome to.

14 THE COMMISSIONER: So, even if  
15 you are a white person, it might occur.

16 THE WITNESS: Right.

17 THE COMMISSIONER: I follow you.

18 THE WITNESS: If the people  
19 of Tuk want you to take part they will ask you to. So  
20 you have got a chance.

21 MRS. HELEN GRUBEN: That  
22 answers my question and I will wait until the conference  
23 comes around to bring up more. Thank you.

24 MR. RADDI: Mr. Berger, a  
25 little while ago I listened to Mr. Vince Steen talking  
26 about the bowhead whales and the bow-- the white whales  
27 the polar bears and so forth. I think I mentioned  
28 before in Inuvik that I lived and trapped all over  
29 almost every settlement in the Western Arctic. I have  
30 seen bowhead whales and beluga whales in the month of





S. Raddi

1 April and May in Sachs Harbour so I have seen them  
2 myself with my own eyes and I even shot one. I didn't  
3 kill it though. It was too big. It didn't even feel  
4 the bullet. So that is all I have got to say. Thank  
5 you.

6 (WITNESS ASIDE)

7 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
8 Mr. Raddi.

9 Just one little postscript  
10 on this subject of whales, Imperial Oil gave me their  
11 report on the observations they made on whales, white  
12 whales in 1972 and this was the year that Dr. Brodie  
13 participated with Slaney Research Associates in the  
14 observation of the whales. We will go into this in  
15 detail when we get back to Yellowknife and sort it all  
16 out but I just thought I would read this to you.

17 According to Slaney's report, it says,

18 "By early August, small groups of whales  
19 appear to begin a general movement back  
20 toward the west. This trend continues  
21 through mid-August."

22 Then they conclude,

23 "No whales were sighted, no whales were  
24 seen in the area by F.F. Slaney and Co.  
25 personnel after August 15, 1972."

26 All that they seem to be saying is that the people that  
27 work for Slaney didn't see any whales after August 15th  
28 in that year. They are not suggesting that there weren't  
29 any there. They just say they didn't see them. At  
any rate, we will look into that in detail. I just



thought I would mention that because it may be helpful in sorting this out.

Well, I think that we have had a useful three days of hearings here and it is getting on and I think that everyone is looking forward to the drum dance so I am going to close the hearing here in Tuktoyaktuk now and just thank all of you for participating.

I have listened carefully to what each of you has said and I have learned something from each of you. That's my job, to listen to you and to listen to people throughout the north as I have been doing now for over a year.

We have been to 26 villages. We have heard 700 people come forward and say what they think and this is a country where we believe in democracy, we believe that people should have their say in their own future and this Inquiry is here in Tuktoyaktuk to make sure that you have a say. You, the people that were born here, who will spend your lives here and will die here, to make sure that you have a say in what's going to happen here in the north.

It is an important decision and my job is to make sure the government has the facts before it to make sure the government understands the consequences, to make sure that the government is in a position to make an intelligent choice. It is an important decision for Canada but it is a decision that is most of important of all for you people who will have to live with the decision for the rest of your lives.



So I just want to say that we will be going to Paulatuk tomorrow to hear what the people have to say there and we will stay there a day perhaps two and then we will go to Arctic Red River on Saturday and stay there a day or perhaps two and then we will go down to Yellowknife and start the hearings in Yellowknife again on Tuesday and when we finish the hearings I will be writing my report for the government and making my recommendations to them. That will be later in the year and I am certain that when my report and recommendations are made public that you will hear about them.

These people from the Inquiry have been putting on tape everything that you have said and we will send the transcript of all that you have said here over these last three days to the Settlement Council and we will send a copy to the school as well if they would like to have a copy at the school. And of course C.O.P.E has its copy. We have all -- all the people who came here with the Inquiry -- we have all enjoyed our stay here in Tuktoyaktuk very much and have enjoyed meeting all of you and we are grateful to you for the way in which you have come forward and told us what is on your mind. Told us what you are thinking about the pipeline and the oil and gas development and offshore<sup>,drilling</sup> and all of these issues that we have to make up our minds about.

Now, I told you that I make a report to the government. Remember that it is the Government of Canada that will decide. I won't



1 be deciding whether there will be a pipeline, a gas  
2 pipeline or an oil pipeline or both. I won't be  
3 deciding whether there will be expanded oil and gas  
4 exploration and development throughout the delta and  
5 the Beaufort Sea. I won't decide whether there will be  
6 offshore drilling. The people elected in Ottawa to  
7 govern the country, Mr. Trudeau and his colleagues will  
8 have to decide these things but I will do my best to  
9 make sure that they understand the consequences, to  
10 make sure that they are in a position to make an informed  
11 judgment on these questions so thank you again.

12 This is the only chance  
13 I ever get to talk at these hearings so I usually make  
14 the most of it. That's why I went on for a little while.

15 Well, we will adjourn the  
16 hearing as soon as you have translated what I have said.

17 Thank you very much and  
18 the Inquiry stands adjourned until we reconvene  
19 tomorrow in Paulatuk.

20 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED TO MARCH 11, 1976)

21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30



347

M835

vol.45

Community

AUTHOR

Canada.National Energy Board.

Mackenzie Valley Pipeline-  
Inquiry

DATE ONE

RECEIVED 1987

*1987  
10/1/87  
30/11/87*





1 APPEARANCES:

2 Mr. Beer

for Foothills Pipe Lines  
Ltd.

3 John Hnatiuk, Esq.,

for Gas Consortium

26 347  
27 17825  
28 10146  
29 COMMUNI  
30



I N D E XPage

## WITNESSES:

Garret RUBEN

4424, 4436  
4471, 4481,  
4512, 4517

Peter GREEN

4432, 4464

Edward RUBEN

4447, 4519

Mrs. Nora RUBEN

4456

Nelson GREEN

4457, 4461

Mrs. Rosemary KIRBY

4460, 4465,  
4482, 4517

Joe THRASHER

4466

Johnny RUBEN

4468

Mrs. Bertha RUBEN

4470

Abe RUBEN

4475

Tony GREEN

4479, 4520

Noel GREEN

4481





Paulatuk, N.W.T.

March 11, 1976

(PROCEEDINGS RESUMED PURSUANT TO ADJOURNMENT)

THE COMMISSIONER: Ladies and gentlemen, I'll call the hearing to order. I am Judge Berger and I'm going to tell you why we have brought the Mackenzie Valley Pipeline Inquiry here to Paulatuk.

There are two pipeline companies. Artic Gas is one of them and Foothills is the other. These companies are competing for the right to build a gas pipeline from the Arctic to southern Canada and the United States.

Now, I've been asked by the Government to visit all of the communities in the north that might be affected if this pipeline were built. So I'm here to find out what you think about it. Now, I've been listening to evidence about the pipeline now for more than a year, and we've been told that the oil and gas industry have found oil and gas in the Mackenzie Delta. They have already drilled a lot of wells in the Mackenzie Delta. They found oil. They found gas, and they want to build a gas pipeline to take that gas along the Mackenzie River to the south to Canada and the United States.

After that, they want to build an oil pipeline so that there would be a gas pipeline from the Arctic to the south and an oil pipeline from the Arctic to the south. If that happened, it would mean that the companies would want to drill more and



1 more wells in the delta and more and more wells in the  
2 Beaufort Sea. It's because of the fact that the gas  
3 pipeline and the oil pipeline, if they were built,  
4 would lead to exploration and development extending  
5 beyond the delta and into the Beaufort Sea that we have  
6 come here today to see what you have to say about it.

7 Now, the proposed pipeline,  
8 if it were built, would be the biggest project --  
9 biggest construction project in Canada's history. There  
10 would be 6,000 men required to build the pipeline and  
11 it would take three years to build it. There would  
12 be 1,200 more men needed to build the gas plants and  
13 the gathering lines in the Mackenzie Delta. Then, of  
14 course, if they <sup>were</sup> built -- the gas pipeline were built  
15 and then the oil pipeline, and exploration expanded in  
16 the Beaufort Sea, there would be more and more men  
17 needed to work out there.

18 So we have been told that there  
19 will be jobs for native people on the construction of  
20 the pipeline and jobs for native people on the drilling  
21 rigs and in the gas plants. Already, native people are  
22 being flown from Coppermine. Native people are being  
23 flown regularly from Coppermine to work in oil and  
24 gas operations in the Mackenzie Delta.

25 So, given the fact that the  
26 pipeline companies and the oil and gas industry will  
27 need all these men to work on building the pipelines,  
28 on building the gas plants, on oil and gas exploration  
29 work in the delta and in the Beaufort Sea, you may be  
30 given -- you the people that live here in Paulatuk may



1 be given the opportunity of working on all of these  
2 projects if they go ahead.

3 Now I know that you are con-  
4 cerned about the two exploration wells that Dome  
5 Petroleum wants to drill in the Beaufort Sea this  
6 summer. Those wells lie out about 40 miles or more in  
7 the Beaufort Sea, more or less north of Tuktoyaktuk.  
8 That is, if you head out into the Beaufort Sea north  
9 from Tuktoyaktuk and you go about 40 miles, you'll hit  
10 the first of the wells they want to drill this summer  
11 and then if you go northwest after that for another 20  
12 or 30 miles, you'll hit the second well they want to  
13 drill this summer.

14 Now, I am not here to conduct  
15 an examination into the wisdom of the drilling of those  
16 two wells this summer. But what I am here about is,  
17 to see what you think would happen if the pipelines  
18 went ahead; if there were many, many oil and gas explora-  
19 tion and development wells out in the middle of the  
20 Beaufort Sea and if pipelines were built that ran along  
21 the bottom of the Beaufort Sea for 40, 50, 60 miles  
22 into the delta where they would join up with the main  
23 pipelines that would carry oil and gas to the south.

24 I will advise the Government  
25 what I think the longterm risk, if you have many, many  
26 wells drilled in the Beaufort Sea will be and I'm here  
27 to find out what you think about that and about all of  
28 these other things.

29 So, I've already been to 26  
30 communities in the north to listen to what the people



1 have to say because whatever happens here, you're the  
2 people who are concerned most of all because you're the  
3 people that live here and whatever is decided, whatever  
4 decision is made, is a decision that you'll have to live  
5 with for the rest of your lives.

6 So, I'm here to listen to you  
7 and Abe Okpik is here with us to translate what I've  
8 said into Eskimo. After that, I'll want all of you to  
9 speak; those of you who wish to speak. As I understand  
10 it, most of you'll be speaking in English, but if anyone  
11 wants to speak in Eskimo, they can and I understand  
12 that Garret Ruben will translate Eskimo into English.

13 Now, maybe I should just explain  
14 that I brought a lot of people with. I didn't ask them  
15 all to come, but they came anyway. The two people here  
16 at this table with that mask are just putting on tape  
17 everything that you say so it can be printed and so that  
18 I can take it with me and I'll be able to read it again.  
19 It means I won't forget whatever you say here today,  
20 and we'll send a copy of the volume containing all that  
21 you say today back to the settlement so that you can  
22 all read<sup>it</sup> again yourselves, if you want to.

23 We have brought the C.B.C.'s  
24 Northern Broadcasting Unit with us and they consist  
25 of Whit Fraser who broadcasts in English, Abe Okpik  
26 who broadcasts in Eskimo, Jim Sittichinli who broadcasts  
27 in Loucheux, Joe Toby who broadcasts in Chippewwan and  
28 Dogrib and Louis Blondin who broadcasts in Slavey and  
29 we have brought with us Ken McReath of the C.B.C. from  
30 Calgary and Geoff Meggs of the Albertan. That's a





G. Ruben

1 newspaper in Calgary and Drew Ann Wake who is with  
2 "Our Native Land", a radio program and Brenda Kolson  
3 who is from "Native Press."

4 So, that's I think, all the  
5 people from the radio and T.V. and the papers, and we  
6 also have with us representatives of Arctic Gas and  
7 Foothills Pipelines, the pipeline companies. In addition,  
8 we have a representative of Gulf Oil here, Mr. Hnatiuk.  
9 Gulf Oil is a partner with Dome in the two wells that  
10 they want to drill in the Beaufort Sea this summer.  
11 So, all of those people from the pipeline companies and  
12 the oil companies, if you want to ask them any questions  
13 or if you want them to say anything, I'll ask them to  
14 come forward, but, in the meantime, what I'm really  
15 interested is hearing what you have to say and the  
16 main reason I brought them with me was so that they  
17 could just sit here and listen to what you have to say.

18 GARRET RUBEN, sworn:

19 THE WITNESS: I'm a little bit  
20 nervous. It always happen at the start. I'm just  
21 going to talk about what I know since I was born, I  
22 didn't know when I was born but when I realized what  
23 was going on. I guess everybody knew about living in  
24 the north now. Guys that stay in the north all their  
25 lives. I wouldn't say I know everything but there's  
26 other peoples know what they do.

27 I'm going to tell what I know  
28 since I start travel around. Sometime it's hard.  
29 Sometime it's easy. You can't always say "I'm going  
30 to get this today". If you're lucky you get it. If



## G. Euben

1 you're not, you don't get it. As far as I know now,  
2 when you struggle for a living, it's hard and what's  
3 going to happen if it get harder. If the pipeline  
4 come through, it might not affect us here right away  
5 but what we're more concerned about is it's what we  
6 hear about what they're going to do out in the sea,  
7 because we depend on the biggest part of our life on  
8 the sea.

9 From land, you can get sorts  
10 of things like fish and meat, foxes, but from the sea,  
11 you get your seals, your polar bears, your fish; all  
12 kinds of fish. We depend on the sea more than the  
13 land, I believe, to my knowledge.

14 So, I guess I can point out  
15 some places where I travelled.

16 THE COMMISSIONER: Fine.

17 THE WITNESS: Living in this  
18 part of the country all my life, I was born in Tom Cott  
19 Bay which is right here, and when I know my parents  
20 used to. They don't have a place like here. Old  
21 timers always, pretty near every second year they have  
22 to move a little bit maybe. Not too far but find  
23 place where he can get some animals easier.

24 When I was born, we was living  
25 here. After that, we moved to Brock River. After  
26 that they start spend year in the river or up the  
27 river and then down at Letty Harbor and Selwood Bay.  
28 They keep moving around like that but the hunters  
29 travelled all over the place. They travelled up to  
30 as' they can get some animals or trap foxes.



G. Puben

1                   Hunting polar bears, they  
2 go out on the sea to hunt bears because polar bears  
3 don't usually go too much inland. Of course, once  
4 in a while, you see polar bear across the country but  
5 they don't live up here. They live out in the open  
6 sea.

7                   When Peter was here, we made  
8 him draw these lines, because everybody, he come house  
9 to house and we tell him who I used to travel and the  
10 other guys tell him who did travel.

11                  All our lives we depend on the  
12 land, on our land. When you work for somebody, you  
13 going to get that much money in the end of the month.  
14 But, when you trapping, you don't know if you going  
15 to get that money. You just guessing, like gambling.

16                  Like I say, when hunting gets  
17 easy, we survive easier. When it get hard, we go  
18 starving.

19                  I remember when we was in  
20 Broad River. There was no caribous in this part so  
21 we had hell of a time. Of course, I was too small to go  
22 around too, but I know. I know my brothers, all my  
23 brothers -- all the brothers, my parents, my dad.  
24 They used to travel all over to get some food.

25                  So, from boyhood, I know  
26 we depend, lakes where they got fish. We depend on  
27 the river where it's got fish. We depend on the land  
28 where we got caribous or any other animals. We depend  
29 on Crow's Line for trapping for getting bears, for  
30 getting seals and I think that's the way everybody make





C. F. F. F.

their living. There's really no income. There's  
you're not working for anybody, you work for yourself.

So, when Dew Line started, we  
don't know about being employed by anybody. We never  
did get income from anything. So they start hiring  
people so we get hired, they take us around all over,  
to make us work. We start to realize when we work by  
hours, then you get paid by every two weeks likely.

So, pretty near everybody  
knows how, old enough to work, they start working for  
company and we moved to Cape Parry because most of us  
get we was employed down at the Dew Line side of Cape  
Parry but after few years, we realize it wasn't worth  
living out there but even though was that close you  
have to travel with dogteam. There's no skidoos  
that time and we have to travel with dogteam all the  
way up here to get our fish and caribous.

So, after few years, we couldn't  
stand living out there and so we decide to move back  
to Paulatuk. Here, we can go out trapping that way  
and we can go hunt and we don't have to go long time  
because we're right in the middle of this part.

So most of the guys was working,  
they keep quitting their job because they can't stand  
it. They'd rather live on the land.

Now, I was born in between  
1925 and 1959 and I'm still living today. When we  
moved back to Paulatuk, we started put up little store  
Co-Opstore so they pick me out for manager. In 1966,  
we started the little store and I get hired to be manager  
Co-Opstore in 1967, so I'm still being manager.



G. Puben

1 I won't go some place else  
2 and get better job. When I get hired, I turn them  
3 down because I like this land. I know where I can go in  
4 this part just like anybody else. Some people live in  
5 Tuk, they're born. They like the land because they're  
6 born and know what to do. So anyway, that's what I  
7 did.

8 I can say I just find out  
9 when my parents get here to talk about after I was  
10 born, maybe they stay few years, so I realize we was  
11 living in Tom Cott Bay. My older brothers know where  
12 they started from, so I'm going to let them explain  
13 to you fellows where they started from.

14 Anyway, from that time after  
15 1959 after Dew Line was going for a while people is  
16 working, now they are all coming back. The people that  
17 used to live around here before.

18 I don't really know what else  
19 to say, but I were right in the coastline too just  
20 like anybody else like in Tuk or Banks Island, Holman  
21 Island. Now, our concern is if the sea spoiled by  
22 oil spill. What we're going to get out of it. We're  
23 going to probably have to leave the sea altogether to  
24 make our living.

25 When the company that's going  
26 to do that work, when they're showing what they're going  
27 to do, it looks O.K. but they didn't ever do it before  
28 from my knowledge. If they don't do it before, how  
29 they know it's going to happen like that? They just put it,  
30 that's the way they going to work it. Sure. I believe



G. Ruben

1 that's the way they're going to work it but what about  
2 if something happened? So, if something happened,  
3 we're going to lose all the seals, all the polar bears,  
4 fish. There might be some, but later on if they die off,  
5 we can't depend on that part of the land.

6 look So I think from my feeling  
7 we should at people's used to live from way back until  
8 today. We're still depending on the land. Now,  
9 there's some companies doing seismic work right up  
10 here. They started that work last fall and workers  
11 used to come right from that direction and we was kind  
12 of afraid. We call them in for meeting in here, and of  
13 course hunters and trappers say they should shut off at  
14 the first day of March.

15 THE COMMISSIONER: Should shut  
16 off seismic?

17 THE WITNESS: Seismic, yes.  
18 Before caribou start migrating. The last one I hear  
19 about a week ago. They say they're going to keep  
20 working until the tenth, which is yesterday. The only  
21 way I can find out is call Lands and Forests or our  
22 Game Management of Inuvik to see that they are on  
23 their way back.

24 When we used to fly with  
25 planes, we don't see any lines around here. Now, when  
26 you fly with plane, you see the lines as far as your  
27 eyes can see which is strange to us like.

28 In few years, you might be  
29 coming more and more and more and more. So, we get  
30 no power to stop it. Maybe we can only talk about it



1 but everybody's feeling is we have to call somebody's  
2 who know more than us.

3 Last year, two years ago, they  
4 do some experimenting on discharging the crude oil on  
5 Balaena Bay?

6 THE COMMISSIONER: Where's  
7 Balaena Bay on your map?

8 THE WITNESS: It's right  
9 across Dew Line site. It's right here someplace. It's  
10 all covered with marks so I can't find it.

11 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes.

12 THE WITNESS: It's right in  
13 here anyway. Right across Dew Line side someplace there.  
14 We say "O.K., we cross that little bay", is small  
15 little bay and they're going to do some experimenting  
16 there. So they do that work and springtime come  
17 they're still there. Trappers used to pass by there  
18 and see them once in a while. While they were working  
19 there yet, I went to Inuvik and I met Louis and she  
20 told me say "What's this about discharging oil out on  
21 the Beaufort Sea?" I say "What's that? I never hear  
22 about it?"

23 After that, we had meeting  
24 with some guys and they say, "We misunderstood". But  
25 I'm sure I didn't hear it. If I misunderstood, somebody  
26 else would hear it. Then we would try to find out  
27 and some trappers was at Cape Parry and they start  
28 seeing helicopters bringing something out, and Tony  
29 come and he tell me, "O.K., I want what they're doing  
30 up there?" When I get back I tell them they're supposed





1 to spill some fuel out there. Did you know about it?"

2 So anyway, they did. They  
3 do some -- I don't know if they're picking up the oil  
4 oil. We don't know where it went. That's really small  
5 thing according to what they talk about. If they drill  
6 out in Beaufort Sea, if something happen, always start  
7 coming out of sea. I don't think there's any way you  
8 can pick that up because even though you put a skirt  
9 on, according to what they tell us, they're going to  
10 put skirt and stop the oil from moving. What about the  
11 sea? It's always moving. That skirting wouldn't help  
12 because when sea gets rough, the waves will get as high  
13 as 20, 30 feet.

14 So, for what we know, we  
15 used to travel with boats. We used to go by dogteam  
16 or skidoos now, in the ice. When the ice is moving,  
17 there's no way you can stop it because it's too much  
18 as far as the eyes can see. It's moving. It's crushing  
19 the other ice.

20 So, I think if suppose somebody  
21 drilling out there, the boat is not touching to the  
22 bottom. It's anchored solid enough. I don't think  
23 it's solid enough for any kind of ice movement because  
24 that polar ice -- every few years, that polar ice come  
25 right to the bay here and it never melt in summer.  
26 That ice, it's so heavy when you go boating around it,  
27 it's so deep down the ice get blue. You can't see how  
28 deep it is.

29 Two years ago, when we had  
30 that ice here, it never melt. It stays there for one



G. Ruben  
P. Green

1 year and next year, it go away. It's not first time it  
2 really happened. It used to happen before this.

3 So, I think from what I know,  
4 if the island is small enough, the ice will push them  
5 off, move it.

6 If this seismic keep coming  
7 this way and destroy some lake which they never do  
8 now, from what I hear. They never do any blasting in  
9 the lakes, but there's always something that's left over.  
10 So, we don't really know what to say, but we sure like  
11 to see our land not destroyed through that because we  
12 depend on it. We depend on it for our living.

13 So, I think I'm not the only  
14 one here, I'm going to get somebody else to take over  
15 for a while. Later, I can come back and say a few  
16 more things. You'd like to come up for a while?

17 THE COMMISSIONER: O.K., thank  
18 you Mr. Ruben. Thank you very much.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

19 PETER GREEN, sworn:

20 WITNESS GREEN: Mr. Berger,  
21 ladies and gentlemen, my name is Peter Green and I was  
22 born here in Paulatuk in 1944. Most of you people here  
23 that are sitting in this room knows what this Inquiry  
24 is all about, but most of us people that are living  
25 here in Paulatuk has never heard of Mr. Berger and his  
26 Inquiry, until lately.

27 People here has always tried  
28 to keep well informed of what is going on between the  
29 governments and the oil company people. We are very  
30 much concerned because we people here live off the land.



P. Green

1 We depend on it to make our living like the people that  
2 does down south.

3 The people down south as I  
4 understood and read about and have seen for myself  
5 personally on some trips that I made down south has  
6 a way of life that is very different to the way of  
7 life that we have here.

8 Later on in this Inquiry, I  
9 will elaborate more on that but I will come back to  
10 the introduction of myself. I said earlier that I  
11 was born here in Paulatuk and I went to school in  
12 Aklavik. Aklavik was very much to me a city. A city  
13 because at that time I came out of Paulatuk and went  
14 to a place where there was electricity. There was  
15 running water and there were very huge buildings.

16 In my stay in Aklavik, I have  
17 learned ways of the white man. There was no way that  
18 they were teaching the things that I have left behind  
19 or any of the skills that we people had, my people had.  
20 They taught us in that school a way of life that is  
21 very different than the one I just came out of.

22 For instance, the language  
23 there was very strange to me. I have never spoken  
24 English before but ever since I have gone to the  
25 school in Aklavik, I have learned to speak the white  
26 man's way. I have lost my own language because of that.  
27 The system of education at that time was brought up  
28 from the south and still is today. It was never meant  
29 and suited to our needs as Inuit people, as Eskimo  
30 people. They have never included as part of the





P. Green

1 curriculum our own language, which is the basic thing  
2 of our way of life.

3 If that system is going to  
4 carry on today, then I don't think very much of our  
5 way of life will survive. If people and the government  
6 and other people are not responding to our request  
7 to keep on or to keep some of our ways, then our  
8 culture won't be very much to look at. People would  
9 not be the way that we have been living in the past.

10 I'd like to go back to my  
11 school days because this is where I have learned some  
12 of your way of life and as you can see, it has made  
13 a very drastic effect on myself. I will elaborate on  
14 that as we go along.

15 Mr. Berger, I think you have  
16 heard comments before on the education system. For  
17 one thing, it has never been tailored or suited to our  
18 needs as Inuit people. If we are sending our children  
19 today to the schools that we have now, even the school  
20 that you are in, we can't expect the children to go  
21 back, or rather, to live the lifestyle that we have.  
22 They would lose quite a bit of interest in our way  
23 of life, surviving off the land.

24 I'm sure that some of you  
25 people has realized this and today we still don't see  
26 any drastic changes or any changes in the school  
27 curriculum. I have been brought up here in Paulatuk  
28 and I have travelled quite extensively for my age and  
29 as a person of my nature. I'm saying that I am an Eskimo  
30 and I have done -- I have seen what's here in the



P. Green

territories and I have also seen the way of life that the southern people have.

It has drawn on me lately that although you people, the government, especially this Inquiry has taken some concern about what the minority group of people and that's saying the natives, has to say <sup>in</sup> trying to preserve or trying to retain what we have as Inuit and native people.

You have heard statements made by the earlier speaker saying how life was here in Paulatuk. I for myself cannot say very much because I have not lived as long as they have. I hope later on in this Inquiry, other people, older people, will speak up and say how life was and how it used to be in the past.

Lately in Paulatuk, our life-styles has becoming somewhat influenced by the influx of southern made goods and of people. I can recall ten to 15 years ago or maybe later here in Paulatuk the people used to travel by dogteam. It used to be the only way of transportation. The only way to go out hunting and trapping and fishing and so on. But now today, some -- a lot of the dogteams are gone and now we have the southern made material which is a skidoo.

I realize that times are changing, but changing because the influence from the south has gotten a hold of a lot of our way of life. If it wasn't for the skidoo or the southern made materials, maybe today people would be still travelling



P. Green

1 by dogteam instead of depending on the skidoo. It's  
2 the same thing with other commodities as well. Clothing  
3 for instance. Clothing that has been brought from the  
4 south.

5 A lot of our old clothing now  
6 maybe become a thing of the past because they are  
7 exchanged for material that is made and manufactured  
8 by the white people -- by the white man.

9 But here today, most of our  
10 clothing as you can see, our travelling clothing is  
11 still made here in this settlement. People are making  
12 very good need of the resources that we have here.  
13 Caribou, for instance.

14 Caribou to us as clothing has  
15 always been a very important aspect of our way of life.  
16 That's only for one aspect. There <sup>are</sup> many others which  
17 I will describe as we go on.

18 Many people today does not  
19 speak very freely their own language because of the  
20 influence that white man brought. As you can tell, I  
21 and other older people as well, does not speak our  
22 own tongue. I have explained -- I have partly explained  
23 the reason why it was being so.

24 Of the implements and tools  
25 that our people used to use, are now sitting in a lot  
26 of museums and places where it's put up for show so  
27 that people can see from the outside and people here  
28 as well. That change is very much expected because  
29 we are no longer in the 18th century and we realize  
30 that. We are expecting changes every day of our lives



P. Green

1 here. Changes that might affect us to the extent that  
2 it might change our way of life. Changes that might  
3 affect us to the way of life that the older people had  
4 but Mr. Berger, we don't want changes that will entirely  
5 destroy our way of life as Eskimo people or Inuit  
6 people.

7 Mr. Ruben has been talking  
8 about what effect the oil companies had in this area  
9 here. These are the oil companies that has been  
10 consulting with the government to go ahead and do  
11 exploration work. To go ahead and do seismic work.  
12 To go ahead and do studies. To go ahead and do all  
13 kinds of exploration that the government had requested  
14 them to do. I've stated earlier in one of my talks  
15 with C.B.C. saying that the oil company along with  
16 the Federal Government and governments are working  
17 hand in hand.

18 I'm saying this because I know  
19 that for a fact. No one can deny that. The  
20 government and the oil companies are just like one  
21 big company working together.

22 We are not only scared of  
23 losing a culture of our own. We have experienced  
24 what your way of life as white people are. There, I've  
25 stated many times, there is a big difference in that.  
26 One hell of a big difference.

27 If you people has read or  
28 talked about or seen on newspapers or television or  
29 any kind of new media on how we people live, it's  
30 often distorted because the people that wrote them or





F. Green

1 said things about the Eskimo people has never lived it.  
 2 I'm tired of hearing governments, the oil company  
 3 people saying -- and resource people as well saying,  
 4 "We are the experts. You tell us what and how your  
 5 way of life is and we'll judge it from our standpoint  
 6 of view". I say, that's all hogwash now because it's  
 7 no longer the government people or the oil companies  
 8 or any research type people that are the expert. This  
 9 is no longer so.

10 You'll hear later on in this  
 11 Inquiry of who are the masters. Who are the experts  
 12 on this very land that you people are sitting on now.  
 13 I'm saying that we, the Inuit people, consider our-  
 14 selves to be experts when people are doing, let's say,  
 15 research, exploration and so on to consult with.  
 16 We are the experts because we know how animal behavior  
 17 is, how weather changes might affect their patterns  
 18 and so on. We are the people to consult with, because  
 19 we are the ones that has been and are living here in  
 20 this land.

21 Mr. Berger, a few weeks ago,  
 22 we had an oil company meeting here and that happened  
 23 to be Mobil Oil. They are doing seismic work close  
 24 to our vicinity here at Paulatuk. We have asked them  
 25 to meet us because they are in the migration pass of  
 26 the caribou. Caribou which we people largely depend  
 27 on for our meat, skin for the clothing, sinews to make  
 28 thread and also bones to make some of the implements  
 29 that <sup>people</sup> make now and then.

We have asked them to come here



L. Green

1 and talk to us about how they going to do this work.  
2 We have sat down with them and talked with them very  
3 reasonably as how we wanted them to work in that area.  
4 We've also put in the clause where they are to be out  
5 of there at the certain date. That certain date was  
6 chosen by us hunters and trappers here in Paulatuk  
7 because for one thing, it coincides with the migration  
8 of the caribou.

9 Then another because by that  
10 time, a large influx is expected to be in that area  
11 and that's caribou. We have asked them very nicely  
12 to come out of that area, to get of there altogether  
13 before or on the first of March.

14 We have sent a letter to  
15 people that can do something for us. A copy was sent  
16 to COPE, another to John Steen of the Territorial  
17 Council and a letter was sent to the Fish and Wildlife  
18 Services in Inuvik. This letter also stated why and  
19 the conditions that the oil company had to get out  
20 from that area.

21 To date, we have seen<sup>no</sup> positive  
22 results from that request at the people, that the  
23 hunters and trappers made from Paulatuk. We are very  
24 discouraged to see this kind of thing going on. It  
25 does not only hurt us people, it also shows to us  
26 people that nobody gives a damn about how our way of  
27 life is here in Paulatuk and elsewhere in the north.

28 They didn't give a damn  
29 because they are after certain things that we have here  
30 as resources, and no one can rightly say, even I myself



P. Green

1 cannot say that we stop this kind of development.

2 We people are for development  
3 but development has to be done according to our terms.  
4 If certain guidelines were set up by the people that  
5 lives here in this country, then maybe certain types  
6 of development can go on. If not, if no consultation  
7 is done with the Inuit people or the Eskimo people that  
8 lives here, then forget about the thing because it will  
9 for one thing, it will be a failure.

10 A failure to both, maybe the  
11 government, to the oil company, and worst of all, to  
12 the people that lives here in Paulatuk. People have  
13 stated before how the Beaufort Sea might affect us.  
14 I like to say that it might indirectly affect us.  
15 Indirectly, because the area is a distance away.  
16 Directly because the animals which we depend on comes  
17 from that same water, same body of water.

18 We depend on it for our seals,  
19 for the fish and all birds that uses that same body  
20 of water.

21 We've had meetings, many  
22 meetings, with an oil company that was doing an  
23 experimental oil spill. I think Mr. Ruben has stated  
24 before that it was held in Balaena Bay. We were  
25 for it at that time because to our knowledge, we  
26 said "O.K., if they are going to do a small spill there",  
27 it was O.K. with us. We saw and we were invited to go  
28 over a few times to look over the program.

29 It looked good at first but  
30 then after they have left, we saw the results of that





P. Green

1 experiment.

2 Mr. Berger, we are not happy  
3 with that kind of experiments. These kind of things  
4 should have been done for the environment, and the  
5 water is not dependent on people or rather, people  
6 are not dependent on the waters and the sea.

7 It should have been done  
8 where people are less dependent on marine life. We're  
9 no longer interested to hear any proposal from any  
10 form of people, whether they be government or the oil  
11 explorations and so on. We're not prepared any more  
12 to hear proposals that will do the same things that  
13 they have been doing previously.

14 We are becoming tired of  
15 hearing proposals from the oil companies to do an  
16 experiment, to do seismic work, to do any kind of  
17 exploration here in Paulatuk. You don't know how  
18 much or how bad we feel about oil companies going  
19 ahead to do certain types of work without directly  
20 consulting people of what these might be.

21 Take for example that seismic  
22 work out there, we were consulted all right. How long  
23 did they give us? One day. It was enough to us  
24 people that are living here and are depending off the  
25 land to say "No, you can't go ahead". Everything was  
26 prepared on paper by the government saying that it  
27 was O.K. for this oil company to go into Paulatuk and  
28 do the seismic work. I didn't mean to say Paulatuk  
29 but it's our area, so anywhere where people are travel-  
30 ling now today, we consider it ours.



P. Green

1                   Mr. Berger, I think you have  
2 heard a lot of concerns about the land and the waters  
3 since your Inquiry began. I've stated earlier that  
4 we people of Paulatuk has been left out in a lot  
5 of things that your Inquiry has been doing. When I  
6 say that is that maybe books or debates has been  
7 written on what your Inquiry has been doing. Many  
8 people here don't read, and radio reception being very  
9 poor, is the result of my saying that we people has  
10 been left out in a lot of things that you have been  
11 doing.

12                   I myself has not been prepared  
13 for this. I am saying things that are coming out of  
14 my mind at this moment. Saying things that are related  
15 to the way of life that we have. I don't like coming  
16 in front of people with a prepared speech. A piece of  
17 paper saying what I have to say. When I say things,  
18 I'd like to say it straight out of what is coming out  
19 of my mind at that time. I don't like the way govern-  
20 ment do things. It's the same thing.

21                   Everything is well prepared on  
22 paper so people can see it or read it or whatever, but  
23 it doesn't mean a damn thing to us because we people,  
24 most of us people can't read or write. We people  
25 really depend off the land and water.

26                   People here in Paulatuk has  
27 been hunting and trapping and fishing and living the  
28 way of life that we have today. Mr. Berger, we don't  
29 want to lose that way of life. For many years now,  
30 as far as I can recall, game was always plentiful.



P. Green

Paulatuk was chosen for people to live in because it is a good area to live off. We have caribou in the hills. We have fish in the lakes and in the rivers and in the ocean. We have all kinds of animals that we depend on. Our way of life is dependent on these very things that the oil companies are threatening to destroy.

When I say "threatening", is they are going ahead to extract many resources that we people could use as well as other people in the south.

I have stated many times, Mr. Berger that if this kind of exploration is going to be done, -- I have stated many times, Mr. Berger, if this kind of exploration is going to be done, the people involved, whether again it be government or private enterprises, or the oil companies, consult more with the inhabitants, with the people that are dependent on the land and on the water.

In the past, and it's still being practised today in many places, technical people, the people that are doing the research are not involving local people. Why? I've stated before and I'll state it again that we people consider ourselves to be the experts in all fields in all aspects of the land and of the sea.

We are tired of people coming into this country, gathering information by themselves, compiling it, without showing it to the people that are directly living here and I'm saying it for the whole



P. Green

1 north. We have never seen any published material or  
2 anything that was prepared by a lot of people, technical  
3 people, the big research people that are funded largely  
4 by the Federal Government to carry on these programs.

5 It's about time that maybe  
6 the government, the oil exploration people, private  
7 enterprises, anybody that comes here to this land  
8 consult and inform people of what they are about to do.

9 Our way of life here has been  
10 a very good way of life compared to the way of life  
11 and to a degree that you people have in the south. I  
12 have said earlier that I have seen what your way of life  
13 was all about during my visits to many of the cities  
14 and southern places.

15 I have sat down many times  
16 and thought over the differences, the distinction  
17 between my people's way of life and your way of life.  
18 It's pretty hard for me to say that your way of life  
19 is superior. Superior in a sense that you people have  
20 all the technology and so on.

21 But, Mr. Berger, I would prefer  
22 the Inuit way of life. Our way of life. We are not  
23 run or we are not running by the clock on the wall or  
24 the wristwatch on my wrist. We people at one time  
25 were nomads. We have done a lot of travelling.  
26 Travelling to keep ourselves along with our families  
27 in tune to the migrating animals. Depending again,  
28 on the time of season.

29 But now with the transportation  
30 that we have, we no longer go from one area to another





L. Green

1 unless we are gone for a two or three day hunt and  
2 we always come back to the settlement where we live now.

3 I have noticed during my  
4 visits south many things which I will try to describe.  
5 For one thing, I have stepped out of a car from the  
6 airplane or rather, I took an airplane and then I  
7 took a taxi and I went downtown in one of your cities.  
8 This happened to be Winnipeg. I came out of the car  
9 and the first thing that hit me was the exhaust fumes  
10 from the cars.

11 It struck me right there and  
12 then that my country has never been like this and now  
13 I will say I hope it will never be that way. That  
14 fume just hit my lungs and I could feel it in my head  
15 for the time that I was spending down there.

16 There is a big difference in  
17 the kind of air that we breathe here.

18 Mr. Berger, I hope you  
19 appreciate that fact. Our way of life and the animals  
20 are very dependent too on that very air that we breathe.  
21 Your way of life down south as white people is a way  
22 of life that I myself would not want to live. We  
23 are people that are free to go hunting every day. We  
24 hunt because we have to hunt to survive.

25 Whereas, you people down south  
26 go to the supermarket to buy a pound of beef. We  
27 people are not used to that kind of life. We people  
28 go out to get the animal that we need for meat, for  
29 clothing and so on. We have always done that and we  
30 hope in the future that we can also be doing the same



P. Green

G. Ruben

1 thing that we have been doing.

2 Mr. Berger, I'm going to  
3 take some break now and maybe give the seat to someone  
4 else, but I will be back maybe later on this evening  
5 or if you're here tomorrow to finish off what I have  
6 to say.

7 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank  
8 you Mr. Green. Thank you very much.

9 (WITNESS ASIDE)

10 GARRET RUBEN, resumed:

11 WITNESS RUBEN: We just have  
12 one long distance line here and I even forgot who  
13 told me, so if there's emergencies or anything like  
14 that to call, we just come here and tell them and they  
15 going to give us the line for a while. Thank you.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

16 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 3:25 P.M.)  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30



1 (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED AT 4:40 P.M.)

2  
3 THE COMMISSIONER: We'll  
4 come to order, ladies and gentlemen. From the others --  
5 the others who want to say something, just come ahead,  
6 come forward, and if two or three want to sit there  
7 together, that's fine with me. Sometimes that helps  
8 you to remember things.

9 EDWARD RUBEN, sworn:

10 THE WITNESS: Well, Mr. Berger,  
11 I don't know how much I can do for our country. I would  
12 like to say a few words, and if the people, if they  
13 can understand what I'm saying; and also I've never  
14 been in school, like when you've never been in school,  
15 you are like blind. Even you look at letters, and  
16 when you can't read it, it's something, it's hard for  
17 a person; but I think we have to, I think about time  
18 we have to talk for our country, for living.

19 I was born 1917, first of  
20 May, Edward Ruben, and I would like to talk about the  
21 way I lived before white people, very very white  
22 people, before they started coming north. We used to  
23 go by footing, hunting for our food, packing  
24 for many miles, cover so many miles just by foot, and  
25 we used to have packing dogs, and for me, and for our  
26 clothing, and we used to go not for one day, for three  
27 days. We used to go away for weeks, after weeks, until  
28 we get enough to -- something to take home to our  
29 family.

It's still enjoy our life,





1 you know, how we live, how we're doing, and our  
2 land, so, like from today, it's hard to understand  
3 when you look back, how you pass all these years, but  
4 we always get by. Some years it's hard.

5 When we first came and -- oh  
6 excuse me -- maybe I can point right from where I  
7 was born. I was born, well it's not on this map, but  
8 I can point it, it's out here somewhere. About 40 miles  
9 north of Tuktoyaktuk, that's where I was born. When I  
10 started good enough to know and go with my dad, and  
11 start big enough to understand to help my mum, and  
12 my younger brother and sisters, and we used to live  
13 there for years. Sometimes my dad used to take us  
14 up to delta area for rat hunting or duck hunting,  
15 things like that, rabbits.

16 When the summer comes, he  
17 used to take us with our schooner up to Aklavik, and  
18 until the state boat came -- I don't know, I forget  
19 exactly where it used to start from, anyways, once  
20 a year, we used to get out once a year. We always  
21 think -- thought -- I mean like once a year, we thought,  
22 that's not too far, it's only 12 miles. Now really  
23 at the sometime, people get mail once a year, in my  
24 time, we don't have like street stuff, and like toys,  
25 and stuff like that, and a lot of things we don't have.  
26 But like any kind of flour or a lot of other things,  
27 and people already had it before I was born.

28 So after that, we used to  
29 come back to where we were staying, and get things,  
30 and try to get things ready for winter again, and in



our time, our dogs, like more important than anything else, because that's the only things we can use for our travel, hunting, trapping and fishing. And after a few years, we moved east. That first year, we are still in winter, down by Langton Bay, nobody around, and I was pretty well next to oldest, and there -- a brother of mine, Johnny, he's here right now, he's crippled, it's one of the oldest family. And my sister, Suzy, is the next, I was third.

So, we have to do something to help our people, and our parents. When we start big enough to help for hunting or for work and travelling and fishing, or hauling wood, or things like that. So we spend our -- a long time, and after that we moved to Tom Cott Bay, and that time, when we started living in Tom Cott Bay, and can't tell you fellows how far we used to travel with dogs. This area, there was no caribou at all when we first came to this area. And we have to go with dogs, take us day after day, and it's the only place we used to find caribou from this area.

Like, how much can you haul, only using four or five dogs? How much you can bring? That's how we lived, when I was young. And pretty soon, after a few years, start old enough to start cover more country, myself, Johnny, and my younger brother Bill. Then we decide to trap up the Horton River. We used to follow across the ocean, and at Langton Bay, follow the beach, we used to climb that and head for Horton River.

And at the same time, look for



1 a good fishing lake, and start fishing under the ice  
2 same time. Then, when we get old enough, we started  
3 go by ourselves, and we used to leave our dad behind,  
4 you know, like let him watch the home, like hauling  
5 ice, hauling wood, and fishing close to home. And  
6 ourselves, we used to cover quite a bit of area,  
7 looking for better lakes, better hunting, and better  
8 trapping.

9 Then after that, the move  
10 to Paulatuk, and most of us, after we get married,  
11 we start spreads around, and I guess anybody, when  
12 they get married, you've got to figure , you've  
13 got to deal and live, quit depending on your parents  
14 anymore, you've got to raise up your family, by your  
15 own will, and you go start hunting by yourself, trap  
16 by yourself, fish by yourself, and besides, you watch  
17 family same time, and before you leave, like when we  
18 decide to go for two weeks, three weeks or a month,  
19 you've got to get things ready before we leave. Like  
20 haul wood, find the game as much as you can for home.

21 We don't use coal, we don't  
22 use fuel, using driftwood. House made of driftwood,  
23 we call sod houses. That's the kind of house we used  
24 to live. And, we don't have like today , we don't  
25 use electric light. You can't put the bulb in and light  
26 your light. We have to use coal oil lamp, or candles,  
27 a gas lamp at the big light, so I've been going  
28 through that life, so after that, our younger brothers  
29 and sisters, when they get old enough, they begin to  
have more help, more helpers. And when we want to



1 move somewhere, okay, let's get together, move the  
2 family. Which way you want to go, you know. So,  
3 we survive<sup>off</sup> our land, and after that, like, our area,  
4 when the family grow up, we're going to have more  
5 area to cover, by trapping, fishing, hunting, and also  
6 our ocean. Now, what, like specially, like when you  
7 start getting older, you won't be hunters like you used.  
8 When your age about 20 or 25, after 30, I would say,  
9 when I was about after 30 or 40 years old, I would  
10 say I was still healthy enough to do my work, and my  
11 hunting, and cover area. So then after that, I started  
12 working for the DEW Line, like I leave my family for  
13 all these years. I was on the line, I would say I  
14 worked one week, 16 long years. I leave my family for  
15 16 long years.

16 I don't even know how they  
17 survive, all these years while I was working. We  
18 did our own work, we do their mine for less, to feed  
19 the family. Now today, what make us think twice,  
20 our water -- ocean, our hunting area, like when  
21 Imperial Oil started, and you know maybe hurt something,  
22 it's hard to understand. But the world it changes,  
23 everything, it changes so fast.

24 Now we have to look up to what  
25 we work for, for our family, trying to survive off the  
26 land. Like, when you live in the north, survive off  
27 the land, or live off what you catch, foxes, coloured  
28 foxes, or wolverines, wolves and things like that,  
29 my family if it gets short of something, do you think  
30 I'm going to put a little note, write the paper, and





Edward Ruben

1 what I want and send it out, you think I'm going to  
2 get this? No. So you have to keep trying, until you  
3 get something. If you have no luck, you might have  
4 short of a lot of things. And at that time, I would  
5 say that 1948, '49, fuel was low. Where you going to  
6 get warm from, if you have hard luck in one day? How  
7 you going to get stuff what you want with \$8.00?  
8 That's make you thinking more, how you're going to  
9 feed my family with \$8.00? No way. You've got to try  
10 something else. Something else what you can get, off  
11 the land.

12 Now I'd say today, our life  
13 soft, we're used to it. Like we used to go through  
14 a lot of hard life. Like, we don't use gas stove  
15 either, we use coal oil primer stove, Coleman, and we've  
16 got to have a needle to open it up every time, they flap  
17 upon you, and then you can't light it. So, that's the  
18 kind of life I go through, and like, what I was trying  
19 to say before, now a couple of years now, it's hard  
20 enough for our ocean hunting, for our seals, and two  
21 years now, we couldn't get hardly nothing from  
22 right from Cape Parry, right by Pearce Point, right  
23 to the bottom of the bay here. And about ten years  
24 ago, and some of my brothers told me, when I come back  
25 from the DEW Line, and he say he used to go out from  
26 Paulatuk in the morning, he don't even go half way  
27 between Pearce Point and Paulatuk. Load up the boat  
28 and come home, unload, and go out again. Get that much  
29 more. In the evening when they come back, they used  
30 to get about average from 20 to 28 seals a day. Today,



even last summer, I was out right to Letty Harbour, with the other hunters, and when we started from Paulatuk, we camped at Looksit(?)<sup>Island</sup>, and next day go out to Letty Harbour. We'd be lucky if we see a couple of seals a day. One week we had about 18 seals altogether. I would say that's bad enough.

Like, when we are survive out of our country, it's hard. You've got to go -- you've got to try hard, going through a lot of thinking, and after that, we used to hunt all these areas behind Pearce Point, (inaudible) , Paulatuk, and the peninsula, and goes way up to here. And that's why if you could help it, we want to protect our area, and when we found this fishing area on the Horton River, and when we found fishing from river, we have good reason to stop our fishing from the lakes, in case some years it was weather was bad, it happened that fish go down for a year or two, then I can say, we can go back to our lakes, we never, fishing from these lakes for years. Like I would say that's our credit, like.

If we don't get any from river, then we can always go and find them, we know exactly where to go and where they are. Not the same kind of fish, but lake trouts, whitefish, some other fishes, you know. So that's why I try and speak up myself before it's too late. We want to protect our country, our hunting area, our fishing area, like seals, and that's why it makes us think twice about the ocean, because fishes always run by the beach here, all around. Like, where we call this



1 like Arctic char, like bluebags, and also, every fall,  
2 blue herrings, there always big runs on this coast  
3 here. You can get it by thousands, and still we always  
4 need it, like you know, because we're using char today.  
5 And that's why, if you could help it, like the way  
6 you're talking about seismic, start come to our area,  
7 that's why it make us kind of worried. Not for us,  
8 but for our family. What is coming up?

9 So, I think, we're going to  
10 have to do something for our country. We've got to  
11 talk for our people. Especially our children which  
12 are coming up. Like, I would say, okay what if children  
13 from everywhere, from Paulatuk, Tuktoyaktuk, Sachs  
14 Harbour, or any other place; all our children going  
15 to school today, sure to learn lot of the good things.  
16 Reading, writing, comes to education, but even if you  
17 get a good education by reading and writing, and if  
18 they can't find a job, if they aren't going to survive  
19 like ourselves, I would say no. No one can't survive  
20 like ourselves.

21 Like, I used to see a few  
22 young fellows, if you are hiking out about 10 miles  
23 out of settlement, you can tell them, "okay, take a  
24 match, light the fire. How? How I'm going to do it?  
25 Where's the wood?" Well, you got to learn how to survive  
26 off the land, like for fishing, fishing under the ice,  
27 fishing in summertime -- summer is easy. Like, when  
28 I was young, I used to think, when spring comes, like  
29 maybe in May, I'll start confident. You don't need  
30 your Arctic gear. It seems like you forget everything.





Edward Ruben

1                   You don't think next year's  
2 going to be coming up again. So, that's why we have  
3 to learn something, look ahead. That's my idea.  
4 We don't have to look back, trying to think what's  
5 covered, no. We have to look ahead, to how we're  
6 going to be tomorrow, a week, a month. So, we have to  
7 think ahead for our life.

8                   Another thing I would say,  
9 like we have to protect our land, our country, our  
10 trapping area, hunting area, fishing area. Like, most  
11 of us up here, we don't have jobs, like still it's  
12 hard for some of our people. Like when you have a  
13 steady job, when he's had a steady job, it's okay. He  
14 can buy, you know, and like when you are a trapper or  
15 a hunter, when everything comes to you, phone bills,  
16 income tax, a lot of other things, like I can say,  
17 I can't put my hands in my pocket, pull out the money  
18 and pay for what I owe. You've got to work for it.  
19 You've got to hunt for it. You've got to suffer for it.

20                   So, today, still, we're trying  
21 to work for our living. We want to protect our  
22 country, especially for our fishing and hunting and  
23 trapping area. I don't have much more to say. If  
24 I missed out something else that I meant, I can come  
25 back and say a few more words. Thank you.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

26                   THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
27                   very much. Maybe we can <sup>have</sup> one more person before we do.  
28 We've got a little more time before supper, so if  
29 someone else would like to speak, before we stop for  
supper, we could hear you now, listen to you now.



HORA RUBEN

1                    NORA RUBEN, sworn:

2                    THE WITNESS: I don't mean  
3 to disturb anybody by being a woman, but I would sure  
4 appreciate saying something too.

5                    Well Mr. Berger, I'm very  
6 glad to have this seat, and to have the privilege to  
7 say a few words to you. As I sit or read the meetings  
8 here and there, and which I get a little experience  
9 of what I read or listen, I have come to give and  
10 speak out how I feel about this.

11                   Being an Eskimo, not a hunter  
12 nor a trapper, but part of it as a housekeeper, the  
13 way I feel, of all what I heard, at meetings, and the  
14 big thing that they are trying to do in the Beaufort  
15 Sea, which is really part of our life, even though  
16 we don't have the experience of what they're really  
17 going to do -- the big drilling -- they are looking  
18 forward to, makes us feel like orphanage. As the sea  
19 is laying there, we look at it, we feed from it, and  
20 we're really part of it.

21                   As we think day by day, these  
22 people are really damaging our life, the way we feel.  
23 We lived on it ever since we were born, and we're  
24 really part of it. This is our land we lived on, and  
25 we want to keep living from it. What they are trying  
26 to do with us, the Eskimos, the whole north, they  
27 should feel ashamed of what they are trying to do, not  
28 only to the land, but also with the Inuit people. We  
29 don't want to be just taken out.

What I'd like really to say is



Dora Eulen  
Nelson Green

1 give us a chance, to educate the younger ones, forget  
2 the Beaufort Sea, leave it alone, rest it for some  
3 years, for ten years, for twenty years; give these  
4 young peoples that are coming up, give them a chance  
5 to have their part of education so that they'll be  
6 able to be out there working on it, and really be  
7 responsible for their own land, which we don't want  
8 other peoples just to go in there and destroy it.  
9 Maybe if they give us a chance to educate these  
10 younger ones, that's their land, maybe they think they  
11 have the responsible for it, and they can do whatever  
12 best they can do on it.

13 So, this is what I really  
14 wanted to say, so I'm very glad to say a word with  
15 you Mr. Berger.

16 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you.  
17 Thank you very much ma'am.

18 (WITNESS ASIDE)

19  
20 NELSON GREEN, sworn:

21 Mr. Berger, do you have  
22 a sociologist that can tell us about the possible  
23 effects the pipeline may have on the social life? I've  
24 read in the papers a few things about the Alaskan  
25 pipeline, the effects it has. Did you bring  
26 a sociologist?

27 THE COMMISSIONER: I didn't  
28 bring one here, at least I didn't bring one, but COPE  
29 may have brought one. If -- let me just say something  
about that before we stop for supper. The -- I've been



N. Green

1 to Alaska to see what has happened in Alaska with  
2 the building of the oil pipeline. In Alaska they're  
3 building an oil pipeline to take oil from the Arctic  
4 to the -- to Cook Inlet, and they're going to tanker  
5 it from there to the west coast of the United States.

6 The Alaska project is now  
7 about half way complete, and it's had, we are told  
8 a very great impact on the state of Alaska. One of  
9 the things you should remember about the Alaska pipeline  
10 though, is, it doesn't go through very many native  
11 villages. The pipeline that they want to build along  
12 the Mackenzie Valley to southern Canada goes by an  
13 awful lot of native villages, and it goes by some towns  
14 where native people and white people live.

15 In Alaska, the pipeline  
16 really doesn't go by very many native villages, it  
17 goes by a big city, a fairly big city, called Fairbanks,  
18 which has maybe 40,000 people, and it's made a great  
19 impact on that city. That's what we are told, and I  
20 had people that work for me go to Alaska and spend  
21 some time there to see what happened to the people that  
22 live in the state of Alaska, and when we get back where  
23 when we leave Paulatuk we're going to Arctic Red, and  
24 then back to Yellowknife, and next month in Yellowknife  
25 we'll have witnesses coming from Alaska to tell us  
26 about it.

27 We've already had some  
28 witnesses come from Alaska, to tell us what the impact  
29 has been on the people that live there. Now, I don't  
30 want to say any more than that about it because we're





1 still studying it, and it's something that we  
2 still don't have a complete picture about.

3 For instance, right now, where  
4 in all of these villages in the western Arctic; Holman,  
5 we've been to Holman, Tuk, Sachs, and Inuvik and  
6 Paulatuk; because we're trying to see what is going to  
7 happen here, to the Beaufort Sea, if the drilling  
8 occurs, if there's oil and gas exploration widespread  
9 throughout the western Arctic. We think we'll have  
10 a good idea by the time we leave Paulatuk today,  
11 because this pretty well completes our study of the  
12 impact of oil and gas exploration in the western  
13 Arctic. We'll have a pretty good idea of what the  
14 consequences will be.

15 When we get back to Yellowknife  
16 we'll be looking at the social impact, that is, what'll  
17 happen to the people who live in the path of the  
18 pipeline, who live right where the pipeline's going  
19 by. Now I've been to their villages along the river.  
20 I spent the whole summer visiting all those villages,  
21 and the people that live there are mostly Indian and  
22 Metis, and we heard them, what they thought would  
23 happen, what they were afraid of, what they wanted;  
24 and we're going back to one of the Indian villages on  
25 Saturday, Arctic Red, and that's right on the path of  
26 the pipeline, to hear what the people have to say there.

27 Later on tonight, if you want  
28 to, we could ask Mrs. -- I want to hear you people first,  
29 but later on tonight, if we have some extra time, maybe  
we could ask somebody from COPE just to say something



1 for five or ten minutes about Alaska, and maybe  
2 somebody from the pipeline companies to say something  
3 about Alaska. That's just so you people have an idea  
4 what they may have seen over there.

5 But we won't be studying that  
6 in detail until we get back to Yellowknife next month,  
7 so -- yes?

(WITNESS ASIDE)

8 ROSEMARY KIRBY, sworn:

9 THE WITNESS: Mr. BERger, I'd  
10 just like to say that my husband and I were in  
11 Alaska in the Christmas holidays, and we talked to --

12 THE COMMISSIONER: That's  
13 okay, you can just speak from there, and maybe we  
14 could have your name, I'm sorry.

15 THE WITNESS: I'm Rosemary  
16 Kirby.

17 THE COMMISSIONER: Right. And  
18 yours is Nelson Green? Right. Go ahead, we'll just --  
19 I'll just ask you all to solemnly declare that anything  
20 you say will be the truth, the whole truth and nothing  
21 but the truth, and if nobody disagrees with that, I'll  
22 take it that whatever anyone says from now on is the  
23 truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth.

24 (LAUGHTER)

25 So, carry on.

26 THE WITNESS: We were talking  
27 to some of the people there, and though the pipeline  
28 did not go through Anchorage, it had great effect from  
29 what we saw, from the year before. The price of living  
30 had gone almost twice as high, so it goes to show that



1 if there is any drilling done in the Northwest  
2 Territories the effect won't just hit along the river  
3 pipeline, but it would also affect people like us in  
4 small communities, where prices would go high sky.

5 THE COMMISSIONER: That's  
6 a problem, there's no question about the fact that  
7 there would be an increase in prices. How great it  
8 would be it's hard to say. We heard from a magistrate  
9 who came from Alaska to testify, at our hearings, and  
10 he lives in a small town along the route of the  
11 pipeline, I think it's called Glen Valley -- Glen Allen,  
12 and he said that the welders on the pipeline get  
13 something like \$4,000 a month after they've paid their  
14 taxes, and a lady who looks after the camp who makes  
15 the beds and so on, she gets about \$2,000 after she's  
16 paid her taxes, so the wages go up and the prices  
17 go up, that seems clear enough. How far it goes we  
18 don't know yet, and what you can do to stop the prices  
19 going up, we don't know the answer to that yet either.  
20 We'll try to look into it and then we'll have to report  
21 to the Government on it.

22 I don't know much about it  
23 as you can see, but that's because we haven't gone  
24 into that yet.

25 (WITNESS ASIDE)

26 NILSON GREEN, sworn:

27 THE WITNESS: So I understand  
28 it, we may not be in the direct path of the pipeline,  
29 but as I understand it, the pipeline gets first





Nelson Green

1 opportunity to buy supplies from other businesses.  
2 Now this will greatly affect us too, in that we get  
3 the second or third choices, there may not be enough  
4 supplies.

5 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, maybe  
6 later on tonight we'll ask the representatives of the  
7 pipeline company to say something about that, and I  
8 know they're here, and they might just remember that,  
9 and say something about it.

10 MR. BEER: : Excuse me  
11 Mr. Berger, I didn't hear their question clearly.

12 THE COMMISSIONER: This is  
13 Mr. Beer of Foothills.

14  
15 MR. BEER: I want to be  
16 able to respond to it, could we have the question  
17 repeated please?

18 THE COMMISSIONER: The question  
19 was this. Will the pipeline companies get first  
20 choice of all goods and services and the people that  
21 live up here be left with second or third choice. Will  
22 you get priority? The people at Sachs Harbour raised  
23 this last week. They said, there's only so many  
24 barges coming down the Mackenzie, because there's a  
25 shortage of barges, will the pipelines get all the  
26 barges and all the space in the barges so that there'll  
27 be no room left for the things the people need that  
28 live up here. I think that was one of the points  
29 that was made at Sachs Harbour. Well look, I'm doing  
30 all the talking, and I think that's a mistake, so



N. Green

1 maybe we'll stop now for supper, and come back at  
2 7:00. We'll all come back at 7:00 and carry on as late  
3 as you want to. Okay?

4 (WITNESS ASIDE)

5 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 5 P.M.)  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30



P. Green

(PROCEEDINGS RESUMED AT 7:35 P.M.)

THE COMMISSIONER: Ladies and gentlemen, I will call the hearing to order again and invite anyone who wishes to speak to come up here. I think that many of you feel that what you have to say is very serious and very important and it might be better if you sat up here and had a chance to talk in a measured way and at the same time what you say goes into these microphones and can be taken down by the people who are recording on tape so maybe we will go about it that way tonight.

At any rate just come up here and if two or three of you want to come up together that is fine with me.

PETER GREEN, resumed:

THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, I am on the stand again. When we left off this afternoon, Mr. Berger, I heard some comments from the floor here regarding the implications of what might happen if and when the pipeline went through. This is regarding the social impact of the pipeline.

At this stage I cannot accept or suggest that a pipeline be built. Hence, we or myself would not have any comments whatsoever regarding the social impact. It is not even going to be suggested as a topic during the talk that we have here.

THE COMMISSIONER: Okay, that's fine.

(WITNESS ASIDE)



Mrs. R. Kirby

1                    ROSEMARY KIRBY, sworn:

2  
3                    THE WITNESS: There is a trick  
4 about giving a speech. You take a deep breath first so  
5 you don't get nervous.

6                    Mr. Berger, I am Rosemary  
7 Kirby. I was born and raised here, well, part of my  
8 life. What I am going to say is not very long. It is  
9 a very, very short idea of what I think.

10                   There was a time after  
11 being raised in residential schools when an Eskimo  
12 person felt that they were useless. They were worthless,  
13 that what they were was something to be ashamed of and  
14 so we grew up to feel ashamed of being Eskimos, being  
15 ashamed of being Indian. But being raised through all  
16 that, I finally figured that even though I was ashamed  
17 to be Eskimo, there was a spark of something inside of  
18 me then and I am sure every hostel student today that  
19 has it, it's that.

20                   Every year when spring  
21 comes everybody wants to go -- all the Eskimo children,  
22 all the Indian children leave. And where do they go?  
23 They go back to the land and it shows very, very plainly  
24 the importance of the land for the Eskimo people, for  
25 the Indian people in the north.

26                   If you took a survey of  
27 the schools today, you are going to find that the  
28 biggest dropout you have is in the springtime.

29                   When a wolverine is  
30 cornered there is only one thing he does. And that is





J. Thrasher

1 to fight to survive to live and I feel that the Eskimo  
2 people, Indian people of the north-- well, basically  
3 the Eskimo people which I am concerned about are like  
4 trapped wolverines. And that the only way that they  
5 can give anything to the future of our generation is  
6 try to fight back for what they feel, what they want,  
7 what they think the future children need and I think  
8 deeply inside that this is probably the first occasion  
9 where we have had the opportunity to have someone  
10 fight for us. And Mr. Berger, I think you are the  
11 person and I will leave that on your conscience. Thank  
12 you very much.

13 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you.

14 (WITNESS ASIDE)

15  
16 JOE THRASHER, sworn:

17 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger,  
18 ladies and gentlemen, first I guess I will introduce  
19 myself. My name is Joe Thrasher. I was born up in  
20 Baillie Island. I guess I might look a little bit  
21 old for my age. I had my thirteenth birthday just  
22 a few days ago on the 29th of February.

23 When I was two years old,  
24 I was adopted by my grandparents and we lived between  
25 Baillie Island and Anderson and from then on to  
26 Lettie Harbour in 1930. It was quite a group of  
27 Eskimos at that time summering and wintering in this  
28 area and when spring comes everybody headed down south,  
29 what they call this place there. The spring hunt,  
30 everybody pitch tents down at the point down here,



J. Thrasher

1 there is a slope, there is a little hill there and it  
2 goes down there. There is a bunch of tents down  
3 below and one tent was on the top and the north wind  
4 came. It was really cold. I was eight years old then.  
5 I remember feeling cold in that big north wind.

6 So the people, there, they  
7 went up the river, find drift coal, that stuff you burn  
8 in the stove and make a lot of soot. So they brought  
9 that back with dog teams and they burned that in their  
10 stoves but the fellow on the south side of us had a  
11 nice clean tent there but the north wind brought all  
12 that soot to that tent and made it real black. So  
13 from then on we called this Paulatuk. It fit the name  
14 of this place.

15 I haven't got too much  
16 to say. I just forgot what to say when I came up here.  
17 I had lots to say when I was sitting over there. But  
18 anyway, I think Peter Green and Garret said a lot of  
19 things that we are all concerned about and I am very  
20 glad they said it. I haven't got very much to say.  
21 Maybe I will come back later.

22 THE COMMISSIONER: Fine.

23 THE WITNESS: After I think  
24 of something else. Thank you.

25 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
26 Mr. Thrasher. It's good as far as it went.

27 (WITNESS ASIDE)

28 THE COMMISSIONER: I will  
29 tell you what I think maybe we will do here is maybe  
30 we will just stop for five minutes and just stand up



J. Ruben

1 and walk around and stretch our legs a bit, look at  
2 the maps and some of you that intend to speak maybe  
3 you could just sneak up here and sit down in those  
4 chairs and then you will be there when we start again.  
5 So I am just going to stretch my legs and you can just  
6 stand around a bit for a minute.

7 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 7:50 P.M.)

8 (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED AT 7:55 P.M.)

9 THE COMMISSIONER: Okay,  
10 ladies and gentlemen, let's take our seats again and  
11 we can start again.

12 JOHNNY RUBEN, sworn:

13 THE INTERPRETER: He would  
14 like to thank in the first place, thank the audience  
15 for him to have a few words. Since he realized, his  
16 parents used to live close to Tuk and when he was  
17 born in 1913 in Dalhousie.

18 Since he was born, they  
19 live out there for a few years and he still has a  
20 few brothers and sisters and they were continually  
21 living up there close to Tuk. Since he was becoming  
22 a little boy, he start learning from his dad how to  
23 hunt and how to help him and then he grew to be a man.

24 Since he started to  
25 become a man, he realized that people have no jobs of  
26 any kind. They only depend on trapping, hunting, that  
27 is all they have to buy with.

28 Since he realized, there  
29 is people, people don't know about the government or  
30 anybody so they got no family allowances. They got





J. Ruben

1 nothing. There is no really cash coming out of any  
2 white people and people only do their way of getting  
3 money. People used to live through the year by  
4 hunting in the summertime, get fish and try to get all  
5 their meat in the summertime to make the long winter  
6 by hunting and trapping.

7 When he realized he can  
8 help his dad, he started helping him because he got  
9 lots of brothers and sisters so he managed to help  
10 his dad by helping him on hunting and fishing.

11 From that time on, he  
12 started learning his brothers how to hunt, how to survive  
13 off the land and learn them how to hunt and trap.

14 Since he become man in 1926  
15 they moved east as far as Tom Cott Bay where they  
16 can get more foxes and it is easier for a trapper to  
17 make some money.

18 When they moved there,  
19 his brothers grew to be a man too so we start dividing  
20 their hunting areas where there is lots of caribous,  
21 where there is lots of seals, where there is foxes,  
22 where there is fish.

23 Since they come to  
24 there, they travel all over the place, all the years  
25 they stayed here until 1935. From 1926 to 1935.

26 In 1935 and '36 there  
27 was a Hudson Bay in Lettie Harbour and they closed  
28 down in 1936 so they moved to Paulatuk. So when they  
29 get there, the Mission opened a little store. They  
30 don't want them to move anywhere so they had store



J. Ruben  
Mrs. B. Ruben

1 going there since 1936. From that time on, from then  
2 on you hear all of what Garret say where they travelled,  
3 it is just about, it is almost about the same. So  
4 thank you very much.

5 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
6 very much, sir.

7 (WITNESS ASIDE)

8 MRS. BERTHA RUBEN, sworn:

9 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, it is  
10 nice to meet you here again, to see you. I might have  
11 saw you a few years ago but I didn't meet you much  
12 that year with Susie Husky. I think quite a bit of  
13 people know my name every summer. It is Bertha Ruben.

14 I don't have so much to  
15 say but anyway to say a little bit of my life. How  
16 we grew up our children, me and my husband working  
17 together. Sometimes it is so hard. <sup>It goes real hard</sup> every year, but  
18 sometimes we go easy. I have seven girls and nine  
19 boys. They are all grown up, there are a few young  
20 ones. We stay here now in Paulatuk. Some in Inuvik,  
21 some go out, some stay home. My husband is still  
22 trapping yet even it is hard, even that he has been  
23 trapping this winter with some of my boys. I don't have  
24 so much to say. I'm a little too nervous.

25 THE COMMISSIONER: Take your  
26 time.

27 THE WITNESS: I was born at  
28 Lettie Harbour in 1929 and I went to school in Aklavik.  
29 I was in school for six years. My dad was the Hudson  
30 Bay manager at Lettie Harbour for a while but he quit.



Mrs. B. Ruben  
G. Ruben

He moved to the Mission. He was working for the Mission for a few years till 1945.

My dad left me about 1942 and I was married to this Ruben family. I am still here at Paulatuk since that time. I feel this place is the only place I could stay here all my life and I want my kids to live like that just like I would stay here.

Every kid of mine say they always want to stay here. They don't want to go Inuvik school. I don't know why but anyway sometimes I have to force them to go to school to Inuvik when they reach their grades.

Myself, I didn't learn much but I forget some of my schooling. Anyway, I still keep what my mother-in-law tell me. You have to work with your husband, grow up your children just like she was doing with her own children. She said if you keep what I say, you will have all your children the way I was keeping her children, keeping her children, she told me. My mom died about 1940 and my dad left me 1942. Well, I think that is all I can say now.

THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you very much, Mrs. Ruben.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

GARRET RUBEN, resumed:

THE WITNESS: I think I will have another turn. I will talk a little more about hunting. This time, it is not my hunting, I will just



G. Ruben

1 report it. For the last two or three years now, there  
2 is some people studying seals right out on Cape Parry  
3 which they call Brown's Harbour and they're supposed  
4 to be branding seals at first. They do brand the seals  
5 all right but they told us if we get a branded seals  
6 which branded with a hot iron on the back some place,  
7 they are supposed to be numbered.

8 Since they started  
9 doing that, we seem to be losing all the seals like  
10 Edward say, you can't hardly see any seals now in this  
11 area. What happened the first year, there were three  
12 of them from what I understand. I didn't go down to  
13 see them but I got reports of it. They net  
14 seals of course in the end of August and September.  
15 There is lots of seals used to be passing through and  
16 what happened, they killed a little over 300 seals  
17 which we could have used the hides and also the meat  
18 for dog feed. They just piled them up right on the  
19 point and leave them.

20 THE COMMISSIONER: These were  
21 government scientists, were they?

22 THE WITNESS: That's government  
23 scientists. So trappers went down there in the wintertime.  
24 Those seals were just piled up and bears and foxes  
25 were eating them. Of course, the hides were no more  
26 good already. They get all stained, all yellow so  
27 people try to use as much as they can before they get  
28 rotten so I don't really think they finish it but  
29 leftovers was eaten by sea gulls and all the other  
30 foxes and things like that.





G. Ruben

So we start talking.

We could have used all of them hides if you guys go down there and why don't you get family from here just to skin the seals which drowned in the seal nets. They say they can do that but so far nobody was picked up from here so last summer what happened. They pick up a couple of persons from Holman Island and they get them to skin the seals and threw away the meat again. This time from the report I hear, those seal skins when my brother David went down there to trap the seal meat was all scattered all over. And they had been building a house and they have all their equipment there, I believe, inside and it's all locked up.

But anyway, from last three years when we used to be here when I started, when I first become manager of the store. Everytime we go out we can get boatload just from around here and

THE COMMISSIONER: Boatloads of seals?

THE WITNESS: Boatloads of seals. Since then the seals seem to be fading away more and more and more. Last summer, this last summer, we never see seals pass through here. So I don't really blame them for doing it but I know why the seals are gone more lower and lower and lower. If an Eskimo do that to any animal we know where we going to end up is in prison. It usually happen. So I guess people now start to understand. They got a little more background of how the white people treat other people.

I guess now we can talk



G. Ruben

1 back just like anybody else. We can say the government  
2 pays you to do something, you didn't do it right. You  
3 threw away all the catch. We could have used it. We  
4 wouldn't throw the hide away. That is money to us.  
5 It is like cash. There is a little bit of work to it  
6 but that's the only we make our living is off the  
7 land.

8 So I think when I say the  
9 land is important to us, that's where we live from. It  
10 is from the land. Now, this map, this one here is  
11 drawn up two years ago. Peoples are going <sup>more far</sup> more far and/  
12 now to hunt. Because, it is not because Eskimos kill  
13 it all, it is because the scientists kill them off. So  
14 this time we invite the Fish and Wildlife and land use  
15 guys, the forestry guys to come over and have a meeting  
16 with us before they start again in the summer, to  
17 see what they find out. To see what they are trying  
18 to look for.

19 Since they were branding  
20 the seals, we never did get one branded seal. I don't  
21 know how many hundreds they branded but I think those  
22 seals, the ones they brand, they also died. So we  
23 are getting out of seals. I don't mind talking easy  
24 if I am just telling my life but that is the way we  
25 always get treated. Say, you if you kill another one  
26 you know where you are going. That is the what the  
27 Eskimos get. So I say that because I don't like it. Not  
28 only me don't like it but everybody here don't like it.

29 If I understand anything,  
30 I think those trappers are more free than me. I never



G. Ruben, A. Ruben

1 go out that much. I am always held up here. I get  
2 report clear from trappers because they are my  
3 brothers and my nephews and I understand what they  
4 say. So I think I will stop up to there. If anybody  
5 else has something to say about it, go ahead.

6 (WITNESS ASIDE)

7  
8 ABE RUBEN, sworn:

9 THE WITNESS: Mr. Justice  
10 Berger, my name is Abe Ruben and I was born in a  
11 place called Coal Mine which is about 40 miles south  
12 of here and I spent a short part of my life in  
13 Paulatuk and also in Cape Parry when the people  
14 went down there to work for the DEW line and when I  
15 was nine years old, I was sent off to the hostel,  
16 the residence in Inuvik and for a good 11 years of my  
17 life, I spent 10 months out of the year in the hostel.  
18 And managed to take about 2 months off in the summertime  
19 to get back home here and what I have got to say about  
20 the hostels or the hostel life from my point of view  
21 isn't very -- wasn't a very nice experience.

22 The first year at the  
23 hostel we were more or less forced to not to speak Inuit  
24 at all. I remember --

25 THE COMMISSIONER: You were  
26 forced to speak in Inuit.

27 THE WITNESS: Yes. Forced to --  
28 I remember one afternoon coming back from school and  
29 sitting down with a friend of mine and we were just  
30 sitting around playing games and we were conversing in





A. Ruben

1 in Eskimo and the hostel supervisor at the time who  
2 was a nun and she spent about ten years there. She  
3 just got right down on us saying that if we spoke  
4 another word she would give us a good beating and  
5 there was nothing we could do at the time so we just --  
6 it was only in a matter of about 2 or 3 months that we  
7 just more or less totally forgot how to speak the  
8 language.

9 This thing of, you know,  
10 shutting a person off, shutting an Inuit off from any  
11 expression that was related to his own culture went  
12 on for, with most of the hostel students whether it  
13 was the Anglican hostel or the Roman Catholic hostel,  
14 it went on for a good 10 or 15 years and it didn't only  
15 stay in hostels. It went into the schools. It went  
16 into just anything that you tried to do in living in  
17 a town. You were more or less told that you couldn't  
18 express yourself as an Inuit and you had to adopt a  
19 totally different life style.

20 What the hostels were put  
21 there for was to make stereotype images of native  
22 people, setting them up or educating them where they  
23 would be able to fit into the stream -- the mainstream  
24 of the Canadian society and out of a lot of the students  
25 that went into the hostels, a good majority of them  
26 never reached Grade 8 or even Grade 10. The reason  
27 behind that, is that a lot of these students couldn't cope  
28 with, you know, with being this southern image of a  
29 say a second class white person and going home in the  
30 summertime and trying to cope with going back to their



A. Ruben

1 parents or their villages and trying to live as Inuit.  
2 So what happened was you had a lot of students coming  
3 out of hostels that in the summertime, you know, they  
4 would get home and couldn't relate to their parents.  
5 They couldn't speak the language anymore and when they  
6 got back to the, back to the larger town, say, in  
7 Inuvik, they couldn't fare any better there. They  
8 couldn't cope with just being half people.

9 A lot of the students that were, either  
10 dropped out of the hostel or were kicked out of the  
11 hostel which I am one of them. When we left the hostel  
12 we had no means whatsoever to cope with living in a  
13 town situation. We grew up in a hostel with everything  
14 taken care of. Basic material needs taken care of and  
15 when a person was kicked out of the hostel or asked  
16 to leave he was more or less just <sup>like</sup> being taken out of  
17 an enclosed little house that he lived in all his life  
18 and put out into the street and told to make a living.

19 When he was put out  
20 there, he was confronted with alcohol which he was --  
21 very little education put out when he was in the  
22 hostel. He was confronted with trying to communicate  
23 with people, with a lot of other diseases that came  
24 into the town, syphilis or V.D. or whatever traffic  
25 that people from the south brought up with them.

26 He was also confronted  
27 with trying to make a living for himself, <sup>most</sup> of these  
28 people, most of these young people ended up with  
29 construction jobs or ditch digging or working out at  
30 bush camps and such.



A. Ruben

When they came to town they had a bit of money and what did they do? They spent it on boozing up and getting drunk and spending a good part of the time visiting the hostel for treatment.

The thing that really makes me angry is a lot of times and everytime I get into Inuvik or any town or even down south to any cities is I see the people in education, people in religion and government people -- a lot of times they are just too much caught up with making a living and not really caring about what the consequences of their being there. They are taking all of their, a lot of their social morals and codes of conduct and their religious philosophies and educational systems to places where people have never had to go through with them before. Not having any regard or even consulting with people what kind of input they should put into it, and that is the case with the hostel system or the education systems all over the north where they have just had no consultation whatsoever with the native people as far back as the 1920's and a lot of it is still going on today. You get, in Inuvik for instance, most of the teachers who are over there have spent maybe 10 years in Inuvik, maybe most ever since the place opened up and I don't think very few of them have taken the time to visit other settlements or to move around with the native people and getting to understand them. All they seem to care is that they have a program to do like a math. program or a science



A. Ruben  
T. Green

1 program and they have to play their part to make  
2 their living.

3 So, that's all I have  
4 got to say for now.

5 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank  
6 you very much.

7 (WITNESS ASIDE)

8 THE COMMISSIONER: I will  
9 tell you what we will do. Let's just stretch our  
10 legs again for five minutes and maybe two or three of  
11 you who want to come up and say something can come  
12 up and take your seats while we are just taking it  
13 easy for about five minutes. Okay.

14 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 8:40 P.M.)

15 (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED AT 8:55 P.M.)

16 THE COMMISSIONER: Ladies and  
17 gentlemen, I will call the hearing to order again.

18 TONY GREEN, sworn:

19 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, first  
20 of all, I would like to introduce myself. Tony Green.  
21 I was born in 1943. First of all, I would like to tell  
22 about my trip, the trip I made, this last trip. I just  
23 came home today about 3:30.

24 THE COMMISSIONER: Go ahead.  
25 Go up to the map if you would like.

26 THE WITNESS: Well, when we  
27 left, we left from Paulatuk. We go through this  
28 route here. This is where I got my trapline. Right  
29 where the ruler is going, through there and then we  
30 got our main camp. Our last camp is about here someplace





T. Green

1 around here and from there we climbed the mountains  
2 up.

3 The first trip we made  
4 we get two moose right by Horton River. Then we stayed  
5 out for about 14 days, then we came home, then two  
6 weeks, 10 days or 2 weeks later we go back for our  
7 trapline again. And we go up again to our camp there.  
8 Then we went to Horton River again. Then we get another  
9 two moose again.

10 Maybe I should cut that  
11 a little shorter here. Maybe I will just tell about  
12 my trip, this last trip I made. Well, this last trip  
13 we made, I had to make a quick trip because we had  
14 sports hunting coming up. We only had about two days  
15 and three -- two nights and three days. We had to be  
16 back here.

17 Then this trip, we make  
18 that trip. Then we came home. Then we get about here,  
19 around this lake here, we were travelling until 3:30  
20 this morning. That is right from Horton River. We  
21 are travelling until 3:30 this morning. We couldn't  
22 keep going anymore so we camped there. My brother, Noel,  
23 and two other boys were with me there. But the two  
24 other boys came in about 6:00 this morning. They kept  
25 going -- ourselves, we camped there at the lake. Then  
26 this afternoon we came home about 3:30 we came home  
27 this afternoon I know.

28 THE COMMISSIONER: You said  
29 you got two moose on this last trip. Is that right?

30 THE WITNESS: No.



T. Green, N. Green

1 THE COMMISSIONER: I missed  
2 something there.

3 THE WITNESS: We didn't get  
4 two moose this last trip. It was the trip before this  
5 trip we made. The two last moose we get.

6 THE COMMISSIONER: I see. Did  
7 you have anything to add?

8 NOEL GREEN, sworn:

9 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, my  
10 name is Noel Green and I was born in Paulatuk. I went  
11 to school in Inuvik and I didn't learn too much. As  
12 a matter of fact I have learned nothing. I am a dropout  
13 so after I got out of the school, I didn't know any  
14 Inuit language or anything. I have lost everything but  
15 then I stayed a few years, I started catching on  
16 slowly and I started to like hunting, trapping and  
17 I don't know how the pipeline will affect the north  
18 but I hope it don't really get to reach too far up  
19 here because the people around here live mostly on  
20 the land.

21 I'm a little nervous.  
22 And if the pipeline goes through, how badly will it  
23 affect the people in the north. That I would like  
24 to get an answer for. That is what has been getting  
25 into me for quite some time. People around here, they  
26 all like their style of living, their hunting, their  
27 trapping and if the pipeline comes through what will  
28 happen? Maybe some guys drift out to work. They work  
29 for a while and stay in the town, blow their money,  
come home broke, go back out again. That will be



T. Green, N. Green  
Mrs. R. Kirby

1 really -- it will really affect the people I think.  
2 I haven't got too much to say.

3 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, you  
4 have said it very well. Do you want to add anything?  
5 You are both Mr. Green. Tony Green?

6 WITNESS TONY GREEN: I guess  
7 that is all.

8 WITNESS NOEL GREEN: I guess  
9 that is it.

10 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
11 very much.

12 (WITNESSES ASIDE)

13 THE COMMISSIONER: Well,  
14 anyone else wish to speak. Just step right up here.  
15 Let me say that these statements that the people have  
16 made who have already been here to speak have really  
17 been useful to me, very helpful.

18 MRS. ROSEMARY KIRBY, resumed:

19 THE WITNESS: Could we ask  
20 the oil company representatives some questions?

21 THE COMMISSIONER: Sure, you  
22 sure can. Do you mean the oil company and not the  
23 pipeline companies at the moment?

24 THE WITNESS: The oil companies.

25 THE COMMISSIONER: Okay. Well,  
26 Mr. Hnatiuk, I see you back there somewhere. If you  
27 would like to come up here and let's see, what do we --  
28 do we have another -- Mr. Hnatiuk, who has been a  
29 witness at our Inquiry a number of times now and he is  
with Gulf Oil which I think you know is a partner with





Mrs. R. Kirby

1 Dome in the drilling program that they wish to  
2 undertake this summer to drill two wells in the  
3 Beaufort Sea and Gulf also intends to build a gas plant  
4 in the Mackenzie Delta that would gather gas from the  
5 delta and it would then go into the main trunk pipeline.  
6 Okay, just go ahead with your questions.

7 THE WITNESS: I would just  
8 like to ask if any oil companies after setting a  
9 precedent like the government giving you permission to  
10 do oil drilling, was there ever any cases where the  
11 precedence have been, how would you say, overruled.

12 THE COMMISSIONER: Where they  
13 gave permission and then cancelled it?

14 THE WITNESS: Yes.

15 MR. HNATIUK: You were speaking  
16 of offshore wells in Canada, are you? Or everywhere  
17 in the world or -- I presume you mean Canada, don't you?

18 THE WITNESS: Yes.

19 MR. HNATIUK: And you are  
20 speaking of offshore wells or on land as well?

21 THE WITNESS: Are those two  
22 different -- would those two be two different --

23 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, let's  
24 cover both. Why don't you tell us on land and then  
25 offshore?

26 MR. HNATIUK: I can't think of  
any where they have not been drilled after giving  
permission but there have been many delays and there  
have been changes. Wells have been moved to more  
convenient places but I don't have all that much



Mrs. R. Kirby

1 background in drilling throughout Canada. But I know  
2 that there have been long delays sometimes in drilling  
3 wells until some problems were ironed out so I really  
4 can't answer your question accurately, Rosemary.

5 THE WITNESS: Well, does that  
6 <sup>these two</sup> mean that after, you're having two oil wells drilled this  
7 summer, aren't you?

8 MR. HNATIUK: If approval, if  
9 a drilling authority is granted, the drilling company  
10 proposes to drill, to start two wells this summer after  
11 they get two drill ships around Point Barrow. Our  
12 company has an interest in one well but is not operating  
13 the operation at all so we're not responsible for  
14 just how things are done but we are trying to work  
15 with them to make sure that they do it right.

16 Now, they will start the  
17 wells this summer and finish them next summer and I  
18 don't know if they will have time to start two more  
19 wells or not after that but they would need new  
20 applications and new drilling authorities to start  
21 anymore wells.

22 THE WITNESS: Well, does that  
23 mean that in the future drilling plans would not be  
24 cancelled after these two first drilling plans?

25 MR. HNATIUK: No, just the fact  
that they have approved the first two wells does not  
mean they will approve any more.

THE WITNESS: So the precedent  
doesn't hold then of your getting permits?

MR. HNATIUK: No, there must



Mrs. R. Kirby

1 be an application for each well and each one must  
2 be considered and approved.

3 THE WITNESS: And so, how  
4 would it affect the plans on land settlement after  
5 these two first drillings?

6 MR. HNATIUK: I am afraid  
7 I can't -- oh, you weren't finished asking the question.  
8 I am sorry.

9 THE WITNESS: If the people  
10 wanted land claims settled, are the oil companies  
11 going to wait until that is settled?

12 MR. HNATIUK: We would like  
13 to see the land claims settled just as quickly as  
14 possible just as you people would. We haven't entered  
15 into the discussions or negotiations at all. We try  
16 to proceed in accordance with the regulations that the  
17 government sets. They granted permits to explore and  
18 we are governed by their regulations and we are not  
19 really affected by whether the land claims are settled  
20 or not.

21 Now, if for some reason,  
22 the land claims were settled in such a way that the  
23 return to the companies was very much less, there  
24 might be some change in that regard but we would  
25 simply follow whatever regulations the government sets  
26 out and they do keep changing.

27 THE WITNESS: Well, if you do  
28 wish to see land claims settled very quickly, is there  
29 no way that you can wait until the land claims are  
30 settled before any oil drilling can be done?



Mrs. R. Kirby

MR. HNATIUK: Well, we will drill just as safely before or after land claims are settled and we would like to find out if there is oil and gas there and the government would like to know if there is oil and gas in these areas too. That is why they have encouraged us to explore by granting us permits.

THE WITNESS: Thank you very much. All I would like to say, Mr. Berger, is that I would very much like to see land claims settled before any further what you call exploitation is done in the north.

THE COMMISSIONER: Any further major development. Is that what you mean?

THE WITNESS: Yes, that's good. Thank you very much.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

THE COMMISSIONER: Just while we are on this subject, maybe it would help if I tried to explain it just a little bit. I will just go to this map and do my best to explain it for a moment. You will be able to hear me.

Since no one else wants to talk here tonight, I will -- Just to help you understand this a little bit, the oil companies have been looking for oil and gas all around the Mackenzie Delta and in the Mackenzie Delta now for about 10 years and they have found some oil and gas about there. That is in the outer part of the delta and you know that they found some here near Tuk too. And so one of the witnesses who has been to the Inquiry is Mr. Horsfield of Imperial Oil and he said to us. He said





1 well look, he said, we think we found about all  
2 the oil and gas there is here, you see. Now, they  
3 found enough gas to build a pipeline, a gas pipeline  
4 provided they bring gas from Alaska too but I won't  
5 go into that now because that is something that  
6 concerns the people at Old Crow and Aklavik and  
7 McPherson and Arctic Red more than it does you. But  
8 they say all right we have found some oil and gas here  
9 but we think that there isn't very much more there  
10 to be found.

11 So then they say we think  
12 there is a lot of oil and gas out on the Beaufort Sea.  
13 But we don't know for sure so Dome -- these maps never  
14 show what you are looking for but so Dome Petroleum  
15 got approval from the government to drill two wells  
16 out here and out there. One is 40 miles north of  
17 Tuktoyaktuk out in the sea and how far out is the  
18 other one?

19 MR. HNATIUK: About 45 I believe.

20 THE COMMISSIONER: About 45  
21 miles out up there somewhere. Now, the plan they have  
22 is to drill those wells this summer and next summer.  
23 Those wells are really exploration wells. They want  
24 to find out if there is any oil and gas out there in  
25 the middle of the Beaufort Sea.

26 Now, there is a risk as  
27 you obviously know that if there is a blowout, there  
28 is an oil blowout in one of those holes that they dig  
29 in the bottom of the sea, then oil will run out of that  
30 hole and move up towards the surface and once the ice



1 forms towards the ice and if that happens then the  
2 problem they will have is what are they going to do?  
3 Can they clean it up? If they can't clean it up for  
4 a year, if they can't stop it for a year, oil will run  
5 out of that hole in the bottom of the sea for a year.  
6 We're told about 1500 barrels a day and it will  
7 accumulate under the ice and then in the spring it will  
8 move to the open leads and eventually it will move  
9 toward the shore. That's what we're told will happen.

10 Now, the oil companies  
11 say that the risk is just one in 20,000; that is, they  
12 say you will only get one blowout for every 20,000  
13 wells you drill. The Inquiry has been considering the  
14 evidence and we have heard from the experts from the  
15 Department of the Environment and the Department of  
16 Fisheries about what would happen if that blowout did  
17 occur and they are very concerned about it because they  
18 feel that that remote possibility came about and you  
19 had a blowout then they feel you wouldn't be able to  
20 stop it for a year, maybe two years. Oil would accumulate  
21 under the ice for a year, maybe two years, would migrate,  
22 travel towards the leads and as the leads expanded  
23 towards the shore, the oil would move toward the  
24 shore but they are worried that it would affect all of  
the life of the Beaufort Sea, the small micro-organisms  
right up to the whales because each level of life  
depends on the one below it.

So they are concerned  
about those things. Now, let me just say that the  
government has said to Dome, all right, you can drill



1 one or two wells. You can drill the two wells because  
2 we want to know if there is anything out there and  
3 that risk according to Mr. Hnatiuk and his colleagues  
4 in the oil and gas industry is just one in 20,000.

5 Now, what I am concerned  
6 about and what I am looking into is this. If you did  
7 find oil and gas out there, then you wanted to drill  
8 many, many wells out in the Beaufort Sea, what would  
9 that risk be? You can see that if you drill the one  
10 well, your risk may only be one in 20,000; if you  
11 drill more than one well, you keep multiplying the  
12 risk. The risk becomes greater and greater the larger  
13 the number of wells you drill so it is that risk that  
14 the Inquiry is looking into.

15 Because the government  
16 back in 1973 decided that they could go ahead with  
17 these exploration wells that Dome wants to drill. Now,  
18 what I suppose I should say to you is unless you have  
19 these, the gas pipeline built and the oil pipeline then  
20 you won't get that drilling that might mean many,  
21 many wells in the Beaufort Sea. So the oil and gas  
22 companies won't go ahead and do that drilling unless  
23 the pipeline, unless the energy corridor from the  
24 delta to southern Canada and the U.S. is approved so  
25 that the pipeline and the offshore drilling are all  
26 tied up together in that way.

27 Now, maybe I should just  
28 add that the experts from the Federal Government agree  
29 with Mr. Hnatiuk and with Dome and Gulf that it is only  
30 a very remote possibility that you would get a blowout.





8.107

1 We have heard from Dr. Pimlott of C.O.P.E. He has  
2 been a witness too and he thinks there is a much  
3 greater risk than one in 20,000. But the Federal  
4 Government people aren't arguing with Mr. Hnatiuk about  
5 that. They agree that the chances are very, very  
6 remote but the Federal Government people and Mr. Hnatiuk  
7 disagree about the extent of the damage there would  
8 be because the Federal Government people don't believe  
9 that the blowout could be contained. They think it  
10 would run out of control for a year, maybe two years  
11 and they don't think you could clean up the oil and  
12 they think it would do damage to the life of the  
13 Beaufort Sea that would take maybe five or ten years for  
14 it to recover and Mr. Hnatiuk and the industry on  
15 the other hand, they feel that they could contain the  
16 blowout, they could trap the oil under the ice  
17 throughout the winter using beacons and then they feel  
18 that in the spring when it moves to the open water  
19 they could burn it off. Of course, if you burn the  
20 oil, then it is gone.

21 The Federal Government  
22 experts from Environment and Fisheries say that you  
23 couldn't do that. That you couldn't trap the oil and  
24 that when it does come into the open water, it won't  
25 burn because they say you couldn't get out there in  
26 time to burn it before it had been exposed to the  
27 weather and became impossible to burn.

28 Well, anyway, that's one  
29 of the reasons why we are here in Paulatuk because  
30 if those Federal Government people are right and the



1 blowout affected the whole of the Beaufort Sea, it  
2 would have an impact on the catch that you people  
3 make from the sea. Okay, I shouldn't be doing all  
4 this talking but why not? Maybe Mr. Hnatiuk, you would  
5 like to comment on that.

6 MR. HNATIUK: I would like to  
7 comment on two points. The one is the figure that  
8 Justice Berger mentioned of one in 20,000. First of  
9 all, the chances of a blowout are very remote based  
10 on history in the -- elsewhere in the world. There  
11 has only been one serious oil blowout during drilling  
12 and that was Santa Barbara.

13 Most blowouts are gas  
14 and will not-- that's natural gas, like propane that  
15 would not do much damage. Also most blowouts will seal  
16 themselves off and do not need a second well to bring  
17 them under control. So the figure of one in 20,000  
18 refers to the chance of an oil blowout requiring a  
19 relief well to bring it under control and that number  
20 one in 20,000 comes from a government report released  
21 in January, 1976 by the Department of Indian and Northern  
22 Affairs and is generally the figure that appears in  
23 literature on blowouts. The other comment I would like  
24 to make is on our possibility of cleaning up the oil.

25 I do not claim that we  
26 could clean up all of the oil if there was a blowout  
27 but all of the companies that work together with the  
28 government, all of the equipment available would be  
29 put to use and there would be long booms that I think  
30 Canmar explained this to you when they were here in



1 January. There would be long rubber booms to contain  
2 as much of the oil as possible so it could be picked  
3 up by boat. If the waves got high this would not work.  
4 If the ice moved in during the summer, this would not  
5 work. Then after it froze over you might be able to  
6 burn some of the oil right at the well because it is  
7 coming up mixed with natural gas. Some of it could  
8 be burned there until the ice gets too thick to be  
9 broken.

10  
11 Then the oil would  
12 collect under the ice and be locked in the ice like a  
13 sandwich just as it was at Balaena Bay in Cape Parry  
14 in 1975 where they put oil under the ice. It formed  
15 a layer and then the oil grew below it.

16 In the spring in May  
17 black pools will be on top of the ice and it is on  
18 top of the ice that this oil could be burned. There  
19 would be some oil in leads. There would be some oil  
20 mixed <sup>up</sup> in pressure ridges that could not be contained.  
21 Some oil would get to shore and every attempt would  
22 be made to protect the sensitive areas and to clean it  
23 up on shore. There would be some oil that would get  
24 out into the -- with the ice into deep water which  
25 could not be cleaned up so I do not say that we could  
26 clean up all of the oil but we feel we could clean  
27 up more of it than the government scientists said in  
28 their testimony and in their report.

29 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
30 Mr. Hnatiuk. If any of you want to ask anymore questions



G. Ruben

1 of Mr. Hnatiuk, I am sure he would be happy to answer  
2 but while he is here, while we have got him up here,  
3 before we relegate him to the back of the room again or  
4 to the cloakroom.

5 GARRET RUBEN, resumed:

6 THE WITNESS: I would just  
7 like to ask as soon as your big drilling ships get  
8 there, I am sure it is going to go ahead but what  
9 happens if you can't go on Point Barrow? Will it be  
10 delayed for some other years or -

11 MR. HNATIUK: If the ships  
12 can't get around Point Barrow in 1976, they would go  
13 look for work elsewhere in the world and try again in  
14 1977, I presume.

15 THE WITNESS: So the drilling  
16 ships are already made and it is ready to go for the  
17 summer?

18 MR. HNATIUK: No, the drilling  
19 ships are being finished. One is just about complete.  
20 It should be ready by the end of this month and the  
21 other one won't be ready until about the first of June  
22 I am told.

23 THE WITNESS: So they do any  
24 experimenting with that kind of ship before?

25 MR. HNATIUK: There have been  
26 similar hulls converted to drill ships. They have not  
27 worked in water like the Beaufort Sea before but they  
28 will be tested out. All of the equipment will be tested  
29 out where the ships are being built. They will be going  
30 out into the ocean where they are being built and all





G. Ruben

of the equipment will be tested out before they are brought up here.

THE WITNESS: That's those 300-foot boats, they had drawn up some place?

MR. HNATIUK: These are, these boats are just about 400 feet long. They don't really look like the picture that I saw on the yellow pages here. They are more like a ship with a pointed bow but they have been strengthened to resist the ice.

THE WITNESS: What do you use for anchors? Just ordinary anchors or just frames down to the bottom of the sea?

MR. HNATIUK: There will be eight anchor lines and they will be 30,000 pound anchors. They will have a quick disconnect system such that they can be sent a signal remotely and they will disconnect partway down the anchorline so that they can just move away very quickly without having to pick up the anchors. The anchor type is a fairly conventional type. I think they call it a fluted type but it is a fairly conventional type of anchor, 30,000 pounds each and eight of them. The one <sup>big</sup> difference is the ~~anchorlines~~ will come out of the bottom of the ship rather than out of the sides like most of them do. That is because of the ice.

THE WITNESS: From all kinds of papers we read about oil companies drilling and is it all true -- is all that safe even if the ice comes in -- is it safe enough to stay in one place until you take your drill out and plug the hole ?



G. Ruben,  
Mrs. R. Kirby

MR. HNATIUK: There will be continual reconnaissance of the ice and there will be continuous predictions of which direction the ice is moving. There will be certain things that they will do when the ice gets within so many miles. They will quit drilling when the ice gets so close. When it gets to some other distance from the boats then they will release their anchorlines and move to shelter.

There will be blowout preventers on the well that keep anything from leaking out of it when the ship leaves. And there will be five different blowout preventers in use. One of the blowout preventers is a kind that can shut on the drill pipe and cut it off and seal the well off tight and safely. This has been used throughout the world. This kind of thing and this can be done just very quickly under an emergency condition.

That blowout preventer will cut the pipe and the pipe will drop to the bottom of the well and the blowout preventer will keep the well from leaking.

THE WITNESS: Thank you.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

THE COMMISSIONER: Anyone else?  
Yes, Mrs. Kirby.

MRS. ROSEMARY KIRBY, resumed:

THE WITNESS: Could I ask a couple more questions?

THE COMMISSIONER: Sure, you can sit over here with Mr. Ruben if you like.



Mrs. R. Kirby

1 THE WITNESS: You were talking  
2 about burning the oil on an oil spill. Would you be  
3 burning the oil on the ice?

4 MR. HNATIUK: In the spring  
5 we would burn the oil on the ice as we did in Balaena  
6 Bay in 1975 or at least we would attempt to track the  
7 route of the ice and go out and set fire to the oil  
8 when it was found.

9 THE WITNESS: Okay. I think it  
10 was okay for the test at Balaena Bay because it is a  
11 bay. It is not a floating ice like there is no real  
12 comparison to that. You contained the oilspill and the  
13 oil burning at Balaena Bay but the vast oilspill that  
14 may occur on an ice berg if you track it down, it could  
15 be a floating iceberg, couldn't it?

16 MR. HNATIUK: Yes, the ice could  
17 be moving over the well that is producing the oil and  
18 we expect something similar to the test 15 or 20 miles  
19 north of Cape Parry where the oil collected in something  
20 like about a half or a quarter inch thickness. The oil  
21 that was released there ran with the current about 35  
22 feet and spread in a thin layer under the ice and normally  
23 then more ice would grow underneath it and lock that  
24 oil in place until the ice got warm and until there was  
25 brine channels in the ice that would let the oil come  
26 to the top.

27 THE WITNESS: But that was solid  
28 oilspills you did too outside of Cape Parry, wasn't it?

29 MR. HNATIUK: That was under  
floating ice.





Mrs. R. Kirby

THE WITNESS: Was it floating ice actually like the one where the curve you-- If the icebergs come in, you are going to drill only in the summertime and it is not going to be in the winter like you did at Cape Parry.

MR. HNATIUK: I see what you mean. If it is floating ice but the ice was not broken up, no, the ice was not broken up.

THE WITNESS: What will your company do with this floating ice? Will it stay with it wherever it goes?

MR. HNATIUK: There are tests underway in the area north of Tuktoyaktuk right now. The people that plan to do the drilling have some equipment on the ice checking its movement and the government also has work underway out there. The kind of tests they are doing is to see how they should go about trapping the ice by putting radio beacons on some of the floes so that in general they can see what path the ice took and then they can fly over it with airplanes and find them with these radio beacons and then once they have got them located then they can check for any oil and when the oil appears then they would go out and burn it in some fashion.

They plan some experiments this winter as well on how they might drop something on the oil to make it burn.

THE WITNESS: But it is in the middle of the winter though. It is not in the summer where you are planning to drill and possibilities of



Mrs. R. Kirby

1 the iceberg coming in and if an oilspill occurs it  
2 will be two different examples. It seems that one of  
3 them you really can't answer because you really haven't  
4 experimented on that field yet.

5 MR. HNATIUK: That is true.

6 We haven't done experiments under a blowout type  
7 condition but the drilling company has plans for  
8 something like that this winter. Now whether they will  
9 go through with them or not, I don't know.

10 This will not be on a  
11 large scale. It would be on a smaller scale. But they  
12 have about, they have two or three experiments  
13 planned for this winter which are related to burning  
14 oil in ice.

15 THE WITNESS: So the risk is  
16 even higher because even though you talk about clean up  
17 you really have no idea what will happen during the  
18 summer drilling if that oilspill occurs and the icebergs  
19 come in, the ice floes or whatever you call it?

20 MR. HNATIUK: Yes, if the  
21 blowout was in the summer, the oil, the oil booms or the  
22 floating rubber skirts would be used to try to contain  
23 the oil while it is picked up. If the waves become  
24 high we would not be able to contain it all. If the  
25 ice moved in there would be a severe problem and we would  
26 not be able to contain it at that time other than to  
27 try to burn it and of course, we know that a large  
28 floe moving over it could put the fire out and it would  
29 have to be relit so normally however when the ice moves  
30 in in the summer, it moves out again fairly quickly.



Mrs. R. Kirby

A storm will move it in but because most of the winds are from the south or southeast, most years the ice doesn't stay in long. I know in 1974 it did but most years it would come in and move out again so then as soon as it moved out again they would go back with their skirts and try to contain the oil that way again.

THE WITNESS: Could you tell us how long it took to burn the oil at Balaena Bay? And the amount of oil that was spilled and the amount of oil that was left over?

MR. HNATIUK: I have been told that it was about 12,500 gallons that was put under the ice. The first burn took about --

THE COMMISSIONER: You might tell them how many barrels that is. You said it was 2 or 300.

MR. HNATIUK: Yes, it is between 2 and 300 barrels, about 250 or 275 barrels, I guess. The first burn was done when about one third of the oil was available for burning and just about all of it burned off -- I think about 90 or 95% of the oil burned off and I have seen pictures of the ice after this oil burned off.

The oil seems to burn without melting very much of the ice or melting the snow around it. The first burn took I think about 5 hours. Then they waited for more oil to percolate up through the ice and then set fire to it again and I believe they did this four times but the last two times there wasn't much oil left. Now, they accounted for all but 6 barrels



Q. Now, what happened?

A. or 6 drums. They accounted for all but 6 drums and that reached the shore but those 6 drums were not really oil. I am told that they were sort of the residue from burning. They were sort of a plastic type floating material left from the burning which they then cleaned up.

THE WITNESS: Okay then, if an oil-spill occurred, a major oilspill occurred on the Beaufort Sea, how long would it take to burn? To clean up the mess?

MR. HNATIUK: Well, firstly they would get the equipment out around the blowout just as quickly as possible to contain the oil and then it would be picked up by a boat. It would be pumped out of this by a boat. This would be done just as quickly as the boats could get out there. In fact, the drill ships themselves would have these rubber skirts right on them and also the work boats so they could get this deployed very quickly.

Now, if ice moved in or if it froze over the burning would be attempted mostly right at the well where it is coming up. It would be coming up with natural gas which would help it burn. So it would be kind of a continuous thing. It would be continually burning as long as something didn't put the fire out.

THE WITNESS: But you don't know how long it would take in time. Would your oil ships have to come all the way from Vancouver to the sea?

MR. HNATIUK: Oh no.





Mr. B. Kirby

The rubber skirts will all be there. That will be a requirement of the government before they permit anything to be done out there. There will be drills, fire drills type of thing like I guess you have in schools. I mean they will test these things out in the Beaufort Sea to make sure everybody knows how they work. They won't be using oil but they will be testing the equipment. Then the ship that -- or the boat that would be picking the oil up would be right there ready to use if necessary. You wouldn't have to wait for anything to come around Point Barrow. There might be some additional equipment that other oil companies or the government would contribute that might be brought in later but the initial equipment would all be ready to go right away and there would be I think something like a mile of this skirt available.

THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, do you think that I have received an answer for how long it would burn?

THE COMMISSIONER: Well, you will have to make up your own mind about that.

THE WITNESS: You wouldn't know the answer. If you had all the amount of oil that you think a major spill, you would do some cleaning up and then you would do the burning, how long would it take you to clean up and to burn up the leftovers on a major oilspill say?

MR. HNATIUK: Well, if the blowout occurred and went through the whole winter, it would certainly take all of the next summer to burn it



Mrs. R. Kirby

off and clean it up and maybe even longer. It would certainly take all of the following summer I would think.

THE WITNESS: So the oil would with the currents all through travel right through the Beaufort Sea, wouldn't it?

MR. HNATIUK: The oil that is in the ice is predicted to move to the west. If you look at Mr. Milne and Mr. Smiley's report and some of the other reports that talked about ice movement. During the winter the ice would carry the oil in a line to the west. However, in the summertime there are many things that could happen depending on which way the winds blow and for how long they blow.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

THE COMMISSIONER: Mr. Hnatiuk, let me just ask you about those drill ships. They are being built right now, are they?

MR. HNATIUK: That is correct. They were existing hulls and they are being converted into a drill ship and they are being built right now. Yes.

THE COMMISSIONER: And you said they were going to be tested in the ocean. I take it they will not be tested in the Arctic Ocean.

MR. HNATIUK: No, the only case they might be tested in the Arctic Ocean would be is if they are waiting at Point Barrow for the ice to clear. They might do some testing up there. If you want to call that the Arctic Ocean.

THE COMMISSIONER: Well, Dome has no plans to test the seaworthiness of these drill ships in Arctic waters before they enter the Arctic



1 and begin drilling?

2 MR. HNATIUK: I am sure they  
3 will be found to be seaworthy because they will go  
4 through very rough seas on the way up there. The Gulf  
5 of Alaska is one of the roughest areas in the world.  
6 At the end of this month they will be taken out -- the  
7 first one will be taken out on sea trials and I am not  
8 just sure what all the paces they take them through but  
9 they will do some trials this month to accept them and  
10 then on the way up there they will be quite well tested  
11 for seaworthiness. They won't be tested for contact  
12 with ice however until they encounter some at Point  
13 Barrow but they could well encounter some ice during  
14 transit from Point Barrow to the drill sites.

15 THE COMMISSIONER: Isn't it  
16 true then that Dome has no plans to test the seaworthiness  
17 of these vessels in Arctic waters? The Gulf of Alaska  
18 is not by any stretch of the imagination a part of  
19 the Arctic Ocean.

20 MR. HNATIUK: No, from the  
21 standpoint of sea state, it is much more severe.

22 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, the  
23 conditions in the Beaufort Sea in the summer are such  
24 that you may well be closed in by ice sometime in  
25 September or October. Isn't that the situation?

26 MR. HNATIUK: That's correct.  
27 Yes.

28 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, there's  
29 nothing comparable to that in the Gulf of Alaska, is  
there?





1 MR. HNATIUK: No, if you mean  
2 by seaworthiness their performance in ice, I am not  
3 aware of any plans to go out into the polar pack to  
4 test these ships because they could well get stuck  
5 out there, I suppose. I would think that they may. I  
6 am not trying to be facetious. You can't test these  
7 like you do an icebreaker because they don't have the  
8 power of an icebreaker.

9 They are strengthened  
10 to withstand the forces of ice but they do not  
11 have a great lot of horsepower. In fact, they may be  
12 towed part of the way by the workboats.

13 THE COMMISSIONER: But the  
14 difficulty is this, if you don't test them in ice  
15 infested waters, then you really don't have any way of  
16 knowing whether they have the strength to withstand  
17 Arctic conditions, do you?

18 MR. HNATIUK: Well, I am sure  
19 the naval architects must be relied on to some extent  
20 in this case and the insurance companies are very  
21 stringent in this regard and would not insure them until  
22 they were satisfied that they were capable of withstanding  
23 ice. Then the other thing is they are almost certain  
24 to encounter some ice between Point Barrow and the  
25 Beaufort Sea because that window is very small.

26 The strength of the ship  
27 really doesn't affect the safety of the well. It  
28 affects the safety of the crew but the ship I am told  
29 will withstand the pack ice but cannot make way through  
30 a full ice cover. It must have some open water to make



1 way because it is not an icebreaker.

2 THE COMMISSIONER: You say  
3 the ship won't crack up if it reaches, if it encounters  
4 heavy ice conditions but it might be stranded, is that  
5 the situation?

6 MR. HNATIUK: That's a possibi-  
7 lity. If it got in to the very high ice about  
8 10/10ths cover of ice with no open water and it was  
9 pressured by winds or if it was frozen together, it would  
10 not be able to make way like an icebreaker and that is  
11 why very expensive icebreaking workboats have been  
12 built to assist it in the Beaufort Sea.

13 Should there be a thin  
14 ice cover develop, these workboats can take it through  
15 quite readily or could push floes out of the way.

16 THE COMMISSIONER: What I am  
17 concerned about is this, here you are bringing these  
18 drill ships into Arctic waters to drill in the middle  
19 of the Beaufort Sea. The ships have not been tested in  
20 Arctic conditions, is it fair to say that you won't really  
21 know how they perform in Arctic conditions until your  
22 first season of drilling has ended?

23 MR. HNATIUK: No, there is  
24 every likelihood you will know how they perform in ice  
25 when brought around Point Barrow because the attempt will  
26 be made to get them in just as soon as possible.

27 THE COMMISSIONER: But you won't  
28 want to bring them in. You won't want to bring them  
29 around Point Barrow until the window appears -- the  
30 whole object being to bring them around Point Barrow



when the water is ice-free.

MR. HNATIUK: The area of the drilling locations and the Beaufort Sea north of the Mackenzie Delta is open water long before the window appears at Point Barrow.

THE COMMISSIONER: Yes, but you can't come around Cape Barrow until the window in the ice appears. Your whole object is to get around Point Barrow without becoming locked in by the ice there, I don't understand why you say that these ships will be tested on the voyage around Point Barrow. Are you saying that you will bring the ships around <sup>Point Barrow</sup> at a time and under conditions that will be comparable to those the vessel will encounter in the Beaufort Sea during the whole of the drilling season?

MR. HNATIUK: That's very possible that the conditions they will encounter at Point Barrow will be worse than any conditions they will encounter during drilling.

THE COMMISSIONER: Excuse me, I mean you are saying that it is very possible that the conditions around Point Barrow will be worse than any they will encounter during drilling. That's in a way like the possibility of one blowout in 20,00, isn't it?

MR. HNATIUK: Let me put it this way. They will make way through the ice at Point Barrow just as soon as they think they can get through it and I am certain they will be encountering ice. They will be contacting ice. While they are on drilling



1 location however they will generally be moved off,  
2 when the ice approaches so they are unlikely to  
3 contact very much heavy ice while they are on drilling  
4 location. They will move off when the ice pack moves  
5 in.  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29





1 THE COMMISSIONER: If you are  
2 dealing in possibilities, isn't it equally possible  
3 that around -- on the voyage around Point Barrow into  
4 the Beaufort Sea they may very well encounter ice  
5 conditions of no real difficulty, in reasonably calm  
6 weather, conditions that may be not at all similar to  
7 those that they might encounter at any time, during  
8 the whole of the drilling season in the Beaufort Sea.

9 I mean, are you saying that  
10 Dome is relying on the possibility of encountering  
11 heavy ice and storm conditions, when they bring the  
12 vessels around the -- around Point Barrow, and that  
13 it is on the basis that that possibility may eventuate,  
14 that they intend to test these vessels?

15 MR. HNATIUK:

16 The vessels will be  
17 tested for speed and for maneuverability and such things,  
18 in southern waters. They will encounter very high  
19 seas as they pass through the Gulf of Alaska. Then,  
20 they will wait until ice conditions clear somewhat at  
21 Point Barrow, before they run their way through it.  
22 They wish to get through that ice and drilling just  
23 as soon as possible, because they have a very large  
24 investment there, that they would like to put to work.  
25 They will not wait until it's perfectly clear. They  
26 are not likely to encounter storm conditions at Point  
27 Barrow, that is a most favourable time of year as far  
28 as storms go. So they are not likely to encounter  
29 high seas, but they must rely on some southerly winds  
30 to ease the ice pack enough for them to get through.

31 Once they get into the Beaufort



1 Sea to their drilling locations, they will hopefully  
2 be in open water, and when the heavy ice pack moves  
3 in, they will move to shelter.

4 THE COMMISSIONER:

5 Yes, I certainly appreciate  
6 your discussing this with us as frankly as you are.

7 The -- another thing, you said that the -- well, you  
8 said to us well, if the insurance companies are willing  
9 to provide coverage, provided to insure these vessels  
10 against the risk of their loss in the Beaufort Sea,  
11 well then the insurance companies must be convinced  
12 that they will be sea-worthy in Arctic waters, capable  
13 of withstanding ice, that they won't crack up in the  
14 ice, but all the insurance companies will be insuring  
15 is the loss of the vessel. What these people are  
16 concerned about is what will occur if there is a  
17 loss of the marine life of the Beaufort Sea, which has  
18 nothing to do with the insurance companies.

19 MR. HNATIUK:

20 Well, I tried to cover  
21 that earlier by saying that the drilling would be  
22 terminated, and they would disconnect, and the blowout  
23 preventers would be closed, if dangerous ice moves in.  
24 Then, when it reached a certain concentration, or a  
25 certain distance from the boat, they would release  
26 their anchors, and move away, so I don't believe the  
27 seaworthiness of this ship really enters into the safety  
28 of the particular well, because they would have  
29 disconnected and not be drilling at the time the ice  
30 approaches. But it is in the eventuality that the  
31 ship was damaged, that the government required a second  
32 ship to be in the Beaufort Sea, such that if something



1 happened to one, the second is available, to start  
2 a relief well.

THE COMMISSIONER:

3 Isn't the second drilling  
4 in other wells some distance away?

MR. HNATIUK:

5 There is a government  
6 requirement that says something about how far it can  
7 be away, I'm not just sure of that, but it's obviously  
8 fairly close, and could move over in very short order,  
9 that short distance.

THE COMMISSIONER:

10 Well could it, if the  
11 ice were closing in? How far apart are these two  
12 wells going to be?

MR. HNATIUK:

13 I guess it's -- I don't  
14 think is on any longer -- oh there it is. I guess it's  
15 something in the order of forty miles or so, thirty-five  
16 or so miles.

THE COMMISSIONER:

17 So the second ship is  
18 thirty-five or forty miles away from the one that --  
19 each is thirty-five or forty miles away from the other  
20 one, so that if either gets into trouble in the ice,  
21 its sister ship is thirty-five or forty miles away.

MR. HNATIUK:

22 Which is maybe three or  
23 four hours. When that ship gets into trouble due to  
24 ice, if you're thinking in terms of it being crushed,  
25 or the hull being damaged, they certainly would not be  
26 drilling at that time, they would simply be standing  
27 by waiting for the ice to clear. They would have their  
28 well secured, and they would be just standing by to  
29 see whether the ice conditions got worse or not.

THE COMMISSIONER:

Now, just one other thing;





1 The figure of 1 in 20,000, one blowout, one oil  
2 blowout in 20,000 wells drilled, is based on experience  
3 in other parts of the world, but what concerns me is  
4 that you're applying that ratio, that figure, 1 over  
5 20,000, based on experience in other parts of the  
6 world, to drilling in Arctic waters in an environment  
7 that is not comparable to any environment in which  
8 the industry has been drilling in the past.

9 In other words, you've gotten  
10 your ratio of 1 blowout in 20,000 from drilling in  
11 different environments around the world, and you're  
12 applying that ratio to a wholly new environment, the  
13 waters of the Beaufort Sea, which we have been told  
14 are -- constitute a -- let me put it this way, which  
15 we've been told that drilling has never been undertaken  
16 in an environment as hostile as the Beaufort Sea, and  
17 I'm concerned that you are simply taking the ratio  
18 of 1 blowout in 20,000 wells drilled, a figure based  
19 on experience in quite different environments around  
20 the world, and applying it to the Beaufort Sea; but  
21 I want you to comment on that.

MR. HNATIUK:

22 That figure is based on  
23 all the wells drilled offshore, going way back to the  
24 early fifties, when they didn't know much at all about  
25 drilling offshore. They didn't have very good vessels,  
26 they didn't have very good blowout preventers, and  
27 technology has increased -- has improved dramatically  
since that time. These ships in the Beaufort Sea will  
have the very best and the very latest of equipment,  
and will have more blowout preventers than a lot of



these other wells did. The waves are not severe, compared to some of the other parts of the world where offshore drilling has taken place.

So I think the two are compensating; the fact that we're taking all of the wells drilled since they started, and technology has improved very much, and I think this tends -- this should offset the more hostile environment. There have been some wells drilled where some ice was present, but nothing like the Beaufort Sea. I might mention however, in the North Sea, which is the most hostile environment in which drilling is currently occurring, they've drilled, I think almost 300 wells, since their last blowout in 1971 or '72 in the North Sea. They have only lost I believe 500 barrels of oil during the drilling over a long period, where they had waves of 75 or 80 feet.

THE COMMISSIONER:

Well, thank you very much. While Mr. Hnatiuk is here, if any of you people who want to -- Mrs. Kirby or Mr. Ruben, if you want to carry-on. If you don't mind.

GARRET RUBEN, resumed;

THE WITNESS:

Since we talk about oil spills, we seem to just think about oil spills. Maybe it won't happen, maybe construction will come out real good. We're not worried about how much oil is going to go in the -- lost. We're worried about the animals, what we live on. If even oil spill don't kill out the animals, we would have nothing to say about it. But what we're worried about



1 is the animals. If we can just send a message if  
2 there's oil spill, if we can say, you fellows keep  
3 away from here, like people, then we won't be afraid.  
4 Since we can't do that to the animals, the poor  
5 animals will be all killed on account of oil spills.  
6 That's what we're more concerned about.

7 Do we know how many animals  
8 pass through Beaufort Sea during the year? Summertime  
9 all the birds pass through, in summertime all the birds  
10 and seals and fish travel in the ocean. Polar bears  
11 travel in winter. Each one eat each other, but they  
12 have to live some way; but still, if the oil spill  
13 happened to burst out and kill all the animals, there'll  
14 be no survival for no poor animals. That's what we're  
15 worried about.

16 MR. HNATIUK: In answer to  
17 that question I certainly appreciate your concern,  
18 and I'll repeat that the chances of a blowout are  
19 very very remote, and every effort would be made to  
20 clean it up. I can't agree with your comment though  
21 that all of the animals would be killed. I'll repeat  
22 a number I quoted which you may have heard before,  
23 from Canmar: If an oil well blew out all -- for a  
24 whole year, it would cover, and it were made a film  
25 of oil on the water one millimeter thick -- one millimeter  
26 doesn't mean much to you but it takes 25 millimeters  
27 to make an inch; but let's assume that the oil had  
28 spread out to be one millimeter, it would cover an  
29 area five miles by five miles.

30 Now that will not stay in



one place. It will spread, either contained in the ice, or it will drift with currents if it's not picked up, but that is not enough oil to kill all of the life in the ocean. That is a small area compared to the total area in which the million or million and a half seals live; and I agree that if there is an oil blowout there will be some birds killed, there will be some effect on seals. We don't know what the effect on seals will be. In the experiments on healthy strong seals, they found that after 4 days the seals did not show any sign of having been in the oil, and during the experiments there was an indication that they tried to avoid the oil.

It's true that the seals that were hauled down south by airplane died when they were exposed to oil, but they were dying before they were exposed to oil, and they attribute that to the stress. Now possibly if there were an oil spill when they were moulting, when the seals were moulting, they would be under a stress. Or maybe if it was year when the conditions were very severe and they were under a stress, the oil added to that stress would be dangerous.

But we are told that the reproduction of the seals, of the ringed seals, is assured because the seals, the ringed seals pup in the landfast ice, and if there were a blowout, it would be in the broken ice, in the pack ice, and it would move to the west in the pack ice, so the reproduction of the seals, we are told by the government





C. J. J. J. J.

1 scientists, is assured, because they're pupping in  
2 the landfast ice that's not protected by the --  
3 that will not be affected by the oil. The landfast  
4 ice won't be affected by the oil.

5 Some fish might be affected  
6 particularly if the oil gets into the shallow bays  
7 along the shore, to it would be necessary to protect  
8 those areas that are identified as being sensitive.  
9 If they are -- if they are important fisheries  
10 areas, they must be protected first, but I can't agree  
11 that all of the wildlife would be killed. You know  
12 that 1974 was a very bad year. Instead of 400,000  
13 snow geese being available to migrate south, there  
14 were only 200,000 because there were no young geese  
15 produced that year, and that was a severe blow from  
16 nature.

17 The scientists also tell  
18 us that in 1974 there was only a 10% survival of the  
19 seal pups, 10% of the usual number survived due to  
20 the severe ice year; and also they only counted 50%  
21 as many seals hauled up on the ice in 1975 as they  
22 did in '74, so there must have been a lot of adult  
23 seals lost during that poor, that heavy ice year.

24 You tell us the seals were  
25 thin, they didn't have fat, they sunk when they were  
26 shot. It was a very severe year on everything. There  
27 wasn't much food produced in the ocean because the  
28 light wasn't getting through the ice, and the turbid  
29 water was backed up.

These are severe blows from



Caret Ruben

1 nature, that I'm sure occur quite often; and in the  
2 assessment it talks about 100,000 eider ducks dying  
3 one year because the lead didn't open and they starved  
4 to death. These are many severe blows from nature,  
5 and it seems to have recovered from those, and we feel  
6 that there won't be an oilspill, but if there was one,  
7 that the animals will recover, but it may take a few  
8 years.

9 THE WITNESS: To go back to  
10 one year oilspill, you talk about five miles by five  
11 miles. You know how many gallons that'll be?

12 MR. HNATIUK: I'd have to  
13 stop and figure it out, but that's based on 1,500  
14 barrels a day, for 365 days, whatever that works out  
15 to.

16 THE WITNESS: Why should we  
17 worry about it when it's only going to be five miles  
18 by five miles oil spill in the year?

19 MR. HNATIUK: It won't stay  
20 in that nice neat five by five mile square.

21 THE WITNESS: Okay, like the  
22 way I look at it, when you say it's going to be only  
23 five miles by five miles, it's not going to be that  
24 way, according to what you say, it's going to be five  
25 miles by five miles, but it might stretch out to 1,500  
26 miles that way and maybe a mile wide or something.

27 MR. HNATIUK: I'm sorry, I  
28 tried to explain that my five mile square was just an  
29 imaginary one to show how much oil was involved, and  
30 I agree it'll be stretch out for maybe hundreds of miles,



Carlet Ruben  
Mrs. R. Kirby

1 if the ice moved a lot that year.

2 THE COMMISSIONER: It might  
3 be stretched out for hundreds of miles?

4 MR. HNATIUK: Yes, Milne's  
5 report speculates that --

6 THE COMMISSIONER: It would  
7 be stretched out along the lead that forms for miles  
8 and miles and miles in the Beaufort Sea, on an east  
9 west angle, or an east-west line, generally.

10 MR. HNATIUK: I was thinking  
11 more in terms of it being encapsulated in the ice,  
12 and drifting with the ice that far, but it certainly  
13 would move within leads as well.

14 THE WITNESS: Well, I guess  
15 we should understand now.

16 (WITNESS ASIDE)

17  
18 ROSEMARY KIRBY, resumed:

19 THE WITNESS: May I just ask  
20 one question please, and it's the question, has there  
21 been any experiments done in the summertime on icebergs,  
22 oilspills?

23 MR. HNATIUK: An experiment  
24 with oil in ice in the summertime? No, the government  
25 had money approved to do some spills. They wanted to  
26 spill 16 drums I understand; some in open water, and  
27 some in broken ice, and some under old ice; but due  
28 to objections they cancelled it and only did part of  
29 the experiment which was checking the ice movement. The  
30 decided not to spill the oil.





Mrs. R. Kirby

1 THE WITNESS: Okay, thank you  
2 very much.

3 (WITNESS ASIDE)

4  
5 THE COMMISSIONER: Well thank  
6 you Mr. Hnatiuk. I do -- ladies and gentlemen -- I do  
7 want you to know that I appreciate Mr. Hnatiuk's  
8 willingness to answer questions. We've been conducting  
9 a travelling seminar on offshore drilling at Holman  
10 and Sachs and Tuktoyaktuk, and now at Paulatuk over the  
11 last two weeks, and I think we've all learned a lot,  
12 and I want to thank you Mr. Hnatiuk. I'm afraid we've  
13 all given you a hard time tonight, but you can take it.

14 (LAUGHTER)

15 MR. HNATIUK: I didn't even  
16 eat any supper tonight.

17 (LAUGHTER)

18 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, just  
19 because Mr. Hnatiuk and I have been doing all the  
20 talking doesn't mean that I don't want to hear more  
21 from any of you who still wish to say something. The  
22 night is young and if any of you want to come forward  
23 and say anything, you're certainly welcome. Maybe  
24 we're about half way through the evening anyway, maybe  
25 we should just have a cup of coffee for five minutes,  
26 and anyone who wants to speak can come forward then.

27 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 10:20 P.M.)

28 (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED PURSUANT TO ADJOURNMENT)

29 THE COMMISSIONER: Ladies and  
30 gentlemen, maybe we should take our seats again.



1                                    EDWARD RUBEN, resumed:

2                                    THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, I  
3        just want to say a few more words about our land. Like  
4        the way I said before when I was talking about our land.  
5        Like, one way or another, we have to put protection our  
6        land, because not only for us, for our next future.  
7        That's why we're talking about our land this evening.  
8        We don't want our country like our -- I mean, what we  
9        live on, live off of our country, we don't want it to  
10      be disturbed our trapping area or hunting area, sealing  
11      area or fishing area. And we not only thinking of  
12      ourselves, we're thinking ahead. What's coming to us?  
13      We probably have a lot of years to go to find from  
14      our land.

15                                  When I'm talking, like I'm  
16      not only talking for myself, I'm trying to talk for  
17      everybody in the north, and we only ask for our  
18      settlement. Like the way I'm saying, when we have  
19      no job, it's hard for a family. You've got to live,  
20      you've got to make it, you've got to keep trying; not  
21      only one day or a couple of days. You've got to carry  
22      on until you get something, and all these years, I've  
23      been raising two families. I married twice, and some  
24      days it's kind of hard for me.

25                                  Like sometime when I'm laying  
26      down, I go to bed at night, just by thinking and --  
27      you know sometime it's hard to find sleep when you're  
28      worrying about your family, worrying about what's  
29      going to coming up to you, and especially today, like  
30      so many changes, it's like hard to understand for us,



Edward Tulen  
Tony Green

1 up in the north here. Like, when we start hearing  
2 about pipeline, oil companies, that makes it hard for  
3 us, what's coming up to us. What can we do? You can't  
4 say no, you stop don't do this and don't do that. We  
5 can't just say that because it don't matter what we  
6 say we can't stop anybody anyway, what they're doing  
7 in this world.

8 That's why I was talking with  
9 any of the other boys right now, and I know all these  
10 years when I go through, when they come to think of it,  
11 what is passed, managed to go through all these years,  
12 sometimes by yourself, or sometimes you get help. Anyway,  
13 I think we have to make live one way or another, and  
14 kind of difficult for us to -- you know -- try to think  
15 of everything at once.

16 We have to divide it up like,  
17 divide up what we think of and what we should do, and  
18 I think that's the only way we doing it up in this  
19 north. One more thing I want to mention about, and  
20 like a year ago, when we hear oil spill down by Balaena Bay,  
21 our games, fish, sealing, and ducks, and everything  
22 like that, and for our land, for hunting land, our  
23 caribou; caribou, foxes, fish, and things like that --  
24 sorry, it looks like I'm running out of words now.  
25 I think I'll let one of the boys take over.

26 (WITNESS ASIDE)

27  
28 TONY GREEN, resumed:

29 THE WITNESS: Yes, Mr. Berger,  
30 I'd like to say something, of how we use the land around



1 our area here, and it shows in a map here, you only  
2 got that one. It shows where we supposed -- we're  
3 supposed to be going there right? This is not the  
4 only land we use. We use the land right up to there,  
5 and we travel all along, right up -- and after that,  
6 about March again, we come up here some place, for  
7 hunting caribous, hunting around that area, trapping  
8 around that area; and I'd like to say a few words  
9 about the surveys they carried just very lately.

10 Well the last we heard that  
11 Fish and Wildlife Service, I think it was them people.  
12 What they do is they get two airplanes, two 185's;  
13 they were surveying for caribous now right? They get  
14 two 185's, and they put a net, some kind of net over  
15 there, and what they do is they come around with the  
16 two airplanes and chase the caribous into the net  
17 there. Well, in that part, you see, what good is it  
18 going to do us eh? Because we live strictly off the  
19 land, and we always find something to eat from the  
20 land, and we get some income from trapping. It's that  
21 important to us, and why should the peoples come around  
22 like that and disturb all the animals, because it's  
23 so important to us, a thing like that really hurt us.

24 Cause there's no other way  
25 we'll make our living here. We're strictly hunters and  
26 trappers, and that's the way we like it, and that is  
27 all for now I have to say on that part.

28 (WITNESS ASIDE)

29  
30 GARRET RUBEN, resumed:





1 THE WITNESS: Well I'd just  
2 like to tell you that how much we appreciate your  
3 visiting our small little community here, and the  
4 peoples that talked made me feel better because I don't  
5 feel alone. Although I have just started with feeling  
6 nervous, but anyway we'll break it out.

7 We'd like to thank you very  
8 much for coming here, yourself and all your people. We  
9 never see that many different faces at one time before.  
10 This is the history of Paulatuk. We're going to have  
11 to get all you to sign your names tomorrow morning  
12 before you first leave. We got a book there, we try  
13 to get everybody to sign their name, and it's going  
14 to show one day that many people signed here, and  
15 that'll be the history.

16 So I guess I asked pretty  
17 near everybody here to see if anybody else has anything  
18 to say. I think that's the last two I found, so we'd  
19 like to thank you very much for visiting here, and I  
20 guess if nobody else has anything to say, we'd like  
21 to have a dance for you visitors, especially for  
22 Berger himself.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

23 THE COMMISSIONER: Well,  
24 thank you Mr. Ruben. I can tell you that all of the  
25 people that came with me, all of us have enjoyed our  
26 stay here in Paulatuk, and we're glad that we'll be  
27 staying for the dance, and staying overnight; and we'll  
28 have to leave tomorrow because we have to get back  
29 to Inuvik <sup>tomorrow</sup> so that we can go to Arctic Red River on  
30 Saturday morning. We don't often get a day off, and



1 we never get a night off, but we do our best.

2 I certainly want you to know  
3 that I've listened carefully to what each one of you  
4 has said, and I learned something from each one of  
5 you. I find as I go around these communities here in  
6 the north, that people like yourselves have an awful  
7 lot to contribute to the decisions that are going to  
8 have to be made about the future of the north, and as  
9 I said to you when we started the meeting this afternoon,  
10 it's your future, and you should have a say in it,  
11 and I'm here to see that you do have a say.

12 I'll be keeping in mind what  
13 you've told me today, and it's going to be written  
14 up, and we'll send a copy to the settlement, so that  
15 you'll have it, but I'll have it so that I can read  
16 it again, because I'll want to do that. I don't want  
17 to forget the things you've told me here today; and  
18 after that, after I've heard all the evidence from all  
19 the people that want to tell me what they think, I'll  
20 be writing my report and recommendations for the  
21 government. That will be later in the year, and the  
22 report will be made public, and you'll, I'm sure, hear  
23 all about it at the time.

24 So, thank you for having us  
25 as your guests here in your settlement, and we have  
26 enjoyed the hearing, found it helpful to all of us,  
27 and I'm sure we'll enjoy the dance and the rest of  
28 our stay just as much, so we'll adjourn the hearing  
29 until it reconvenes then in Arctic Red River Saturday,  
30 sometime Saturday, I guess. Thank you.

347  
M835  
701.46  
Community

Canada. National Energy Board  
TITLE  
Mackenzie Valley Pipeline -  
DATE DUE Inquiry  
DISP. POWER - NAME

347  
M835  
701.46  
Community







CA1  
Z 1  
-74M211

MACKENZIE VALLEY PIPELINE INQUIRY

Government  
Publication

IN THE MATTER OF THE APPLICATIONS BY EACH OF  
(a) CANADIAN ARCTIC GAS PIPELINE LIMITED FOR A  
RIGHT-OF-WAY THAT MIGHT BE GRANTED ACROSS  
CROWN LANDS WITHIN THE YUKON TERRITORY AND  
THE NORTHWEST TERRITORIES, and  
(b) FOOTHILLS PIPE LINES LTD. FOR A RIGHT-OF-WAY  
THAT MIGHT BE GRANTED ACROSS CROWN LANDS  
WITHIN THE NORTHWEST TERRITORIES  
FOR THE PURPOSE OF A PROPOSED MACKENZIE VALLEY PIPELINE

and

IN THE MATTER OF THE SOCIAL, ENVIRONMENTAL AND  
ECONOMIC IMPACT REGIONALLY OF THE CONSTRUCTION,  
OPERATION AND SUBSEQUENT ABANDONMENT OF THE ABOVE  
PROPOSED PIPELINE

(Before the Honourable Mr. Justice Berger, Commissioner)

Arctic Red River, N.W.T.

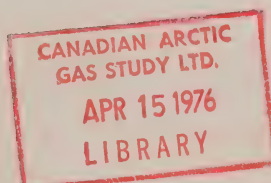
March 13, 1976.

---

PROCEEDINGS AT COMMUNITY HEARING

---

Volume 47





1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30

APPEARANCES:

Darryl Carter, Esq.,

for Canadian Arctic Gas  
Pipeline Limited;

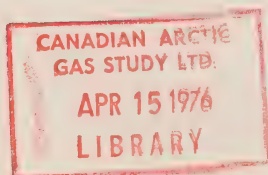
Patrick Beer, Esq.,

for Foothills Pipe Lines  
Ltd.



	<u>I N D E X</u>	<u>Page</u>
1		
2	WITNESSES:	
3	Chief Hyacinthe ANDRE	4526, 4653
4	Willie SIMON	4530 4619
5	Mrs. Julienne ANDRE	4530
6	Norbert NATSIE	4534
7	Robert ANDRE	4535, 4614, 4639, 4653
8	Gabe ANDRE	4541
9	Tony ANDRE	4547
10	Mrs. Marka BULLOCK	4550
11	Nap NORBERT	4552, 4636
12	Edward NAZON	4569
13	James ANDRE	4572, 4640
14	Mrs. Odilla COYEN	4577
15	Mrs. Alice ANDRE	4579
16	William NORMAN	4580
17	Mrs. Agnes ANDRE	4590
18	Gabe BLUECOAT	4585
19	Mrs. Liza ANDRE	4594
20	Mrs. Alestine ANDRE	4596
21	Mrs. Caroline CARDINAL	4606
22	Jerome ANDRE	4608
23	Noel ANDRE	4615
24	Pascale Baptiste	4643
25	Barney NATSIE	4649

347  
M835  
Community 47





I N D E XPage

## EXHIBITS:

C-262	Submission by R. Andre	4541
C-263	Letter to Editor of "The Drum" by Julianne Andre	4567
C-264	Submission by Mrs. O. Coyen	4579
C-265	Submission by Mrs. A. Andre	4580
C-266	Submission by W. Norman	4585
C-267	Submission by G. Bluecoat	4592
C-268	Submission by Mrs. A. Andre	4592
C-269	Submission by Mrs. A. Andre	4608
C-270	Submission by Mrs. C. Cardinal	4608





1 Arctic Red River, N.W.T.

2 March 13, 1976.

3 (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED PURSUANT TO ADJOURNMENT)

4 THE COMMISSIONER: Ladies and  
5 gentlemen, I'll call our hearing to order today.

6 I am Judge Berger and I am  
7 here to listen to what you have to say about the  
8 proposal to build a pipeline to carry gas from the  
9 Arctic to Southern Canada and the United States.

10 There are two companies that  
11 want to build the pipeline, one is Arctic Gas, the  
12 other is Foothills Pipe Lines. I've invited people from  
13 those companies to come today to listen to what you  
14 have to say. Later on if you want to ask them any  
15 questions, we'll bring them forward and you will have  
16 a chance to question them.

17 But the main reason I'm here  
18 is to listen to what you think about the proposal to  
19 build a pipeline.

20 (NOEL ANDRE SWORN AS INTERPRETER)

21 THE COMMISSIONER: Now if  
22 this pipeline is built, there will be 6,000 men required  
23 here in the north to build it, and we are told it will  
24 take three years to build. We are told there will be  
25 1,200 men needed -- 1,200 more men needed to build the  
26 gas plants for Imperial, Gulf and Shell in the delta,  
27 on Richards Island and at Parsons Lake. We are told  
28 this will be the biggest construction project in the  
29 history of our country.

30 The government also says, "Well,



1 if we go ahead and build a gas pipeline from the  
2 Arctic along the Mackenzie Valley to Southern Canada,  
3 then after that we'll have an oil pipeline," and in  
4 fact the companies that found gas -- Imperial, Gulf  
5 and Shell -- have announced that they want to build an  
6 oil pipeline too.

7 So I want to know what you  
8 people who live here in Arctic Red River think about  
9 all of these things because you are the ones who will  
10 live with the decision, whatever it is.

11 Now, this is a map of the  
12 pipeline in the delta and Arctic Gas wants to bring  
13 gas from Alaska along here, along the coast. Now the  
14 proposal they first made was to bring the pipeline  
15 around here by Aklavik, McPherson and Arctic Red, and  
16 then along the Mackenzie. Now they say that they want  
17 to bring it along the coast, across the delta, and down  
18 the east side of the delta <sup>and</sup> along the river.

19 The other company, Foothills,  
20 say that they just want to take the gas from the delta  
21 south along the east side of the delta and then along  
22 the river. So that's what they're talking about.

23 You can tell me today what  
24 you think about this, whether you want to obtain work  
25 on the pipeline, if it is built, what you think it  
26 will mean to your village here, what you think it  
27 will mean to the environment so that I can take what  
28 you say into account and I can think about what you  
29 have had to say.

30 I brought some people with me,



Chief H. Andre

1 today, I'll just tell you who they are because they  
2 are all over the place today. This is Miss Hutchinson,  
3 who is the secretary of the Inquiry, and the young man  
4 with the mask on his face is just recording on tape  
5 everything you say so it can be typed up and printed  
6 so that we'll have a way of remembering whatever you say  
7 here today.

8                   These people over here at these  
9 desks along the wall are the members of the C.B.C.'s  
10 Northern Broadcasting Unit -- Whit Fraser, who broadcasts  
11 in English; Jim Sittichinli, who broadcasts in Loucheux;  
12 Joe Toby, who broadcasts in Dogrib and Chippewyan;  
13 Louis Blondin who broadcasts in Slavey; and Abe Ookpik,  
14 who broadcasts in Eskimo. There are other people here  
15 from the radio and television and the newspapers from  
16 other parts of the north and Southern Canada because  
17 the people throughout the north and in Southern Canada  
18 are interested in knowing what's happening up here.

19                   I have been to listen to the  
20 people all throughout the north now, and we've heard  
21 about 700 people in about 26 of the communities now,  
22 so we're here today to listen to you, the people of  
23 Arctic Red River.

24                   So we're ready now, chief, if  
25 you'd like to begin.

26  
27 CHIEF HYACINTHE ANDRE, sworn:

28 THE WITNESS: Well, thanks  
29 very much, Mr. Berger. I want to say a few words and  
30 then I'm going to say later on again.





Chief H. Andre

I was born in 1910, 14th of May I was born, since that time my mother and my father look after me. That's why I grow up in this Northwest Territories. That's why I'm still right on it, and I don't want to let my land go. That much I like it. That's why I stay on it till the end of my life.

Seeing how much I work I want to let you know, that time I born my mother grow me up, my father too grow me up. Just big enough I work for myself, I started to work since 1925, I start to trap. I trap in three years I was single. When I was 18 years old I married in 1928, since then I went in the bush. Only this year, 1975, I came in this town, the first town I stayed in in my life. Sometimes I stayed in the bush year-around, summertime, winter. That much I like my land, that's why I stay that long.

That's the way all my people think it, everyone of them is just born right here, right in the Northwest Territories, and they don't want to let the land go. When they started to talk about the pipeline, well everybody just like sick, they start to get sick, never get feel better, just worry about themselves and worry about all their children and all grandchildren, just thinking ahead about ten years' time, we just think about it. That's why we just started to get sick.

Well, since the white man came in this country, since then the white people never tell the Indian, the white man what they going to do never tell the Indian. They just sneak around. They



Chief H. Andre

1 don't want to let the Indian know it, they just do it.

2 Since the oil people coming  
3 down in this country starting to make a cut line, well  
4 they never tell the people. I started at Tree River,  
5 about four to five miles up the Mackenzie and every  
6 year they just make a cut line right back onto my trap  
7 line. Well, every time they wanted to do that they  
8 come in to see me, they asked me. I told him, "No, that's  
9 my living. Just like you got dollar in your pocket,  
10 same thing, that's why I don't want you to go there,  
11 I don't want to tear my one dollar." That's what I  
12 tell them but they go ahead and do it.

13 Lots of times I cursed him  
14 but they never listen to me. Now it's no more good  
15 up there. It used to be good that place, right in  
16 Arctic Red River is where I make my living, everybody  
17 know it.

18 This land, we don't want the  
19 pipeline go right through the Fish Lake right around  
20 Travaillant Lake right east side the Mackenzie.  
21 That's where is Fish Lake, every lake is  
22 Fish Lake. Not only me, it's all that people over  
23 there, that's what they think. Any time there's no  
24 fish on the river, well they have to go to Fish Lake.  
25 That's where the pipeline is going right through.  
26 That's why we don't want the pipeline to go through  
27 there. Not only me I think that way, everyone of them,  
28 that's what they think.

29 The white man, he just think  
30 about his pocket. That's why we don't want the pipeline.



Chief H. Andre

1 They don't listen to us. If we said, "No, no, no, no,"  
2 well they're going to go right through. They just  
3 think about his pocket. That's why us too, we think  
4 about this pocket, we want to settle land first.  
5 Then start a pipeline, that's what we want. Not only  
6 me, every one of them sitting over there, that's what  
7 they want.

8 Every summer they got a  
9 farm right along -- right outside his house he's got  
10 a farm. If I walk right through that land, what he's  
11 going to say? Maybe he's going to kill me right there,  
12 for sure, if I break one cabbage and turnips and carrots,  
13 all that, if I break it, well just look like I lost  
14 so many dollars, I lost it for him.

15 I been working a farm too,  
16 many years, over 12 years. When my dog get loose I  
17 don't want him to go in my garden. When my kids were  
18 small if they wanted to go in there I got to give  
19 them a slap. That much I don't like it when the white  
20 man does the same thing too. They want to go right  
21 through this garden. Last year I went up to Fort  
22 Simpson for meeting, I walk on the street and I see  
23 one guy has got a garden. Boy, I was figuring on  
24 walking right through, it was about that long, I want  
25 to go right through. I just tried myself, that's what  
26 I think all the time when I walk out on the street.

27 Well, that's the way for us,  
28 if they put pipeline right through the Northwest  
29 Territory it's just the same they go right through my  
30 garden. It costs money, that garden. Maybe somebody's



Chief H. Andre  
W. Simon  
Mrs. J. Andre

1 got a garden, you use it for money. Well, if pipeline go  
2 right through it's same thing for us. They're going  
3 to spoil all our trapline and all our Fish Lakes and  
4 all the Mackenzie going to be the same thing, that's  
5 why we don't want a pipeline go right through.

6 That's all I going to tell you,  
7 Mr. Berger. I'm going to tell you something later on.

8 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
9 very much, chief.

10 (WITNESS ASIDE)

11  
12 WILLIE SIMON, sworn:

13 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, I've  
14 got a speech for you, but I'd like to hear from the  
15 rest of the people first, so I'll pass this on to some-  
16 body else for now. Somebody suggested that to me.

17 THE COMMISSIONER: O.K., fine.

18 (WITNESS ASIDE)

19  
20 MRS. JULIENNE ANDRE, sworn

21 THE INTERPRETER: She says  
22 she's the oldest in this Arctic Red River settlement.  
23 There's nobody older than me, she says. You see all  
24 these people here, she says, they're all behind me.

25 She said I talked to my people  
26 and they don't listen to me, and now they started on  
27 this pipeline. I don't want that pipeline to come  
28 through our country, especially close to my town, she  
29 says. I don't want it around, she says.

30 She said my children are going





Mrs. J. Andre

1 to be hungry, she said. That's why they're doing  
2 that. She said I've got four children of my own right  
3 now, she said, and they've got children too, she said.  
4 I don't want them to be hungry.

5 She said if they put the  
6 pipeline across Mackenzie, the proposed pipeline, she  
7 said it will flood behind it, and of course I'll be  
8 up here in the Mackenzie and I'll get flooded, she said.  
9 That's why I really don't want the pipeline crossing  
10 the Mackenzie.

11 She said when the Mackenzie  
12 ice is going, is dangerous, she said. Who is going to  
13 ~~stop~~ the ice from damaging things like that? She said  
14 when first mission built this church in Arctic Red, it  
15 got flooded and the water came up close there, she  
16 said, and they expect it again pretty soon. I don't  
17 want that pipeline to cross the Mackenzie in the mean-  
18 time, she said.

19 There's no fish ever since they  
20 start cutting up ground, and whatever/<sup>work</sup>was around out  
21 in the country, all ~~that~~ runs out into the river and  
22 the fish comes around and goes through all that and  
23 how the fish going to live with that, she said? She  
24 said it's not only on the rivers it's like that. Even  
25 out in the Fish Lakes its the same as Mackenzie River.  
26 Or even out in the bush, she said, they work around  
27 there and everything is all waste, washes through  
28 the creeks and onto the lake and kills the fish or  
29 something, that's how come there's no fish in them.  
30 She said her <sup>son is</sup> / out in the bush/<sup>with her</sup>all the time and she



Mrs. J. Andre

1 sees all that.

2 She said the fish are  
3 supposed to run from one lake to another through  
4 creeks, that's the only way fish is good all the time,  
5 she said. It used to be. But now since they work  
6 around there, they block up some creeks and that's  
7 where the fish dies, she said.

8 She said I was born in between  
9 Thunder River and Tree River, that's Thunder River  
10 here, Tree River here. In between there I'm born, she  
11 said, and I want to die there of old age, she said.  
12 But at Travaillant Lake, that's my lake, she said.  
13 I was thinking of my land, she said, and ever since my  
14 husband died my family stayed at the same places, that's  
15 around Tree River. I think they're going to stay there  
16 a long time.

17 She said that's my land around  
18 where I'm living now, she said. That's around Tree River  
19 and even around Travaillant Lake. Even you try to chase  
20 me away from there, she said, I wouldn't go, she said.  
21 She said this land is ours, she said. I was born in  
22 it and God gave it to us, she said. We didn't buy it,  
23 she says. Why they want to buy it from us, she said?  
24 She said we don't need your money, she said. Even  
25 though we got no money we still don't need your money.

26 I caught one marten last  
27 year but this year I didn't catch nothing, she said.  
28 She said all my life I lived on the land, she said.  
29 I don't know anything about garden stuffs (she means  
30 potatoes and all that). She said every time/something killed



Mrs. J. Andre

1 fresh, she said, that tastes good, she said.

2 She said if we give our land  
3 away what our children's children will do, she said?  
4 They don't even know how -- they won't even know how  
5 to make their own living, she said. (She meant  
6 bush life living). What they will do, I wonder, she  
7 said? They'll be hungry for sure, she said. If we  
8 give our land away we wouldn't be smiling, she said,  
9 we'll be crying just to see our children hungry and  
10 that will make us cry, she said.

11 She said it's good to stay  
12 in the bush and make your living there, she said. It's  
13 a great world out there, she said. If we give our  
14 land away what we going to do, she said? Nobody knows  
15 how to grow anything, garden and things like that. All  
16 they know is how to hunt, and if the pipeline come through,  
17 what we going to do, she said; nothing, she said.

18 Ever since the seismic line  
19 came through, she said there's nothing in the country,  
20 she said. Nothing. Even fish, she said, I even seen  
21 fish just the skin over the bones, she said. But right  
22 now she said there's no fish, there's just small little  
23 ones, she said.

24 She said there's no moose, no  
25 caribou, ptarmigan, no rabbit, no beaver, and in case  
26 of fire she said it's going to burn the pipeline, she  
27 said.

28 I been all over the country,  
29 she said, I even went as far as Dawson over the mountain,  
30 and all around this country I've been; but most of all,





Mrs. J. Andre  
N. Natsie

1 I like Travaillant Lake, she said. I'm stingy for it,  
2 she said, real stingy for it.

3 This is all I'm going to say.  
4 I'm tired, she said.

5 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
6 very much, madam.

7 (WITNESS ASIDE)

8  
9 NORBERT NATSIE, sworn:

10 THE INTERPRETER: This is  
11 Norbert now.

12 THE WITNESS: I am Norbert  
13 Natsie.

14 THE INTERPRETER: We are  
15 poor, he said, but even that, you come around and  
16 visit us, I thank you very much for that, he said.

17 Now I'm going to tell you what  
18 the chief and the old lady told you, well that's the  
19 same way I think too, he said. Ever since we heard  
20 about pipeline we said, "No," and we asked to say "No."  
21 We asked them, "No," and as long as we live, he said  
22 he won't quit saying, "No pipeline."

23 He said a long time ago some  
24 white man came around. We asked and asked, we never did  
25 see anything, he said. He gave lots of promise but we  
26 never did see anything.

27 He said today I don't like to  
28 talk, but I guess we just have to say something, that's  
29 how come we're talking, he said. He said they should  
30 settle lands first instead of talking about the pipeline.



N. Natsie  
R. Andre

That's all I'm going to say.

What the chief said, he said everything for me, he said. That's all I want to say, he said.

THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you very much.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

THE COMMISSIONER: Who's going to go first?

MR. ANDRE: O.K., I'll go first.

THE COMMISSIONER: O.K., fine.

ROBERT ANDRE, sworn:

THE WITNESS: Before I start, I guess you never received any welcome here, so on behalf of the people of Arctic Red River, I extend to you and your staff a warm welcome.

THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you.

THE WITNESS: We're happy for you today, people throughout the north who will say again that there will be no development such as the pipeline before<sup>we</sup> as the original owners of this land, receive a fair and just land settlement.

You will hear these people express concerns regarding their land, what resource development has done, and will do physically to the land. You will hear our people look in the past, you will hear people express their frustrations in coping with life under your society.

Let me reflect into the history:



R. Andre

1 of our land and its people and the situation that we  
2 find ourselves in at the present time. Up till the turn  
3 of the century no real interest was taken in our land.  
4 A few people came, but we saw no harm in letting these  
5 people onto our land.

6 With increased activity in  
7 the Yukon and the Mackenzie District, the Government  
8 of Canada started to take an active interest in the  
9 north. Our people signed treaties of peace and friend-  
10 ship, with the Government of Canada in 1921. Today  
11 the Government of Canada is saying that we sold our  
12 land with the signing of these treaties, with the com-  
13 pensation of \$5. a year each.

14 Our land at first had only a  
15 few people. Today we are in a situation where we are  
16 being overrun by developers and by governments. Our  
17 land and its resources are being exploited for a hand-  
18 ful of people who control the multi-national corpora-  
19 tions. These people profit while the majority of us,  
20 whether we are white or native, are kept powerless.

21 Still, large-scale developments  
22 such as the pipeline are being planned, and our basic  
23 rights as the original owners of this land have not been  
24 settled. We are saying that on the basis of our  
25 original land rights we have an ownership and the right  
26 to participate directly in resource development. We  
27 must have the right to decide not only when developm ent  
28 will occur, but what kinds of development will take  
29 place, and for the benefit of whom.

30 We are saying we have the right !



R. Andre

1 to determine our own lives. This right derives from  
2 the fact that we were here first. We are saying we  
3 are a distinct people, a nation of people, and we must  
4 have a special right within Canada. We are distinct  
5 in that it will not be an easy matter for us to be  
6 brought into your system because we are different.  
7 We have our own system, our own way of life, our own  
8 cultures, and traditions, we have our own languages,  
9 our own laws, and a system of justice. It will not  
10 be easy for us to be brought into your system, because  
11 of the disadvantages that we have in the social,  
12 economic and political structures of your world.

13 These have always been our  
14 views. It is on the basis of these views that we ask  
15 for a just and fair land claims settlement, to survive  
16 as a people. We have always seen your society as intrud-  
17 ers in a land which is entirely ours. We have always  
18 held the feeling that our original sovereignty has never  
19 been respected. Only until recently has your society  
20 started to listen to us. You may have lived close to  
21 us, but you have not really listened to us. If you  
22 begin to listen to us you will find that many things  
23 will be hard to understand and perhaps more difficult  
24 to accept.

25 Recently our people in the  
26 north were more or less pressured into a situation where  
27 we will have to present a position paper in regard  
28 to our land claims to the Federal Government by next  
29 November 1st. Land claims to me is our survival as  
30 a distinct people. We are a people with a long history





R. Andre

1 and a whole culture, a culture which has survived.

2 Last June at Fort Simpson we  
3 declared to the world that we were a nation of people.  
4 This statement was made because many people do not know  
5 or want to admit our existence as a nation of people.  
6 This statement was made because many of our young people  
7 were being educated in foreign ways are confused and  
8 are unaware as to how best they can meaningfully con-  
9 tribute to our people.

10 Also many of our people are  
11 involved with government and industry, and are slowly  
12 forgetting where they come from and forgetting their  
13 ways. This statement was made to guide these people,  
14 to give them clear direction.

15 Today we have no say as to what  
16 is happening around our land, we have lost control;  
17 control and real power still lies only with a few large  
18 companies who operate with the full co-operation of both  
19 the Governments of the N.W.T. and of Canada. These hand-  
20 ful of companies also operate in other parts of the  
21 world. The resources of these countries are exploited  
22 by these companies so that they can benefit themselves  
23 and they'll all be prosperous and develop nations of  
24 the world. We have seen what happened to these coun-  
25 tries and its people. I think there are many lessons  
26 we can learn from the experiences of these countries  
27 of the third world.

28 Some of these countries have  
29 strived and gained independence but had trouble  
30 developing because the control and power was still in



R. Andre

1 the hands of a few multi-national corporations. True  
2 economic independence was denied them because of this.

3 Our situation in the north is  
4 almost the same as the countries of the third world.  
5 We want to be again a solvent people. We want to survive  
6 as a people, therefore our stand for maximum independence  
7 within your society. We want to develop our own  
8 economy. We want to acquire political independence for  
9 our people within the Canadian Constitution. We want  
10 to govern our own lives and our own lands and its  
11 resources. We want to have our own system of govern-  
12 ment by which we can control and develop our land for  
13 our benefit. We want to have the exclusive rights  
14 to hunt, to fish, and to trap. We want as the original  
15 owners of this land to receive royalties from cash  
16 developments and for future developments which we are  
17 prepared to allow.

18 These royalties will be used  
19 to fund local economic development which we are sure  
20 will last long after the companies have exhausted the  
21 non-renewable resources of our land.

22 The present system attempts  
23 to put us into a wage economy, as employees of companies  
24 and governments over which we have no control. We  
25 want to strengthen the economy at the community level  
26 under the collective control of our people. In this  
27 way many of our young people will be able to participate  
28 directly in the community and not have to move elsewhere  
29 to find employment.

30 We want to become involved in



R. Andre

1 the education of our children in the communities where  
2 we are in the majority. We want to be able to control  
3 the local schools. We want to start our own schools in  
4 the larger centres in the north where we are in the  
5 minority, or we want to have more involvement in the  
6 present form of education system.

7                   Where the governments have  
8 a continuing role after the land settlement, we want  
9 to have a clear recognition as a distinct people,  
10 especially at the community level.

11                   Also at the community level  
12 powers and controls should lie with the chief and  
13 Band Council. To achieve all this is not easy. Much  
14 work lies ahead of us. It will require a united effort  
15 on all issues involving a step by step achievement of  
16 our long-term goals of maximum independence for our  
17 people. We must be united at all levels. We must  
18 again become the people making our own history. To be  
19 able to make our own history is to be able to mould  
20 our own future, to build our society that preserves the  
21 best of our part and our traditions while enabling  
22 us to grow and develop as a whole people.

23                   We want a society where all  
24 are equal and where people do not exploit others. We  
25 are not against change, but it must be under our own  
26 terms and under our control. We ask again that there  
27 be no major development like the pipeline before we  
28 have gained a land settlement which is acceptable to us.  
29 We ask that we be allowed in negotiating towards the  
30 land settlement to put forward our demands as they stand.





R. Andre

G. Andre

1 We ask that our rights as a people for self-determination  
2 be respected. We must all work together for a  
3 successful land settlement. It then becomes a means  
4 to achieve our local needs, our real needs. Those  
5 needs are a land-based and political control to deter-  
6 mine what happens on our land; and above all, independence  
7 for the Dene within Canada.

8 Thank you.

9 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
10 very much, sir. Since your statement is in writing,  
11 will you let us have it and it will be marked as an  
12 exhibit in the proceedings of this Inquiry?

13 (SUBMISSION BY R. ANDRE MARKED EXHIBIT C-262)

14 (WITNESS ASIDE)

15  
16 GABE ANDRE, sworn:

17 THE WITNESS: Gabe Andre. Good  
18 morning, Mr. Berger. What you heard said here, I'm right  
19 behind, and I'll tell you I live in the bush, I'm a  
20 trapper. I come in from my camp today. It's over 70  
21 miles I travelled by skidoo today, just to say a few  
22 words to you for my land, and I trapped in this country,  
23 I didn't remember the time that I got stuck.

24 That's because I know how to  
25 hunt in my country. But since the oil companies start  
26 in this country lots of places I go there's nothing.  
27 I remember one time in June I come from Travaillant Lake  
28 by dogs by myself, I come to one creek with a seismic  
29 line going across that creek, they blow that creek up  
30 so good that whatever they put across that creek was



G. Andre

1 still the same. I drove my dogs across that creek  
2 and all the bush that they put in there, it's still  
3 there, today it's still right there. There was fish  
4 in that lake, going back and forth between those two  
5 lakes. Not only there, at Travaillant Lake (I lived  
6 there, I settled down there eight years now), first  
7 time I got there it was good. How many seismic line  
8 has been coming around there since then? From there  
9 to the Mackenzie River one line I used to have, I never  
10 been in it for seven years. I went through there this  
11 fall. One lake I found four 45-gallon barrels frozen  
12 in the ice around the lake. There used to be beaver  
13 houses on that lake. There's nothing. I don't know  
14 if that's barrel's got gas or oil, I don't know what  
15 they got in there. It's frozen in the ice.

16 I travelled around that  
17 country. Early in the spring after the snow is gone I  
18 see lots of garbage. One day I seen about two or  
19 300 feet of cable laying along the road on C.N. line.  
20 I seen one little wire sticking out of snow. I took  
21 it out, there was no end of it. Why is it left on  
22 the ground? C.N. line now, they don't need it. Why  
23 don't they tear it down? Most of that line is maybe  
24 two or three feet off the ground. We want to walk some  
25 place. If there is something in our way, how can we  
26 pass there? Just think of the game. The game, do  
27 they like it?

28 The fish and the beaver, the  
29 rats, the moose, caribou, whatever they want to do  
30 they're going to do it. They're a free country for



G. Andre

1       them, like I am.

2                               I don't know why they want to  
3       do that, leave things like that laying around the road  
4       on the country, even tearing all them bushes, piling  
5       it on one side of the road. Sometimes I see a caribou  
6       or moose have to go around and walk long ways before  
7       they're going to cross the road. I see lots of places  
8       where they got their camp, their sewer, their every-  
9       thing, it's there melting away, I see it.

10                           Now I see they are putting  
11       some kind of iron in the ground along Mackenzie River.  
12       It's as far as this side of Travaillant River. Why they  
13       put them things in there? Big iron bars sticking in  
14       the ground, in little creeks, every so many miles I  
15       see it, it's all like that. If they going to come  
16       down here, why they doing that? Could they ask us  
17       first before they going to do that? They never mention  
18       nothing.

19                           I remember as far as I can  
20       remember, I'll tell. I remember 1938 I used to trap with  
21       my dad. If he's going to go on the line, round trip,  
22       he always take me. That's not having a ride on the  
23       sled. That's walking. We make living out of this  
24       country. If we know how to do it, it's nothing to it.  
25       Quite a few times I hear some people say, "We get help  
26       from government."

27                           I just sit and smile to myself.  
28                           to radio  
29       I listen/and I understand. I got no education. I don't  
30       know what they mean "get help by government". Even old  
     age pensioners, my mother's right there, she get her



G. Andre

1 old age pension, it's not even enough for her what she  
2 want to do with it.

3 I want to tell you something  
4 about family allowance, what is good to me? I got  
5 five kids, all of them their family allowance put  
6 together is not even enough to buy a set of clothes  
7 for one of them.

8 Last fall I took my kids to  
9 Inuvik to school. I send my wife and four kids to  
10 the school to get clothes for them. Cost me \$280  
11 just for the top clothes. If I get them kids in the  
12 bush I don't know what they're going to wear. I don't  
13 need no grub for them because I get it out of the  
14 country.

15 Today sometime I coming down  
16 onthat river, I just feel mad, you know. What's  
17 happening to us? Nobody know what's happening to us.  
18 My great grandfather had a good time. My grandfather  
19 had a good time. My father had a good time. And we  
20 are the ones that are going to get it. Not too bad  
21 now, but think of our children, our children's children.  
22 Many times something happened to Indians, well maybe  
23 they'll just say, "Ah, it's just another Indian, that's  
24 all."

25 Last fall I was in Inuvik, I  
26 talked to Tree River on the radio. My brother talked to  
27 me and said, "Mummy's sick."

28 I phoned the hospital."We got  
29 nothing to do with it. McPherson's supposed to look  
30 after it." O.K., I phoned McPherson."McPherson tells me,





G. Andre

1 "How sick she is?" How could I know? They wouldn't  
2 send a plane out there.

3 This winter down Travaillant  
4 Creek, Julius Norberg, his wife is sick, real sick, I  
5 seen with my own eyes. I came back to Tree<sup>River</sup> and I got  
6 on the radio, got through to Franklin. They got Inuvik  
7 to come and talk to me, they said, "How sick is that  
8 old woman?"

9 I told him she's sick, real  
10 sick.

11 Well, the hospital wanted to  
12 know how sick she is before they can pick her up.

13 I said, "Don't bother with  
14 hospital," I said, "just send a plane and charge it  
15 up to Julius Norberg."

16 Well, he won't pay for that  
17 plane himself. That woman just went home the other  
18 day, over two weeks she stayed in the hospital.

19 Things like that, nobody think  
20 of us. I'm out there. Who is thinking about me? Nobody.  
21 The game warden, what is the game warden here for?  
22 He says he's looking after the game. I never see game  
23 out there, never see no game warden out there.

24 Now there was a time when  
25 there was no game warden in this country and we done  
26 good.

27 I worked for research two  
28 years. What they want to do out there? We know the  
29 country just as -- better than any one of them. We  
30 take them out there, they just going to look how many



G. Andre

1 trees is there, how many years old is that tree. What  
2 that got to do with us? We don't need the age of the  
3 tree. That guy, I told him to get out of this country  
4 and he did, too. He's gone.

5 We walked for over 30 hours,  
6 nothing to eat. He damn near didn't make it. That was  
7 nothing for me. When I got back to Inuvik I went down  
8 there/<sup>to</sup>I see him, he was on his desk and he's talking  
9 smart. I told him, "Why don't you talk smart that  
10 time when we were walking out there? Just because  
11 you're sitting behind that desk doesn't say you're big  
12 now. I'm not going to work for you any more." I says,  
13 "Go out and find your own man."

14 Now we want this land. We're  
15 going to protect this land. What the white man is  
16 doing with it? The oil companies, some lakes/<sup>have</sup> a cut  
17 line around the lake, some lakes they even let it  
18 run out the other way, the way it should run out. I  
19 see lots of places overflow their little stream from  
20 the lake to the next lake. One place it overflow is  
21 over 25-30 feet deep, and it's only maybe 8 feet tall  
22 willows in there, and they're still sticking out the  
23 same as they are, right on top the overflow. The leave  
24 the earth and all up there.

25 What if there's pipeline down  
26 there, they're going to break it out for sure. Then  
27 that's the time the oil company doesn't know what they're  
28 doing. They better know how to clean it up. I suppose  
29 they're going to get Indians to go and clean it up, eh?  
30 Then if something happen with then Indians, "Oh, that's



G. Andre  
T. Andre

1 only another Indian."

2 Mr. Berger, I said what I  
3 wanted. That's all I'm going to say. Thank you.

4 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
5 sir, I'm glad you said what you wanted to say.

6 (WITNESS ASIDE)

7

8 TONY ANDRE, sworn:

9 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger,  
10 my name's Tony, and I've got no education. I was born  
11 in 1922. I was born Arctic Red. Ever since then I  
12 lived here pretty near 40 years now. I've got ten  
13 kids, and I used to be working around here. I was work-  
14 ing in this school. I was even school janitor right  
15 here one time. Then I was thinking of this pipeline.

16 You're talking about pipeline.  
17 Pipeline like Indians, Indians like us, Dene like us, we can't get a  
18 job nowhere. Look here, I'm going to tell you. As long  
19 as you hold a pencil like that, when the pipeline is  
20 coming through, well, they'll say, "Well, you know, you've  
21 got education in you? You don't have no education,  
22 well you go hide yourself because you're Indian."

23 That's what they're going to  
24 say to the pipeline when we want to work. Now, just  
25 because I got out of this job, just because I don't  
26 know how to write on a piece of paper, I'm not even  
27 in Grade 1, I'm not even Grade 1 and I know how to  
28 talk Slavey, I know how to talk Loucheux, I know how  
29 to talk English as much as I can, what I hear. I  
30 chose this word from the white people. I was thinking





T. Andre

1 of this all the time. I come from 23 miles today, just  
2 gotten here at two o'clock and on the way coming today,  
3 just like my brother Gabe said he was mad coming down  
4 the river today, I was mad coming up the river too,  
5 I was. We don't want people that know education or  
6 non-education can go to work just as good as anything.  
7 I'm not even educated even that, I know how to drive,  
8 even D-8, I know how to drive any vehicle. You can  
9 put me on any vehicle, I'll take it, I'll take it  
10 through where you want it. That's the way the people  
11 of this Arctic Red or all McPherson, Aklavik, Inuvik,  
12 wherever, poor people should have first chance on that  
13 job.

14 My mom and brother, all brothers  
15 they talk about fish and life, but me I want to talk  
16 about this pipeline. This pipeline, the way you have  
17 it there on the map, that's the way we want it. We  
18 want it to keep away from that Fish Lakes. If you  
19 put that rotten rusty pipeline through that Fish Lakes  
20 a person would be crazy to do it. How deep, even how  
21 deep you put that pipeline, by permafrost it will come  
22 up. It will break. That's what my brother said. Who  
23 is going to clean it? You going to push that job  
24 there again, you got to have a pencil, a person that's  
25 not education has got to know what he's doing right  
26 there. If Indian go to work there and it break again,

27 "Well, that black thing there," that's what  
28 they're going to say." That Loucheux Indian don't know  
29 nothing. "

30 Well in first place if they



T. Andre

1 put Indians on that job to make the money, now to make  
2 all that money then ever since I beginning to know, I'm  
3 going to tell you this. We had meeting with this  
4 and that all over places with white people. For the  
5 white people, we come with the white people. We come  
6 down here to see us, to talk to us. Then when they  
7 come down here, they write things down. Yeah, what  
8 you wanted? They write it down. After we finish  
9 meeting-- don't do that, Mr. Berger, don't mark some-  
10 thing on a piece of paper and throw it in the garbage  
11 after you leave here. Don't do it.

12 We want something that's put  
13 down and we want it to get through to Ottawa. Let me  
14 ask you a question. Did you come from Ottawa, Mr.  
15 Berger?

16 THE COMMISSIONER: No, I don't  
17 come from Ottawa, but let me make it clear to you that  
18 the Government of Canada in Ottawa is going to decide  
19 whether there will be a pipeline or not. I am here  
20 to find out what you think about it all, and then I  
21 will report to Ottawa and make recommendations to Ottawa  
22 but Ottawa, the Government of Canada, will decide.  
23 I won't decide; all I can do is go throughout the  
24 north and listen to the people and find out what they  
25 think and then tell Ottawa what I think about it all.  
26 But I don't want you to misunderstand me. I come from  
27 Vancouver, not Ottawa; but that's not a-- but that  
28 doesn't mean that Ottawa isn't going to make the  
29 decision, because Ottawa is.

30 A Yeah.



T. Andre  
Mrs. M. Bullock

1 THE COMMISSIONER: But you're  
2 getting through to me now. You leave it to me to get  
3 through to Ottawa.

4 A Yes.

5 THE COMMISSIONER: You're  
6 getting through to Ottawa too, right now. I think you  
7 should bear that in mind.

8 A Well, all this -- all  
9 us Indians, us people, we want written on a paper to  
10 get where we wanted to get it, and this pipeline  
11 I can say again, we don't want pipeline. Nowhere at  
12 all, you can push it as far as wherever you can put it,  
13 I said we don't want it.

14 You see all them creeks, all  
15 them hills, and what about them people down, Eskimos?  
16 They wouldn't want it down there too.

17 Well, that's all I think I  
18 got to say before I talk too much maybe, Mr. Berger.  
19 That's all I got to say.

20 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you.  
21 I'm glad you came to town to say it.

22 A I come here for you to  
23 listen to my poor words.

24 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you.

25 (WITNESS ASIDE)

26  
27 MRS. MARKA BULLOCK, sworn:

28 THE WITNESS: This is one of  
29 the crazy Andres, this is Mrs. Bullock speaking.

30 Mr. Berger, I would like just



Mrs. M. Bullock

1 a few words, not very long. My brother, Hyacinthe  
2 Andre, is the chief of Arctic Red, I'm very proud of  
3 him, what he told you before, and the second one is  
4 my mom. That's my mom right here. I'm kind of a  
5 spoiled brat, but anyway, I've got a little brain in  
6 my head as far as I'm concerned.

7 How come when Willie first,  
8 when he was elected for this place, he told me,  
9 "Marka, you going to elected for me?" he said.

10 I said, "For what?"

11 He likes me, so I said, "Sure,  
12 I going to cross my hand for you," I told him.

13 And then he said, "If you  
14 ever cross your hand for me I going to give you free  
15 water."

16 How many time is that? That's  
17 five years ago. I never see that. Boy, if I see  
18 that guy today I just going to trace him up and down.  
19 Honestly, I'm not joking, I mean it.

20 THE COMMISSIONER: I believe  
21 you.

22 A M-hm. Why you have to  
23 put my name down for him? I was crazy. But anyway,  
24 this bag is my fortune, but I don't want no pipeline,  
25 and no land claim too, nothing. I've got ten of my  
26 kids. Who is going to trap for them? I'm an Indian  
27 woman so I'm married to white man. So what? What  
28 is it to be married to white man? I was crazy to  
29 marry a white man. I love him. That's true.

30 (LAUGHTER)





Mrs. M. Bullock  
N. Norbert

1 Listen to me, Mr. Berger, I  
2 got six kids of my own skiing. You heard about Herbert  
3 Bullock, the one that's top of the world, he's in  
4 North Bay now. You know how far I come to see you  
5 today? Just guess.

6 THE COMMISSIONER: From Inuvik?

7 A Inuvik, yes. I left  
8 8:30 this morning just to see you. Are you proud of  
9 that? I'm proud of my brother and Alice Steen and  
10 Noel and Robert, whatever they make out to speak, I'm  
11 proud of whatever it is, and my poor brother Antoine.  
12 I'm the only sister in the family so they can't touch  
13 me. O.K., thank you very much.

14 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you.

15 (WITNESS ASIDE)

16 THE COMMISSIONER: I'm ready  
17 whenever you are, sir.

18  
19 NAP NORBERT, sworn:

20 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger,  
21 everything what I wanted to say has already -- I guess  
22 you were listening to it. What I wanted to say,  
23 you know, and they already said it and I agree with  
24 them what they say. But most of all what I want -- I  
25 was going to talk about it but for this land claim,  
26 Mr. Berger, we want to have land claim. Probably you  
27 heard already at each settlement you been to.

28 So it's not asking too much  
29 for that, you know. Mr. Berger, we want to settle this  
30 land claim before any pipeline come through, and before



N. Norbert

1 development come through we like to see land claims  
2 settled. That's for one.

3 For two, this is for fish.  
4 whale, seal, char, caribou. What I heard about Tuk  
5 Berger hearing, what I hear about Tuk what they say  
6 about fish, what they say about whale; well, whale and  
7 seal and char have nothing to do with us because they  
8 don't come up here so far, this far anyway. So most  
9 of it is coming out from the coast or the ocean down  
10 here south, there's fish. Probably Tuk people are  
11 right too, their fish are getting less too, so is here,  
12 Arctic Red since last few years, fish getting less. I  
13 think I know why, because the oil company, they working  
14 down that way since last few years. That's the reason  
15 I think we don't get much fish up here now.

16 Well, I don't blame them Tuk  
17 people.

18 Mr. Berger, I don't have much  
19 to say but I just want to know what I hear, I listen to  
20 you here every night. There's in Slavey, Anook and  
21 Loucheux and the white every Inquiry, I listen every  
22 night so I know what is going on, so the reason that's  
23 why I put it on this.

24 Now education, I'm not much  
25 education. I was only educated for five years, but  
26 I only came out of school only Grade 4. In five years  
27 I was only Grade 4. This education that I mentioned  
28 just because in 1970 forestry, you know forestry, I  
29 guess? They want somebody to go out to Fort Smith to  
30 take a course for one month. I done that already before



N. Norbert

1 for forestry, I work. Of course I was not hired but  
2 I been there and was foreman two times, so I  
3 was doing good in my work, so they asked me to go out  
4 there. O.K. When you go out there you do your course,  
5 one month you're finished, you get your certificate,  
6 they give you papers for what they call, straw boss,  
7 eh? They give you a paper for that when you came  
8 back, and for radio I went through that. That's another  
9 thing I went through, too, and when I came back they  
10 won't give you no job, nothing.

11 So this pipeline that's going  
12 to go through, that's the same thing with the pipeline  
13 too. If they send any young guys to go out for job  
14 course, they're going to come back, they give them  
15 paper, they say they're going to get a job right now,  
16 I don't think so. You know why? Because he's an  
17 Indian. I was an Indian, that's why I just get a  
18 paper and I can't get no job after that. Just through  
19 forestry I get a paper, I put in my wallet, I forgot  
20 about it. That's 1970, I remember that. 1976 today.

21 The same thing is going to  
22 be like that. Government has promised that they're  
23 going to give a course to Indians, give first chance  
24 to Indians, to give a course to drive big machine and  
25 when they do it he get a paper, they forget about him,  
26 just give him paper, that's all. That guy should  
27 just throw away in the garbage, that's what they  
28 should have done. I should have done that myself.

29 I'm in this here education,  
30 I can understand a little bit of French, little bit





N. Norbert

1 of English, little bit of Slavey, little more of Loucheux  
2 because that's my language. But all these words, this  
3 French and English, somebody talk to me in French I  
4 understand, you can't fool me.

5 When I been sent to Fort Smith  
6 for this forestry to fight fire, I wish I know that  
7 before anyway without taking course. Same thing, some  
8 of these boys, they know how to drive machine but still  
9 they go to course, they get their paper to send them  
10 home, they send them home when they get their paper,  
11 that guy should throw that paper away because they  
12 won't get a job. That's for that I want to talk to  
13 you.

14 I got a question too for  
15 Arc tic Gas and --

16 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes, sure,  
17 go ahead.

18 THE WITNESS: The reason I  
19 want to ask them is, probably they heard, <sup>that already anyway</sup> which is  
20 Arctic?

21 THE COMMISSIONER: This is Mr.  
22 Carter of Arctic Gas, and the gentleman next to him in  
23 the white sweater is Mr. Beer of Foothills.

24 THE WITNESS: First of all I  
25 want to talk to Ar ctic Gas.

26 THE COMMISSIONER: O.K., sure.

27 THE WITNESS: They're same  
28 company anyway. The reason I want to ask a question,  
29 it's going to be 48-inches pipeline, eh?

30 MR. CARTER: That's right.



N. Norbert

1 THE WITNESS: Suppose if it  
2 breaks when there is 50 miles between the valve.

3 MR. CARTER: Yes.

4 THE WITNESS: Well, suppose  
5 if this breaks in between 50 miles, suppose this is a  
6 creek or small stream or small little bigger river or  
7 something like that, if pipeline goes through across  
8 that creek or river, if it breaks, either if it breaks  
9 or stretch or whatever, what will happen? How many  
10 gallons will be in that 50 miles? I'd like to know.

11 MR. CARTER: Well, you may be  
12 thinking more of an oil pipeline.

13 THE WITNESS: Yes.

14 MR. CARTER: And as the judge  
15 said, some of the oil companies are considering whether  
16 or not they would build an oil pipeline along the  
17 Mackenzie Valley.

18 THE WITNESS: This is supposed  
19 to be gas, eh?

20 MR. CARTER: That's right,  
21 Arctic Gas Pipeline is not an oil pipeline, but it's  
22 natural gas, so it wouldn't be a liquid and you  
23 couldn't then measure it in gallons. It wouldn't run  
24 out like a liquid. It would escape and evaporate into  
25 the air more like propane would, and the evidence that  
26 we've heard from other people who know more about it  
27 than I do, is that in many of the cases if there's a  
28 break, the gas would catch on fire so it would burn  
29 as it escaped into the air and it would burn up. If  
30 there was no fire it would escape into the air, and



N. Norbert

1 as it's lighter than air, it would rise up.

2 THE WITNESS: It wouldn't flow  
3 in the river?

4 MR. CARTER: No, it's lighter  
5 than water and lighter than air, so if it was under  
6 the water when it broke, it would --

7 THE WITNESS: But it would  
8 blow with the wind?

9 MR. CARTER: -- it will mix in  
10 with the air, all the air that's around.

11 THE WITNESS: Well, suppose  
12 it's about a 50-mile wind, the wind is going to take  
13 that?

14 MR. CARTER: Well, the wind  
15 would affect it but it would rise up as well and it  
16 would mix in with the other gases that are in the  
17 air -- oxygen and everything else, this would be  
18 natural gas mixed in with it.

19 THE WITNESS: Well, I  
20 think there's a stink too, eh?

21 MR. CARTER: Pardon?

22 THE WITNESS: A stink?

23 MR. CARTER: Well, there's no  
24 smell, but they put a smell into it so that you know  
25 if there is a leak, it can be smelled, that's right.

26 THE WITNESS: Well, I mean if  
27 it breaks, I said, if the pipeline breaks.

28 MR. CARTER: Yes.

29 THE WITNESS: Well, will the  
30 smell affect the animals, the birds and everything?



N. Norbert

1 MR. CARTER: Well, it's my  
2 understanding it rises up so it doesn't stay along  
3 the ground, and then the animals wouldn't be able to  
4 smell it. But if they were close by I'm sure they  
5 would be able to smell it and they'd be scared away.

6 THE WITNESS: Probably if I  
7 was five miles away I could smell it myself.

8 MR. CARTER: Yes.

9 THE WITNESS: No, if wind  
10 direction to me.

11 MR. BEER: I think if you were  
12 about five miles away from the pipeline, sir, even if  
13 there's a fairly strong wind blowing towards you the  
14 gas is so much lighter than air that it will have  
15 risen quite a long way and you wouldn't be able to smell  
16 it at that distance.

17 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, let's  
18 go back a bit, Mr. Beer. If you have a break in the  
19 pipeline, we've been told by Arctic Gas that the  
20 chances are , I think 50-50, that the gas will ignite,  
21 that is you'll have the gas burning when it comes out  
22 of the pipeline, if it breaks.

23 MR. BEER: I couldn't swear to  
24 the 50-50, sir, but there is a fair possibility, I  
25 suppose, that it will ignite, yes.

26 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, the  
27 danger with a gas pipeline if it breaks, one of the  
28 dangers is that there is a good chance that it will  
29 ignite, that is it will burst into flame and it can  
30 then cause a forest fire, that's the principal danger





N. Norbert

1 if it breaks. Now these people say that they can build  
2 one that won't break. Well, we're looking into that,  
3 but an oil pipeline, if an oil pipeline comes after-  
4 wards along the same route beside the gas pipeline and  
5 it breaks, then you'll get oil and you could get an  
6 awful lot of oil that would go into a stream, and we've  
7 been listening to what damage oil could cause in the  
8 Beaufort Sea, we've been listening to evidence about  
9 that for two months. Well, it would cause great damage  
10 in a stream, obviously, depending on the quantity.

11 But carry on, I just wanted  
12 to make sure you understood.

13 THE WITNESS: 50 miles <sup>apart</sup> is quite  
14 a long ways.

15 MR. BEER: Yes, it is quite a  
16 reasonable distance and I guess a fair amount of gas  
17 is contained in that pipe, but it will rise into the  
18 air very quickly. Or burn very quickly.

19 THE WITNESS: You're just going  
20 to build a natural gas?

21 MR. BEER: Our proposal is  
22 for a natural gas pipeline only. But as Mr. Berger  
23 said, at sometime there is a proposal for -- or there  
24 will be a proposal for an oil pipeline, but that will  
25 be from another company.

26 THE WITNESS: Well, there's  
27 two companies now, sir, they're just natural gas, is  
28 that right?

29 MR. BEER: Yes, we're competing  
30 in fact.



N. Norbert

1 THE COMMISSIONER: They're  
2 fighting about who's going to build the gas pipeline.

3 THE WITNESS: I'm pretty sure  
4 after you build that pipeline, now every news you hear  
5 is a gas pipeline, and then after you build that I'm  
6 pretty sure it's going to be oil pipeline, the oil.

7 MR. BEER: Yes, I imagine it  
8 will be. I don't know how many years later it would be  
9 after the gas pipeline.

10 THE WITNESS: They just mention  
11 that to make us believe, the Indians believe that it's  
12 just only natural gas and gas is all; but probably  
13 they're going to build along side of that they're  
14 going to build oil.

15 MR. BEER: That can't be denied,  
16 that's the way that it will probably be, yes.

17 THE WITNESS: They're going to  
18 operate it, I think so. So if they ever built that  
19 oil, the oil itself damage lots.

20 MR. BEER: Yes, the oil would  
21 in fact, as Mr. Berger pointed out, cause a lot more  
22 damage if it's built, than natural gas would, yes.

23 THE WITNESS: So I put down  
24 here, "creek, river, lake", if it goes on the creeks  
25 and lakes and streams. So it won't bother the creeks  
26 and the rivers or lakes?

27 MR. BEER: Which is this, the  
28 gas?

29 THE WITNESS: Well, the gas or  
30 oil.



N. Norbert

1 MR. BEER: The natural gas  
2 would not bother the creeks and the lakes as such, no.  
3 If we ever did have a break of a pipeline under a river  
4 or creek, the gas would just bubble up to the top of  
5 the water and just escape. It wouldn't mix in with the  
6 water at all, and it wouldn't float on top either.

7 I should perhaps add here that  
8 under lakes -- not under lakes because we don't plan  
9 on crossing any lakes -- but under rivers and creeks  
10 including the Mackenzie, we would put extra strong  
11 pipe in order that the likelihood of a pipeline break  
12 there is even more reduced from the low level we think  
13 it is on across dry land.

14 THE WITNESS: Another thing  
15 here I want to know, since they're talking about pipe-  
16 line, I think it's 1970 now since then, is it lately  
17 you find where your route is going to be over there?

18 M R BEER: Yes, there are some  
19 slight differences in the routes between Arctic Gas and  
20 ourselves.

21 THE WITNESS: Since 1970?

22 MR. BEER: I think Arctic Gas  
23 has changed their route since 1970, yes.

24 THE WITNESS: Can I look at a  
25 map?

26 MR. BEER: Of course.

27 THE WITNESS: This latest  
28 one or --

29 MR. BEER: The red pipeline,  
30 this one here that goes down across Swimming Point and |





N. Norbert

1 diverges well to the east of Travaillant Lake here is  
2 the Foothills pipeline. The black line -- I'll speak  
3 for Mr. Carter, I guess -- the black line is the  
4 current proposed route of the Arctic Gas pipeline.

5 THE COMMISSIONER: Black is  
6 the Arctic Gas Pipeline; red is Foothills' pipeline.

7 THE WITNESS: This is natural  
8 gas and this is real gas?

9 THE COMMISSIONER: No, they're  
10 both natural gas. Don't ask me why they --

11 THE WITNESS: The black one  
12 looks like an oil pipeline.

13 (LAUGHTER)

14 MR. BEER: I won't disillusion  
15 you.

16 THE WITNESS: So you know, the  
17 reason I ask where you're going to put it, you know  
18 they're talking about putting pipeline through  
19 Travaillant Lake, they're talking about a lot of  
20 gravel in there. They say they want to use gravel  
21 mostly from there, that's why I mention it. The main  
22 fishing place are these lakes right here, way back  
23 there.

24 MR. BEER: I can say here,  
25 while I don't know exactly where the gravel is coming  
26 from, in the Travaillant Lake area, that we would not  
27 be taking gravel out of the lake. That is not our  
28 proposal at this time, in any way.

29 THE WITNESS: Well, I understand  
30 a couple of years ago or a year ago they wanted to



N. Norbert

1 take gravel around from Travaillant Lake, around the  
2 area around there.

3 MR. BEER: I don't know who it  
4 was. I don't think it was either Arctic Gas or  
5 Foothills, in any case, sir.

6 THE WITNESS: It's not going  
7 to be done down below here, or down below Arctic Red?  
8 It's not crossing there?

9 MR. BEER: No. This route has  
10 got nothing to do with Foothills anyway, and it's not  
11 being proposed by Arctic Gas at the moment either.  
12 Their route is up across the delta. This is no longer  
13 a firm proposal.

14 THE WITNESS: Well, that's all  
15 I wanted to know.

16 MR. BEER: O.K., thank you.

17 THE WITNESS: Thank you. There's  
18 one more thing I like to mention about this -- is there  
19 any way besides pipeline?

20 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes.

21 THE WITNESS: What is it?

22 THE COMMISSIONER: There are  
23 other ways. One would be to use a tanker, tankers,  
24 big ships that would carry large volumes of gas, but  
25 you would have a hard job getting the tankers through  
26 the ice and they don't want to use tankers. They've  
27 suggested building a railway.

28 THE WITNESS: Yes.

29 THE COMMISSIONER: But the  
30 C.N.R. and the C.P.R. don't at this time propose to build



N. Norbert

1 a railway and they propose to fly the gas out in big  
2 planes, but that doesn't seem practical. So  
3 Arctic Gas and Foothills are supported by the oil and  
4 gas industry, the oil companies, and they -- the oil  
5 companies have found the gas and they say they want  
6 to take it out by a pipeline, so that's why we're  
7 looking at a pipeline and the National Energy Board,  
8 when it resumes its hearings, will consider whether  
9 it should be a railroad instead, or tankers instead,  
10 or big planes instead, or even big submarines under  
11 the ice taking the gas out. Now these are ideas that  
12 have been advanced, but the companies say, "Well, the  
13 best way is a pipeline, if we are going to get it out."

14 So that's why we're looking  
15 at a pipeline today.

16 THE WITNESS: So for the  
17 train I think you got both ways transportation for  
18 bringing freight out with oil or gas or something  
19 like that.

20 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, that's  
21 the advantage of a train, but to give you an example,  
22 well, let me just put it this way, the only companies  
23 that are apparently able to build railroads or run  
24 them, are the Canadian Pacific Railroad and the Canadian  
25 National Railroad, and they are not prepared to build  
26 a railroad at this stage. But there is a Board that  
27 meets in Ottawa called the Energy Board, and it will  
28 be meeting, I think, in a while, and they will consider  
29 whether it shouldn't be a train or some other way of  
30 getting the gas out besides a pipeline. But that's



N. Norbert

1 not my job.

2 THE WITNESS: That's all I got  
3 for pipeline on here, so I got another piece here for  
4 you which I been keeping for a long time. You mentioned  
5 about 12,000 people is going to be employed.

6 THE COMMISSIONER: 6,000.

7 THE WITNESS: Well, 12,000 and  
8 6,000 too, I guess.

9 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, go  
10 ahead anyway, don't let me interrupt you.

11 THE WITNESS: Is it 12,000 or  
12 6,000?

13 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, I said  
14 6,000 plus 1,200 more, so that's 7,200, maybe more than  
15 that, though. We'll have to wait and see, if it is  
16 built, how many people will be needed to build it.

17 THE WITNESS: Well, I tore off  
18 this. Thanks very much for talking to me. I think  
19 I'll read this to you.

20 THE COMMISSIONER: Sure, go  
21 ahead.

22 THE WITNESS: This is a  
23 piece from "The Drum", it was written in '72.

24 THE COMMISSIONER: O.K.

25 THE WITNESS:

26 "It may not come to result, but this is what  
27 I want to say about the land, my land. Back  
28 of Smith cabin a creek 60 or 70 miles up the  
29 Mackenzie from Arctic Red is where I lived for  
30 many years. I know there is only one good





N. Norbert

1 fish lake, and I am living at Travaillant  
2 Lake now for the last four years, and all  
3 these lakes used to be good fish lakes, but  
4 since I've been there the fish are not worth  
5 eating. It was worse this fall. The fish  
6 there are nothing but heads, skin, bones.  
7 The oil companies have been building roads  
8 over this land. There are no caribou, it's  
9 because of this company tearing up the ground."

10 I believe that, I think.

11 "There are no rabbits, no ptarmigan, no lynx,  
12 no martens. It used to be one of the richest  
13 countries for hunting and trapping, but not  
14 any more. I have been thinking all these things  
15 all winter. There are <sup>no more</sup> old-timers in Arctic Red  
16 River except myself. That's why I talk all  
17 about these things. This is not exactly for  
18 myself. I have four sons and they all have big  
19 families. This is the reason I am still  
20 fighting. I live in the bush all the time. I  
21 come to town only Christmas and Easter. There-  
22 fore I know what I'm talking about. The beaver  
23 and the rat are very scarce. It never had  
24 been like this for 100 years, so there is  
25 really something wrong.

26 I heard lots about highways  
27 coming through, but this I don't know much about.  
28 But I'm really against pipeline. If something  
29 ever happens to oil pipes due to cold weather  
30 and something, then what? I am old enough to



N. Norbert

1 say that I saw people make fire with flint,"  
2 she mean in the old time,  
3 "in those days I could work and hunt just as  
4 good as a man. I don't know very much about  
5 white man's way of life but by different  
6 'womans I think I heard that the white people  
7 want consultation with the Indians before  
8 they start exploration in the north. I might be  
9 talking for nothing. At least I want to let  
10 the people know what I think. Most of all,  
11 I don't want give away my land. I am 85 years  
12 of age. I have been trying to stop young  
13 people from drinking. Besides this I still  
14 want to fight for my land. This is all I have  
15 to say."

16 This is Julianne Andre who wrote that.

17 THE COMMISSIONER: Mrs.  
18 Andre spoke earlier today.

19 THE WITNESS: Yes, Mrs. Andre.  
20 It's interesting, that's why I kept that.

21 THE COMMISSIONER: Could you  
22 let us have that to keep that?

23 THE WITNESS: If you pay for  
24 it.

25 THE COMMISSIONER: Oh yes.  
26 We'll make a copy of it and send it back to you.  
27 You're pretty sharp here in this town.

28 (LETTER TO EDITOR OF "THE DRUM" BY JULIENNE  
29 ANDRE MARKED EXHIBIT C-263)

30 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, you



N. Norbert

1 don't mind to listen to another one, I been put this  
2 probably a year ago or a year before.

3 THE COMMISSIONER: Go ahead.

4 THE WITNESS: This is I want  
5 to give Tom Berger that, don't say he ever put it in  
6 "The Drum", probably he's scared to put in there.

7 "For everything you gain, you also lose some-  
8 thing. The young native of the north have been  
9 taken away from their parents at an early  
10 age from 4 to 9 years, to hostel system, which  
11 is like a rotten education system. They can't  
12 learn their language and their culture, and  
13 it's such a system because the Inuit people  
14 have always had nomadic livelihood. Freedom  
15 to do what they want these days. The young  
16 people are becoming technicians, doctors,  
17 etc. in their culture of their parents. Anc-  
18 estors starting to die. The young people .  
19 are caught in between two cultures, their  
20 ancestors way of life or technical ways of  
21 a white man. Which way they do go? Everywhere  
22 old-time trappers, hunters used to do their  
23 things. This means of trapping and hunting.  
24 There are now seismic lines put there by oil  
25 companies. There is hardly any animals around  
26 there any more. We've got to stop what the  
27 oil companies are doing to our land. This is  
28 for our good, the good of our children, grand-  
29 children, and our land."

30 Thanks, Mr. Berger, I just want





N. Norbert  
E. Nazon

1 to talk to you about that today.

2 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, thank  
3 you very much, sir.

4 THE WITNESS: That's all that  
5 come to my head. Thanks very much.

6 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you.

7 (WITNESS ASIDE)

8  
9 EDWARD NAZON, sworn:

10 THE WITNESS: Edward Nazon.

11 Mr. Berger, I'm getting old, you know, and I think I'll  
12 make it briefly because all that I achieved and what  
13 I said, I think it just about covered up all I had  
14 to say but before I give my views I would like to say  
15 a few words on the Inquiry itself.

16 According to quite a few  
17 weeks back, I think according to Mr. Fraser, you have  
18 been criticized somewhere on your trip and also our  
19 friend, Jim Edwards Sittichinli has been criticized  
20 in Inuvik. As we all know, anything you do say or you  
21 do as an individual or some people will always criticize  
22 and we all agree, so I just want to let you people  
23 know that these people, if they think they can do  
24 better, they should push you <sup>people</sup> aside and take things  
25 over themselves. But as far as we're concerned, there's  
26 very few times that I miss listening to the Berger  
27 Inquiry. The only time that I miss is when I was out  
28 on trapline, if I come home late, that's the only time  
29 I miss. So I don't want you people to think that  
30 everybody criticizes you. So much for this.



E. Nazon

1                   About the pipeline, I been  
2     listening to the radio about it all the time. Some  
3     people opposed to the pipeline. Some people says they  
4     want to share development. Some are afraid most of all  
5     if the pipeline breaks, they're worried about the  
6     environment. So I always said that as far as the  
7     pipeline is concerned I might say -- this is, of course,  
8     my own views -- but we're talking about something  
9     that we don't know. We never have had pipeline in  
10    our country, some said that -- well, I experienced  
11    that -- somewhere around 1940 to be exact, I  
12    think it was the first part of June that there was  
13    another earthquake. The shore ice in the lake and  
14    in the river was just popping out. I often thought  
15    myself too, if there was a pipeline laid, if things  
16    like that occurred then what would happen?

17                   It's not so much a gas pipe-  
18    line but eventually they will have the oil pipeline.  
19    Another thing too, people are talking about their  
20    country. They're worried about the birds, fish, and  
21    the mammals. When we say we own the country, some  
22    people ignore us. I don't know why. We were the first  
23    people of North America. So when we say it's our  
24    land, I don't say all the white people but I know some  
25    of the white people, they don't like to hear that.

26                   When we look at the globe and  
27    see all kinds of countries with different names, with  
28    different people -- white, black, red -- they all  
29    have a country of their own, their own destination.  
30    There are some things I can't understand and I don't



E. Nazon

1 think I will ever understand it. The Northwest  
2 Territories have been existing for thousands of  
3 years. There are two lakes not far from here, 15 miles  
4 I think, according to people around here, and there's  
5 about four or 500 feet, I think, between those two  
6 lakes, there's a creek running through them. Alongside  
7 that creek is a little bluff , and the seismic  
8 party they went through there, one of them told me  
9 they're going to drill a hole on top of that bluff  
10 and he discovered something, ashes or something. So  
11 they sent for a man.

12 So this man dug around and I  
13 saw this site myself, about 15 feet deep, I think, and  
14 way down, I don't know how deep it was but anyway they  
15 found ashes and fish bones. This man says he estimated  
16 that people were living down there 3,000 years. At  
17 that time they were right on the surface then.

18 So when we say this is our  
19 land, it couldn't be nobody else but the Indians. This  
20 is why the people are talking so much about their land.  
21 When we talk about land use regulations, we see in the  
22 paper about Her or His Majesty and the Ministers.  
23 They told an old Indian that the Crown on the land,  
24 and he say, "I don't know what you're talking about."

25 This is why people are  
26 talking so much about their land. They think even  
27 they're going to push them little by little, little  
28 by little, and what will happen to us? We'll just  
29 be like the natives in the south in the provinces.  
30 This is what we're scared of.



E. Nazon  
J. Andre

1                                So about the pipeline, some  
2 of the Indians told me themselves that they can't  
3 stop the progress, and some says that even how much  
4 we do, we doing the talking and they'll go ahead.  
5 I think there's two ways of building that pipeline.  
6 They can either just go ahead and build the damn thing  
7 and the other way is this way, consultation before  
8 they do anything in the country.

9                                I'm getting old now. My  
10 kids are grown up now and I can't say I don't care  
11 what they do, but it seems that way anyway. We're just  
12 talking for nothing.

13                              Once again I say we don't know  
14 what impact the pipeline will do in the country, because  
15 we've never seen one in this country. So I'm getting  
16 tired now, and I think that's all I have to say, Mr.  
17 Berger. Thank you very much.

18                              THE COMMISSIONER: Thanks very  
19 much, sir.

20                              (WITNESS ASIDE)

21  
22                              JAMES ANDRE, sworn:

23                              THE WITNESS: This is another  
24 Andre -- James Andre. I got little words here.  
25 First I would like to say that I'm <sup>not</sup> a native right up  
26 Arctic Red River, I'm a Metis. Just a few words  
27 I'd like to say here.

28                              If you want to build a pipeline  
29 why don't you build a refinery right in the north here?  
30 You won't have no problems to ship your oil and





J. Andre

1 everything else, ship it south. Ever since the north  
2 was built, you got your north and I'll give you an  
3 example. N.T.C.L. come down shipping everything at  
4 Tuk down to the north. If there was a refinery down  
5 here, let the governm ent ship it down to the south.  
6 That's the first thing that I wanted to say.

7 This is our country, we live  
8 in our country, we were brought up in this country, we  
9 lived in this country. If you want to live down north  
10 you have all your things, like say your -- what-you-call  
11 it -- I can't mention it, when you stay in north you  
12 live in duplex houses, you stay in duplex houses, it's  
13 governm ent houses. Us people, this is our land, this  
14 is our people, we can't say, "We're going to go south."  
15 We can't say to them people, we can't stay in them  
16 kind of houses. They shove us on the side, they say,  
17 "You're Indians, you stay over there." We can't do that.  
18 It's not the way it's supposed to be. We stay  
19 wherever government shove us, that's where we're going  
20 to be.

21 Now this pipeline, I know it's  
22 going to come through, it's very true, I know it's  
23 going to come through. People, all kinds of people  
24 are going to come through, and if you got experience,  
25 have experience, when you come back they ship you  
26 out, they ship you out and then you're going to have  
27 experience. You go out, you got experience, you come  
28 back and what experience does you? When you come back  
29 with experience, they going to tell you, "You still  
30 need more than this. You need more of this, you need



J. Andre

1 more experience."

2 That's not the way it is.

3 Take Alaska for experience. Just example, they say in  
4 Alaska, they always say they're going to look after  
5 their boys and they're going to look after everything.  
6 When the boys, when they're working on the pipeline,  
7 right, they look after the pipeline and every time they  
8 got their days off or something like that, when their  
9 days off, where are they going to go? Their  
10 nearest community. So they say they're going to come  
11 to Arctic Red, they're going to have dope, they're  
12 going to have prostitution, they're going to have  
13 everything. What's a little town like Arctic Red,  
14 what are they going to do? They've got nothing.  
15 People/<sup>should</sup>think like that, that's what we're thinking of.  
16 This is our country, this is our land, we're thinking  
17 of it. You want to put pipeline around the Arctic  
18 Red, you put a line through, you say you're going  
19 to bury it. How can you bury it? You can't bury it.  
20 What about the ice? You can't bury the ice. The  
21 ice will come every year, there's no way that the  
22 river is the same channel every year, you can't tell  
23 me that. You can't tell anybody from our people, you  
24 can't tell them nothing. It's going to be changed  
25 every year. Every year is different. You put a  
26 river right down here, next year the channel is going  
27 to be different. It's going to be a sandbar again.  
28 You can't tell me because I know.

29 Look at this here. This here  
30 is the first time I been out of the bush my life.



J. Andre

1 I'm 25 years old, I never went in the bush in my life  
2 till before I was 11 years old. This year in February  
3 I went in the bush, I'm really satisfied I went in the  
4 bush. Nobody can tell me nothing. I'm happy. I'm living  
5 out of the bush, I'm living out of my country, that's  
6 my country. Nobody can tell me nothing.

7 When I come in town here I  
8 see people around this Arctic Red River or any other  
9 place, they're sitting here in town, they don't know  
10 what they're doing. They don't know where their next  
11 meat is going. They want to go to the Bay; that's  
12 white man country, that. White man, he pay for that  
13 thing. How much you got to pay for a God damn steak,  
14 one steak, \$6. When you go in the bush how much it  
15 going to cost? Cost you about 40¢, that's just for  
16 one shell, that's just for knocking moose over. You  
17 sit in the bush, you have lots of meat. You have 40¢,  
18 you have lots of meat, if you stay in the bush you  
19 have lots of meat.

20 That's all I'm trying to say.  
21 This is our country. We don't need no pipeline or  
22 anything to come around here to bother us. Leave us  
23 alone. That's what I'm trying to say.

24 I'm going to try and tell you  
25 something after a while, Mr. Berger, let some people  
26 speak. O.K.?

27 THE COMMISSIONER: O.K., thanks.

28 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger?

29 THE COMMISSIONER: Go ahead.

30 THE WITNESS: Do you understand





J. Andre

1 about them seismic lines? I work for seismic, I was  
2 driller for seismic. I went through mountains and  
3 everything. Now a couple of years back, now I'm looking  
4 backward, what do I get? The seismic lines is coming  
5 down, I'm talking about mountains or something, every  
6 time you see a mountain you see a little line. That's  
7 seismic. I blast through them things. I work them,  
8 I come down, now maybe about ten years' time, the time  
9 I'm working right now, I'm a trapper right now, I  
10 work with my father, I don't know where is he? My  
11 uncle right there, all these people, I live with them.

12 Now all these lines are  
13 coming down through the mountains, they're all creeks.  
14 What's going to happen if you put a line right through  
15 there, what's going to happen? It's going to all be  
16 under creeks there. That's what I want to try and  
17 think about. You got to think about them things, though  
18 once in a while.

19 This year in February I was  
20 working, I worked all my life, I worked all my life  
21 seismic, Imperial Oil, everything you can think of.  
22 You can check up anything on me, you're going to see  
23 why I worked with them people; but this year in  
24 February I shut her down. I went to work with my cousin  
25 we want in the bush, me and my cousin were in the bush,  
26 we trapped, we shot moose, we shot moose. My uncle sit  
27 right there right today, he's sitting over there.  
28 We don't need no God damn white man to come around  
29 and tell us what to do. I mean we don't need no white  
30 man to tell us what to do. I'm just happy, I'm just



J. Andre  
Mrs. O. Coyen

happy that all my people were happy together. That's where we want to be. We don't need no pipeline or nothing. We want our land claims settled first before we ever go in at the end.

THE COMMISSIONER: O.K., thanks, I understand that. You made that point very well.

THE WITNESS: Well, that's all I want to say. Thank you very much.

THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you.

THE WITNESS: O.K., thank you.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

MRS. ODILLA COYEN, sworn:

THE WITNESS: I'm Odilla Coyen. I was born in 1902 and I can't remember what was going on since I was five years old. In them days we knew nothing of law, we were free to live as we pleased until 1921, after then we start to hear about the law, the law about that, the law about this. But still we were free on our own land.

Between 1930 and 1960 we were using our homemade brew. Once in awhile we were drinking. Since Inuvik was built and Liquor Store was put up, then trouble started, just like fighting one another, hurting one another, shooting one another, broken homes. So what if the pipeline goes through?

We were told if the pipeline goes through 700 people will come from the south, and there will be camps here and there, and the worker



Mrs. O. Coyen

1 will be kept in camp. We don't believe that. We hear  
2 too much what is going on in Alaska. The same thing  
3 will happen here. That's why we are sure against  
4 the pipeline. For our health, doctors and nurses  
5 keep us very well but if the pipeline goes  
6 through they will turn their attention to the wages  
7 they will get from the workers who will get hurt,  
8 maybe I'm wrong but that's what I think.

9 Now for the trapline and  
10 the land. I agree with the chief of Good Hope and the  
11 chief of Fort McPherson, and I agree with the chief  
12 of Arctic Red River, that our land would be destroyed  
13 by the pipeline. They say man was made out of the soil  
14 of the earth, so we are made with the soil of our  
15 land, and if the pipeline goes through, the land will  
16 be spoiled and the land is part of us. So we do not  
17 want the pipeline to spoil it.

18 We saw what the oil can do  
19 to the land. There is a place down around here where  
20 the oil was spilled. Nothing grow there. We see oil  
21 people filling up their tank when they finished, they  
22 just drop their hose there with oil pouring out and  
23 that's all I have to say.

24 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
25 very much. Maybe you could let us have your statement,  
26 which is  
27 /in writing and we could keep it. Would that be all  
right?

28 THE WITNESS: Yes.

29 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you.

30 (WITNESS ASIDE)



Mrs. A. Andre

(SUBMISSION BY Mrs. O. COYEN MARKED EXHIBIT C-264)

MRS. ALICE ANDRE, sworn:

THE INTERPRETER: This is another Andre. This is Alice Andre.

THE WITNESS: I don't have too much to say. Mr. Berger, I'm a married woman with children I love. I think of their future, that's why I want to say a few words. I'll say what I've got on my mind.

My grandfather, old Paul Niditchi, was elected first chief here in Arctic Red River in 1921. He was one of the chiefs that signed the treaty that year. He didn't understand anything, he had to sign the treaty with an "X". He died 1955.

I'm one of his grand-daughters that's still /living here in Arctic Red River all my life. It's going on to 55 years since the treaty was signed in 1921. Judge Berger, today no white man is going to make me give our land away. I don't want the pipeline. I am saying this for myself and the people, especially the children and the future generations to come, so they can make use of this land. I don't want the pipeline, there's no way I'm going to give this land away.

I heard about Alaska and James Bay. I don't want it to happen around here. That's all I have to say.

THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you very much. Maybe you would let us keep your written statement.

(WITNESS ASIDE)





W. Norman

(SUBMISSION BY MRS. A. ANDRE MARKED EXHIBIT C-265)

WILLIAM NORMAN, sworn:

MR. R. ANDRE: A lot of people would like to give presentations, but once they come here you know, their train of thought just --

THE COMMISSIONER: I know the feeling.

MR. R. ANDRE: -- they can't say all they would like to say.

THE COMMISSIONER: Right.

MR. R. ANDRE: So what we have done, you know we went to their homes and had them tape, and we read transcripts and tapes on paper.

THE COMMISSIONER: Oh, I see.

MR. R. ANDRE: I'm just going to say a few words first.

THE COMMISSIONER: All right, Mr. Norman can say what he wants, but whatever he said on tape that you put on paper, you can just read that and I'll accept that just as if Mr. Norman said it all here today. You understand that? Well, I think we'll listen to these people for a while, Mr. Andre.

INTERPRETER: I said a few words not long ago, but I want to say a few more words personally.

Everybody spoke a little speech and I'm doing the same, and I appreciate all that the people said today, he said.. We talk about



W. Norman

1 our land and I said a few words last time about our  
2 land. Even that I want to say a little more about  
3 it, he said. We love our land and we are free to do  
4 what we like, any place we want to go, we are free.

5 Our ancestors use this land  
6 just like we do now. That's why we love our land and  
7 live out of it. He say in the old days it used to  
8 be a great country. There used to be lots of ducks,  
9 lots of fish, lots of rabbit, all kinds of animals.  
10 Used to go up the Red River, we used to have lots of  
11 fun. But right now there's nothing left, he said.

12 I wonder why there's nothing  
13 left now, he said. Ever since the white man came into  
14 our country and tore it up, I guess they've been spilling  
15 oil out of the truck and cats and all that, and I guess  
16 ~~that's~~ what the animals fool around with and I guess  
17 that's why there's nothing left, he said.

18 Since I stopped seismic work  
19 around here, some of them lines are pretty old and  
20 everything start growing back in the line there.  
21 That's how come we get a few moose around now, he  
22 said. But if a pipeline come, I wonder what will  
23 happen? If they built a pipeline and on top of that  
24 too they open a highway, then us, we'll get nothing out  
25 of it. If they start building a road, he said they're  
26 going to charge us so much for every yard, he said.  
27 All the time they're just using all the gravel they want.  
28 We never get <sup>nothing</sup> out of it and we're so poor today, he  
29 said.

30 He said at Norman Wells there's



W. Norman

1 a mine around Great Bear Lake and there's a mine at  
2 Yellowknife, all that, he said, the native found  
3 all that, he said. But still the white people just  
4 took it away and make money out of it. Today we have  
5 to buy our own fuel from Norman Wells, he said.

6 This is all I want to say,  
7 he said.

8 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
9 sir.

10 (WITNESS ASIDE)

11  
12  
13 THE COMMISSIONER: You're  
14 reading Mr. Norman's statement, I take it?

15 MRS. AGNES ANDRE: Yes.

16 "Now at the present at the age of 73 all my  
17 life I've been out living off the land. I was  
18 born at Fort Franklin, and ever since I was  
19 small I started working in the bush. I worked  
20 in that part of the country till I turned 17,  
21 and then came to Arctic Red. I lived off the  
22 land around here, also around Fort McPherson,  
23 up in the hills, down around Travaillant Lake,  
24 up the river, and up the Red. Now it's hard  
25 for me to work but I know how it is out on  
26 the land. When there were no white men, there  
27 were lots out on the land. Caribou, fish,  
28 rabbits, and muskrats. There was lots, and  
29 it was really good for us. These were good  
30 times.





W. Norman

1                   Then the white man came  
2           to find oil and to tear up our land. They found  
3           oil, plenty of it, and there was some oil  
4           spillage. In doing this there is nothing left  
5           now. Long ago it was good to hear birds and  
6           to see ducks flying in from the south. The  
7           land changed when the oil companies came and  
8           tore up our land. Now a bird is hardly seen;  
9           rabbits, all these are slowly disappearing.

10                   The oil companies have  
11          slowed down work on the land now, and plants  
12          are growing back, and the animals are coming  
13          back too, but slowly. It can be seen that it  
14          will be very hard for the native people in  
15          the future when more white people come. I  
16          haven't got very many years to live now, but  
17          what will the young people live off in the  
18          land? That's why we are talking about our  
19          land, so our children in the future can have  
20          something. If they have no jobs, what will  
21          they live on? There will be a lot of white  
22          men working, but our children will not know  
23          how to work with machinery that are being  
24          used now. Probably only the educated ones  
25          will have good jobs and live well. But  
26          besides them there will be a lot of people  
27          that will live poor. That's why when they say  
28          'Pipeline' it can be seen that life will be  
29          made hard for us. Even though they say the  
30          pipeline will be built good, but things can



W. Norman

1 always turn out wrong.

2 If there is a leakage  
3 in the underground pipeline, then it will be  
4 spread through to the permafrost and go out  
5 into the lakes and creeks, and probably the  
6 fish will die off. People don't want the  
7 pipeline built along the Mackenzie River,  
8 since it will be near the settlements. Being  
9 built near the settlements, the people who trap  
10 near and around the towns will have nothing left  
11 to go out for. What will they live on? We know  
12 we will be poor because of the white man. We  
13 can see nothing left of fish, caribou, muskrats,  
14 rabbits and ducks. This is our land. We were  
15 raised on it and our children were raised on  
16 the land. We were happy working out on the land.  
17 Although we didn't always get anything, we were  
18 happy just the same, just working trying to  
19 get something. What will we have if our land  
20 is taken away? How will we live? We'll be  
21 poor. They tear up our land and take gravel.  
22 Should we do this in the white man's country  
23 we will surely have to pay so much a yard.  
24 White man take our gravel, find oil, and they  
25 make money out of these things they find in  
26 our land. It's our land and we aren't given  
27 a dollar for anything taken out. It's hard  
28 to do this in a white man's land.

29 We know we can't even cut  
30 down one skinny tree on our own. Why do you



W. Norman  
G. Bluecoat

1 | spoil our land and it looks like they are trying  
2 | to make us more poor."

3 | That's all.

4 | THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
5 | very much. I would like to keep that statement you  
6 | read.

7 | (STATEMENT OF W. NORMAN MARKED EXHIBIT C-266)

8 |  
9 | GABE BLUECOAT, sworn:

10 | THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, I  
11 | missed quite a few words, I should say. Too bad I  
12 | never been to school. That's what I kick myself for  
13 | and I can't talk myself. I could talk but my mind not  
14 | right, don't go straight anyway, so Agnes going to  
15 | read it to you what I said.

16 | THE COMMISSIONER: Fine.

17 | MRS. ANDRE: "Mr. Berger, I  
18 | want to talk to you about what I know."  
19 | That's what he said so I'll just keep right on.

20 | "I am from way back born in 1913, and that's  
21 | a long time. I know all this country, which  
22 | you don't know. That's why it's easy for you  
23 | to talk, but I know how things are going to  
24 | be. I know things are going to be bad, really  
25 | bad. This land is not like the south. It's not  
26 | the same. Down south it's warm and nothing  
27 | happens to the pipelines built there. Do you  
28 | think it will be the same around here? No way,  
29 | never. It's not going to be the same as out-  
30 | side, it's cold. I wonder how long you've been



## G. Bluecoat

1 in this country? You see for yourself  
2 how cold it can get. But still the govern-  
3 ment wants to build a pipeline in this cold  
4 country, but the government doesn't know,  
5 only his mouth knows. This is my land. I  
6 was born at Point Separation and a pipeline  
7 will be built across near that place. I've  
8 been around here ever since. I never go any  
9 other place, just stay here. They say 'my  
10 land.' Well, this is really my land.

11 Mr. Berger, I don't want  
12 them to spoil my land before I die. This whole  
13 town is my family, my cousins and my niece.  
14 I don't want you to spoil things for them.  
15 Me, I'll probably die next year. I'm not  
16 talking only for myself, but for all my  
17 people. They're all my children and I'm talking  
18 for them. I don't want them to suffer. You  
19 probably haven't seen permafrost. I know perma-  
20 frost because of my travels in the bush. I  
21 really know it. When I go trapping and set  
22 camp I don't set a tent on low ground, always  
23 on high ground. The only time I set tent on  
24 low ground is when it gets dark on me.

25 It's not ground, it's  
26 ice, and when I am bedded down on it, the  
27 next morning my blankets are all frosted up  
28 and it's cold. But this won't happen if I  
29 have set camp on dry ground.

30 Should you build the





G. Bluecoat

1 pipeline above or below this permafrost,  
2 it won't be any good. If it's built under  
3 the ground, then something will surely happen  
4 to the pipeline and you don't know that. No  
5 pipeline, that's what I want.

6 Mr. Berger, I want  
7 no pipeline. I don't want no pipeline and I  
8 know what I want. There's a lot of years ahead  
9 of us, but I don't know how long I have left  
10 to live. I'm really worried, I'm worried for  
11 my children. Me, I'm old and don't have many  
12 years to live. This land, who made it? I  
13 really want to find out who made it. Me? You?  
14 The government? Who made it?

15 I know only one man made  
16 it. God. But on <sup>this</sup> land who besides Him made the  
17 land? What is given is not sold to anyone.  
18 We're that kind of people. We're not going to  
19 give away our land. What is given to us --  
20 we're not going to give away what was given  
21 to us. This land was given to us for nothing  
22 and we're not going to give it away. The  
23 people say 'No pipeline.' We really mean it  
24 when we say that.

25 That's all that's in our  
26 heads now. All over this land, I'll show you  
27 on the map where I travel and where I camp.  
28 I suffered at times and things weren't always  
29 bad. Things were good for me too. We stayed  
30 on this cold land, and it's not a very good



G. Bluecoat

1 life. We worry about the cold weather. Now  
2 it's the pipeline to worry about. Also we  
3 are being bothered about our land. Again I  
4 say we won't hand over what was given to us  
5 for nothing. It's good enough that they are  
6 building the pipeline, but why bother us for  
7 our land besides that?

8 How strong can our hearts  
9 be? We got only one heart. How strong can it  
10 be? We suffered on this land before. There  
11 were good and bad times for us long ago.

12 When I was 30-40 years  
13 old, I travelled all over this land. Every  
14 winter I travelled, that's how I know the  
15 pipeline will be bad and we don't want it.

16 Mr. Berger, if I have  
17 been well-educated, it could have been better  
18 for me to talk. It's hard to talk on paper.  
19 It could have been better if I stood and  
20 talked to you. It's not good to have our  
21 words translated, but I am being helped.  
22 Someone else is going to read what I say to  
23 you. Should you build this pipeline, things  
24 are going to be bad for us.

25 Us people, Arctic Red  
26 River people, if a white man came and asked  
27 to stay with us, sure, right away we'd say  
28 'Yes, yes, my friend.' The white people,  
29 why can't they be like that?

30 Everything they do is



G. Bluecoat

1 money, money, money. That's -- why don't  
2 they be our friends and to use everything,  
3 one thing, share everything just the same  
4 as the other? Why they don't do that?  
5 It's always money. It really makes me feel  
6 bad. I'm the only one left of seven brothers.  
7 I'm happy living here among my children. They  
8 look after us good, and we're worried about  
9 them and how things are going to turn out.  
10 We're worried about three things: If this  
11 land is taken away from us what will they do  
12 to us after that? If they do take our land,  
13 it is better that I die, me and my children,  
14 it's better we all die. We don't want to be  
15 kicked around like little pups."

16 That's all.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

17 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, thank  
18 you very much, sir. I think that I should just say  
19 that the statements that you and some of the other  
20 people have made about building a pipeline in the  
21 permafrost are statements that are important to the  
22 Inquiry because the engineers and scientists who have  
23 given evidence to the Inquiry are concerned about  
24 that, too. One scientist, Dr. Williams, of the  
25 Scott Polar Institute, has been to the Inquiry and  
26 has said that the plan that these companies have to  
27 build a pipeline is one that won't work because he  
28 says if they build it the way they intend to, the  
29 heave in the ground -- that is the pipe will be heaved  
30 up five times as far as the engineers for the





Mrs. A. Andre

1 pipeline companies think it will, according to their  
2 present plans. So you're talking about a problem that  
3 the scientists and engineers are talking about, too.  
4 So your views based on your experience are important  
5 to me.

6 We can hear one more person  
7 before six o'clock.

8 MRS. ANDRE: I'll do my own.

9 THE COMMISSIONER: Oh, all  
10 right.

11  
12 MRS. AGNES ANDRE, sworn:

13 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger,  
14 this is something for you to think about. Has it  
15 ever occurred to you that the native people might have  
16 violence on their minds to get back at the decision  
17 made to have the pipeline built? That the violence  
18 may be taken out on the workers building the pipeline?

19 In your past community  
20 hearings a lot of people were against the pipeline  
21 and what it will do to the land, and the animals on  
22 it, and how much they value the two. It will  
23 only take a small group of people to think of their  
24 revenge. Should this happen you will have a lot of  
25 problems with the native people, but then too, natives  
26 might not only be the ones to cause violence. The  
27 builders themselves may do physical harm. If they  
28 do they will probably get off easy since they will  
29 have the money, or they might even go as far as paying  
30 the law to keep quiet so that the workers can keep



Mrs. A. Andre

1 their good names. But how good are they when they are  
2 building to destroy the native peoples' land and  
3 their way of life? Whereas when a native person commits  
4 a criminal offence, they will probably spend the rest  
5 of his life in jail, because us poor native people  
6 won't have the money to pay for lawyers, Court costs,  
7 etc.

8 That's one topic.

9 Should we be forced into a  
10 land settlement involving money, which we do not want,  
11 how long will the money last? 10, 15, 20 years or maybe  
12 even until the land claim settlement papers are lost,  
13 thrown away or put away where it is forgotten. How long  
14 will that be? We don't want this kind of a land settle-  
15 ment. We want a settlement where we can keep our  
16 land till the ends of the earth and not have our future  
17 relatives to have to fight for it again and again,  
18 possibly until our land is ours no more. We want to  
19 keep our land and we don't want money.

20 You have already heard this  
21 from a lot of old people, but I want you to hear it  
22 from me too. All of the old people weren't as fortunate  
23 as us to be born in a hospital, let alone even a house.

24 I was born in Aklavik, and ever since I can remember  
25 till I reached the age of 8, I lived in the bush with  
26 my parents. I can remember travelling around with dog  
27 teams to lakes around Travaillant Lake and further  
28 down that way. I used to set a trap or two of my own  
29 for squirrel, weasel, or even martens. A really good  
30 feeling would go through me when I seen something



Mrs. A. Andre

1 caught in my trap the next morning. I didn't only  
2 set traps, I set snares for rabbits and ptarmigan.  
3 When I did set snares, I never, never came back home  
4 empty-handed. Same with rat traps; that's muskrats.  
5 Those were all good lakes to catch anything.

6 There has been a big change  
7 in the few years I've been away at school, in '69 I  
8 came home and stayed home, but things were different.  
9 Where once our old trail used to be there were cut  
10 lines all over, and I notice there were fewer rabbit  
11 trails and less ptarmigan around the lakes where once  
12 there was plenty. Now we'll be lucky to even see a  
13 track of anything.

14 Even though there's hardly  
15 anything left in our land, it's always refreshing  
16 to go out for a while. That's why we're talking about  
17 keeping our land, where we can always have somewhere  
18 to go, even if it's only ten miles out, just to get  
19 the feel of the land. If we lose our land, where will  
20 people go to escape from town life and to cleanse  
21 their minds? We want a settlement where not only us  
22 and our children will be happy, but our great grand-  
23 children. A million times our thoughts will be happy.  
24 That's all.

25 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, thank  
26 you very much. We'd like to keep that, if we may and  
27 mark it as an exhibit in the Inquiry.

28 (SUBMISSION BY G. BLUECOAT MARKED EXHIBIT C-267)

29 (SUBMISSION BY MRS. A. ANDRE MARKED EXHIBIT C-268)

30 (WITNESS ASIDE)



1 THE COMMISSIONER: I should  
2 say that these people here are putting everything  
3 that's said on tape, and then it will be typed up  
4 and written up, and there will be a book that will  
5 have everything that you've said in it, and I'll keep  
6 one of those so that I'll remember it, and we'll send  
7 one to Chief Andre of the Settlement Council so that  
8 -- the Band Council, I mean -- so that he will have  
9 one here so that people here in the village can read  
10 it when they want to. But we'll photostat those  
11 and send them back.

12 Well, should we stop for  
13 supper, do you think?

14 THE INTERPRETER:  
Well, it's just about  
15 time.

16 THE COMMISSIONER: What time  
17 should we come back? Eight o'clock, do you think?

18 THE INTERPRETER:  
That would be  
19 better.

20 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, we'll  
21 stop now for supper, ladies and gentlemen, and we'll  
22 come back at eight o'clock tonight and carry on the  
23 meeting.

24 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 6 P.M.)  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30





Mrs. L. Andre

(PROCEEDINGS RESUMED AT 9:00 P.M.)

THE COMMISSIONER: Ladies and gentlemen, I think we'll begin again. Just before we start, let me say for all of the people who are visiting here today -- all of the Inquiry people and myself, that we certainly want to say how much we enjoyed the drumming and the dancing and we want to thank the boys and girls and their parents for making sure that we had such a good time this evening. So, I speak for all of us, ma'am when I express our thanks to you and to you, chief.

(APPLAUSE)

MRS. LIZA ANDRE, sworn

THE INTERPRETER: This is Liza Andre. Mr. Berger came to visit us and just like we don't like we don't care about him and we don't think of him the way we think now way. But anyway, we've done our best and we made our little childrens dance for you and we're very happy for that.

I want to say a few words. Ever since I got married to my husband, we made a good living out in the bushes and we raised up our children there. We raised them up with good food and now they're all grown up and making their own living.

See how much I said, but still they think of our land and we want our childrens to live that way.

We moved to Three Rivers 1942 until today. That's way over thirty years and we made our living there and we travelled all over, me and my



Mrs. L. Andre

1 husband. All what happened way before from '65 to '68  
2 this is. Ever since I moved to Three River, I know  
3 what was going on. It used to be strong water out of  
4 the river. Not today, it's not the same.

5 They say they're going to work  
6 with oil. They say they're going to watch everything  
7 but I don't/<sup>think</sup>they keep their promises.

8 In those days, the water in  
9 that river used to be good at Three Rivers. But today,  
10 you make a pot of tea out of that river and the tea  
11 turns black in no time. I wonder why it does that.  
12 Well, I guess at the head of that river I guess they  
13 work around there and maybe they don't look after their  
14 place. That's why.

15 Just by Swift Current, the  
16 river is changing there but it is not that. The water  
17 is not the same she says.

18 They bring a pipeline it'll  
19 be worse than this water here. At the Three River, we  
20 live there all our life and this last year was the last  
21 time I went trapping with my husband but I can tell  
22 it's a way different from a long time ago. Now,  
23 I'm talking. Whatever I say will -- look at this  
24 people around this table here. They're mostly my  
25 children.

26 I don't know why we're talking,  
27 but even that we'll keep on talking. We can't rush  
28 this land settlement and you can't rush this land  
29 settlement yourself. We don't want money for a land  
30 settlement. What we want is if it ever be a land



Mrs. L. Andre

Mrs. A. Andre

1 settlement, we want the benefit from the land. If  
2 we sell our land for money, it wouldn't last very long.  
3 Just a little ways I guess.

4 What about our children behind?  
5 What they're going to use? This is all I can say.

6 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
7 ma'am. Thank you.

(WITNESS ASIDE)

8 MRS. ALESTINE ANDRE, sworn:

9 THE WITNESS: My name is  
10 Alestine Andre. I am 25 years old and like all the  
11 young native northerners who have already spoken before  
12 you, I was born and raised here and like them, I and  
13 concerned about the future of the people who live here  
14 and what will likely happen to our future people once  
15 the pipeline is built.

16 I too have been through the  
17 regular channels of education and hostel system. My  
18 first grade in a mission school in Aklavik in 1958 and  
19 the rest of my education to grade 12 in the hostel  
20 school system.

21 Things in general in those  
22 days looked good; well run, well managed. Then I  
23 started seeing what has happened in regards to the way  
24 things have gone on in the past and how these same  
25 things were still going on silently now-a-days. For  
26 what has happened, my people have had to suffer. We  
27 have been through a great deal since the white man has  
28 literally deposited themselves on our land, carrying on  
29 with no shame.

30 At the signing of treaty's 8 and





Mrs. A. Andre

1 11, was at the time Indian chiefs and counsellors who  
2 couldn't even understand English, let alone read it.  
3 It was understood by chiefs that they were signing a  
4 peace treaty. Simply a peace treaty between the whites  
5 and the natives. No giving up of rights to the land  
6 was mentioned. Complicated English wording was used  
7 in regards to the treaty at the time.

8 We were always a peaceful  
9 tribe, minding our own business, too kindhearted to  
10 newcomers and strangers. We were always willing to  
11 help our own kind, plus the others. This was our  
12 nature. We naturally went out of way to help people.  
13 We were too kind and not harsh enough about the activities  
14 being carried on on our land and into our everyday  
15 lives.

16 Ever since the government  
17 moved into the Northwest Territories and even before  
18 then, when they ruled from Ottawa, our future has been  
19 continually planned for us; decisions being made on  
20 our behalf in Ottawa by people who knew best -- who  
21 thought they knew best.

22 Back then, we were never  
23 involved. I say never, because that was what it was.  
24 When we were involved, the big sophisticated words went  
25 over our heads and we didn't understand because they  
26 used political language. What common person could  
27 understand such a language? English is bad enough and  
28 they damn well knew it too. That we didn't understand  
29 what they meant, which made their case stronger and  
30 more reason to go ahead with development. Then they



Mrs. A. Andre

1 turn around and say "sure, we consulted with the people",  
2 putting themselves in the clear.

3 Today, all we have to show  
4 for their decision making back then in their elaborate,  
5 executive offices down south is scars of seismic lines,  
6 a Dempster and a half finished Mackenzie highway, more  
7 low rentals, seismic wires and on caribou heads yet;  
8 alcohol problems, family problems, the highway running  
9 through our land, our settlements, hunting area and  
10 trapline.

11 Did we ever tell the government  
12 we wanted scarred up land with lines running all over,  
13 highways running every which-way, low rentals, wires  
14 on caribou heads, alcohol? Did we ever ask them for  
15 this?

16 No. Instead in their so-called  
17 planning, they thought it best for us to save themselves  
18 and their economy. I can say a pretty damn good long-  
19 range planning for the benefit and interests of southern-  
20 ers at the expense of northern ecology and native way  
21 of living. They made damn sure the control didn't get  
22 into our hands, development flowing into our land.  
23 We were never told what was coming or asked  
24 whether we wanted it or not. They went right ahead  
25 and did what they pleased to feed their so-called  
26 "personal comforts".

27 They did it nice and slowly  
28 so it won't be too noticed. They didn't cater to our  
29 needs or bother to see if it would affect us. Finally,  
30 today, we are saying "this is our land", which it is



Mrs. A. Andre

1 and you hear thunder rumbling in the distance. The  
2 land was always here. We were always here and there's  
3 of us  
4 thousands/buried in the soil of this land. Many more  
5 of us will be born here and many more will be buried  
6 here.

7 White people have had and still  
8 have a way of going into countries, developing and inst-  
9 alling their so-called culture and continually clawing  
10 the land up, never once thinking or asking themselves  
11 "will this be good, or will it benefit the people  
12 already living here?". You don't ever see native  
13 people of a country rampaging all over the world, tearing  
14 the land up in this country or that country, to see  
15 what they could find inside.

16 They were quite happy just  
17 living off the land and taking good care of it, a very  
18 simple way of living but at least they were happy.

19 The non-natives, their life  
20 has revolved around money and how much they can make  
21 or how fast they can make it. Money is about all they  
22 ever think about, never mind who might suffer as long  
23 as they get what they want.

24 Like what I said before, we  
25 are a peaceful tribe. We have respect for our land  
26 and all that dwells on it and we live off the animals  
27 of this land, the moose, caribou, sheep, bear, lynx,  
28 beaver, muskrat, ducks, ground squirrels, birds and fish.  
29 We have every right to be concerned and worried.

30 It is therefore from our  
31 hearts where the constant ache is that we speak to you





Mrs.A. Andre

1 today in this tone of voice and concern.

2 Getting back to the subject  
3 of government planning and how this government is always  
4 planning our future and never thinking of the consequences  
5 we might have to suffer afterwards. It's <sup>always</sup> get it over  
6 and done with". We have been through it and we are  
7 still going through this constant government merry-go-  
8 round. What kind of life is in store for us as a  
9 people if we can't control our own future? How many  
10 more times and how much harder do we have to scream  
11 before the tiny voice in the dark is heard, especially  
12 when most of us will be <sup>here</sup> for the rest of our lives? Our  
13 children will be born here and they in turn, have to  
14 make a living for their families.

15 What kind of life are they  
16 going to have? It's a very dangerous game, being  
17 played down south when people who were in the game,  
18 when big decisions were made, can easily retreat to  
19 Florida and suntan themselves and relax with not a  
20 care in the world. Meanwhile, people are suffering  
21 as a result of their decisions

22 Life has been very hard for  
23 us with the complicated system of government we have  
24 to live <sup>with</sup> so complex. What kind of government system  
25 is it when the people can hardly understand what is  
26 happening to them slowly? When you deal with the  
27 government, there's legality, long waiting periods,  
28 sometimes months for paper work, red tape. Decisions  
29 by so many officials before an approval is made plus  
30 the usual thousand strings attached. No wonder the





Mrs. A. Andre

1 native people are where they are today. Regulations  
2 set down in Ottawa or their Yellowknife offices, and how  
3 and why one has to follow these regulations.

4 As native people of this land,  
5 we have unwritten laws and regulations. It was always  
6 there, passed from generation to generation and the  
7 people knew it well, nothing written down on paper.

8 The government knows we  
9 are at our weakest now, especially with the constant  
10 dispute between Indians and Indians, and Indians and  
11 the so-called leaders in the Northwest Territories.

12 Like what a native leader  
13 once said, "If we allow ourselves to be divided in our  
14 feelings, the government will have more reason to make  
15 decisions for us". This statement couldn't be more  
16 true for what's happening now. The control is in the  
17 hands of the government with them snickering behind our  
18 backs on how easily we let them get away with it.

19 We don't have leadership when  
20 we need it at the most crucial time, people allowing  
21 themselves to keep quiet because they already know  
22 what's going on. Do native people know this? No,  
23 instead, they are being misinformed about a lot of  
24 things and when they are misinformed, how does anyone  
25 expect them to understand the political games that is  
26 being played, their lives and their future in jeopardy?

27 Our lives and futures dangling  
28 from an already broken thin piece of string being held  
29 by a few who only want power. If we were to let them  
30 go ahead with the pipeline and further development



Mrs. A. Andre

1 without consulting us and listening to our views, or  
2 having control, you will have in your hands a bunch  
3 of wild Indians, mad Indians.

4 Already, we all know we  
5 will suffer. We will be pushed aside if all this goes  
6 on without us being involved in our own future for a  
7 change. We know what's happened in Alaska and what they  
8 have to go through. Also, James Bay.

9 They have no control and if  
10 they do, it's very little and development on their  
11 land is going strong. Sure, development means money,  
12 but what kind of life for people barely living off  
13 old age pensions, unskilled people and people who just  
14 want to be left alone, the people who live in small  
15 communities? What kind of life is in store for these  
16 people when, naturally, with the pipeline, the price  
17 of everything will skyrocket, shoot out of sight for  
18 these people? Will they be happy?

19 What right has the government  
20 to let the people come onto our land freely? While they  
21 get richer, we are still about where we were before  
22 they tiptoed here.

23 For once, we want control. We  
24 need control before we lose everything like the tribes  
25 down south. We want to be able and we are quite able  
26 to control our lives and our own future. We can  
27 control the flow of development, flow of outsiders,  
28 our <sup>own</sup> education. Sure, we have people who are qualified  
29 as teachers. They don't have to have certificates.

30 We can control our own



Mrs. A. Andre

1 commercial businesses, own housing system. We can  
2 control our future.

3 We want the control before  
4 there is too many of you to push us aside and control  
5 the government, the money and the resources from our  
6 land; before a powerful few will control the people.  
7 We want a strong say in the development of this land.

8 Sure, it's fine to say that  
9 a pipeline hasn't damaged areas in southern Canada  
10 where pipe is running. Sure, it's fine to say that,  
11 but this is the north with it's 50 to 60 below winter  
12 temperatures and permafrost year-round. Why else are  
13 we concerned?

14 We can control development at  
15 our own pace. We want to be able to control game laws,  
16 with native people getting full rights in regards to  
17 trapping and hunting and with limits on outsiders getting  
18 big game license, sports fishing license. Native  
19 people have always had a law in regards to the land and  
20 its animals.

21 They only killed how much they  
22 needed and when an animal was killed, they use every  
23 part of it. Nothing went to waste. We want the control  
24 on this so we can retain and save the animals for the  
25 future. Otherwise, as years go by and more and more  
26 outsiders are licensed, overkilling will result with  
27 extinguished species of animals. We have to be very  
28 careful.

29 We want to be able to bargain  
30 with labor unions and get a guarantee of no breaks when





Mrs. A. Andre

1 the pipe is running under the Mackenzie River which  
2 is our main livelihood.

3 Also, a guarantee of immediate  
4 cleanup of any spill or seepage that might occur from  
5 any busted pipe.

6 We want native monitors checking  
7 alone the pipeline routes, stationed maybe thirty miles  
8 apart for any indication of seepage or break of any kind.

9 When the pipe is running under  
10 the Mackenzie, we want trained, native divers checking  
11 that line. We want to be able to control things like  
12 these. If you were to witness spring breakup, you will  
13 know what I'm talking about. Ice almost a mile long  
14 moving, being pushed on the Mackenzie and when the  
15 actual broken up ice, five feet, sometimes more in  
16 thickness is ramming into each other and being pushed  
17 under other ice at a rapid pace of about 25 miles an  
18 hour and sometimes, the ice jamming at a narrow stretch  
19 along the Mackenzie and more ice is being pushed under  
20 other ice, you'll know what I'm talking about.

21 How can anyone talk about  
22 running pipes under the river and expect nothing to  
23 happen? When native people <sup>talk</sup> about damage to land or to  
24 the river, we know what we're talking about. We've  
25 lived here year-round for years and years. All the  
26 research work can be carried out in this world, with  
27 positive comments on how safe the pipeline can be, but  
28 you can never be too sure about nature. It is un-  
29 predictable.

30 Also, I'd like to mention there's



Mrs. A. Andre

1 a lot of fish lakes in the Travaillant Lake region.  
2 A lot of people from here have fished in this area  
3 and they are very concerned that a pipeline should be  
4 running through there.

5 We have future plans for these  
6 lakes and we want to protect ourselves for the future  
7 and protect these fish lakes.

8 I'd like to say a little on  
9 government's low rental housing. Native people were  
10 quite happy and had more pride and respect for owning  
11 their own homes. They didn't need low rentals. Housing  
12 not even fit for the north, the extreme winter conditions  
13 and shifting permafrost.

14 Did the government get them  
15 because the material was cheap and they were easy to  
16 slap together? Now, because of the poor material with  
17 which these houses were built and the social environ-  
18 ment imposed upon us, and we can't handle it. They  
19 say we don't, or can't, look after our houses.

20 Why didn't the government  
21 give native people loans to build their own homes?  
22 Homes they can at least call their own with their wood  
23 stove instead of furnaces with thermostats and the  
24 furnace itself in need of constant repair.

25 They have not given us a  
26 chance to prove ourselves. It is not very hard for us  
27 to get our own wood and our own ice-water in the winter-  
28 time. Everyday things done in the past and still being  
29 done today by people who own their own homes.

30 So, if they think they can



Mrs. A. Andre  
Mrs. C. Cardinal

1 easily come up here, screw our minds up and push us  
2 around, I think maybe they should think about it again.  
3 We will not be taken that easily any longer. Native  
4 people have put their foot down on what they have said.  
5 We don't value our land for the resources in it.

6 Thank you very much.

7 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
8 very much, Mrs. Andre.

9 (WITNESS ASIDE)

10 MRS. CAROLINE CARDINAL, sworn:

11 THE WITNESS: There's very  
12 little I'm going to say with the treaty party we had.  
13 In 1921/<sup>when</sup> the treaty party was here and it was the first  
14 time the people had treaty. That time it was only to  
15 have what we called a peace treaty. To have peace  
16 between the white and native people.

17 Since that time, the white  
18 people and the native people were as one and never  
19 had trouble. The white people came down and do what  
20 they like, put up towns, hotels and all kinds of  
21 buildings. Us natives, we never say nothing. At  
22 least we were in peace like thinking we are on our  
23 own land and the rest just let it go, like. This land  
24 is ours. God put us on it and we are happy to be on  
25 it, on our land.

26 We used to be happy but today  
27 the white people those peoples worry by tearing our  
28 land in all kinds of ways. They make money on our land  
29 too.

30 We see all this so far, but





Mrs. C. Cardinal

1 still again we don't say nothing. Today is the first  
2 time we are asking for something very important;  
3 settlement of the land claim before anything else will  
4 go on.

5 The white people wants develop-  
6 ment in our country. Why don't they develop the  
7 country some other way than the pipeline? We worry  
8 about our land and the white people that have nothing  
9 in their head but pipeline instead of trying to listen  
10 to what we are asking. We hear nothing but pipeline;  
11 pipeline on the radio and T.V. Every day the same  
12 thing.

13 You white people, you do not  
14 know what you are doing to us. You are going to destroy  
15 the animals like caribou, moose, ducks and fish.  
16 Already there no rabbits<sup>a</sup> since a few years. After you  
17 put up the pipeline, what will happen to those animals?  
18 Maybe they will never come back. What do you think we  
19 are going to live on after that? The worst worry we  
20 have on the pipeline will go under the Mackenzie River.

21 I don't think any one of you  
22 ever seen the Mackenzie River ice running in the spring.  
23 Did you ever check under the water when the Mackenzie  
24 River is running? Sometimes the ice stop and it stop  
25 right down to the bottom of the river. That's what  
26 we think. It look like that to anyway.

27 We hear that the pipeline will  
28 pass under the Mackenzie River. The ice running is  
29 so powerful that we feel it might break or crack the  
30 pipeline. We get used to be at peace today. We feel





Mrs. C. Cardinal

J. Andre

1 hungry and we worry to think of what you are going to  
2 do to us.

3 In closing, we would like to  
4 ask you once more that we do not want the pipeline to  
5 pass close to Arctic Red River.

6 Thank you, Mr. Berger.

7 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
8 very much ma'am. Thank you. Maybe the statements in  
9 writing that you, Andre, and you ma'am, we could have  
10 those and they could be marked as exhibits.

11 (STATEMENT OF ALESTINE ANDRE MARKED EXHIBIT  
12 C-269)

13 (STATEMENT OF CAROLINE CARDINAL MARKED EXHIBIT  
14 C-270)

15 (WITNESS ASIDE)

16 JEROME ANDRE, sworn:

17 THE WITNESS: I

18 want to say a few or I may ask a few questions too.  
19 So, I'm an oldtimer myself. I've been in Arctic Red,  
20 born somewhere up the mountains close to Majeau, but  
21 now I want to talk about my land myself.

22 I been in Inuvik for the last  
23 13 years. I hunt moose one time and then I was laid  
24 down on the/snow on the road there, wounded with a pack of moose there.  
25 But anyway, I don't want to talk my past time. I want  
26 to see this land be developed. If we said something,  
27 I'd like everyone to say something for himself.

28 How you are going to build  
29 that pipeline? If you want to put -- if there is any  
30 possibil<sup>ity</sup> that you could build it not to cross the river



J. Andre

1 just on land. I know we could get our land claim but  
2 to cross a pipeline under Mackenzie or else, I'll say  
3 one thing, that that will never been done. No. No  
4 way. But if you going to cross the creek/the west side,  
5 the old-- I know the country and all that.

6 Could you build a pipe that  
7 joins together at least 100 feet or 200 feet both  
8 sides?

9 THE COMMISSIONER: Mr. Beer,  
10 do you want to say anything about that?

11 MR. BEER: I didn't one hundred  
12 percent follow the question, sir.

13 THE WITNESS: Well, to tell  
14 you, you never know what is going to happen. If you  
15 do that, well, that'll be safe. If you could put four  
16 valves, it would cost the government a lot of money.

17 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, what  
18 they say will do -- let me just -- the Foothills  
19 pipeline which brings gas from the delta --

20 THE WITNESS: Yes.

21 THE COMMISSIONER: --has to  
22 cross the Mackenzie at Swimming Point. That's on the  
23 other side of Inuvik, the east side of Inuvik and north.

24 THE WITNESS: Yes.

25 THE COMMISSIONER: Then they  
26 go south and they have to cross the Great Bear River  
27 and then they have to cross the Mackenzie before they  
28 reach Great Slave Lake if they're going to get out of  
29 the Territories without having to put the pipe underneath  
30 Great Slave Lake itself. So, Foothills on the east



J. Andre

1 side of the delta, they have three main river crossings;  
2 Swimming Point, Great Bear River and then another  
3 crossing of the Mackenzie south of Fort Simpson.

4 Arctic Gas, because they  
5 want to bring this gas from Alaska, they have to cross  
6 the Mackenzie Delta.

7 THE WITNESS: Yes.

8 THE COMMISSIONER: And they  
9 have to cross Shallow Bay. That's about four miles  
10 crossing. But they say they will make all these major  
11 river crossings two pipes under the river, in case  
12 one breaks, then the other will still be O.K. That's  
13 what they say they're going to do. Now, they cross  
14 altogether 600 streams, channels and rivers in the  
15 routed pipeline in the Northwest Territories and the  
16 Yukon, but the main crossings are the crossing of the  
17 delta, you can see right across Shallow Bay, then across  
18 the Mackenzie at Swimming Point, then across the Bear  
19 River, and then across the Mackenzie south of Fort  
20 Simpson.

21 They have to cross those  
22 rivers, or they'll never get the gas and then the oil  
23 out of here. That's their problem.

24 THE WITNESS: Well, I'm asking  
25 that right now, if possible, could they keep away from  
26 the Mackenzie River?

27 THE COMMISSIONER: No, I don't  
28 think they could.

29 THE WITNESS: Well, it'll  
30 cost them how much money? Billions and billions and then--





J. Andre

1 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes. Well,  
2 they say that to build these pipelines will cost billions.

3 THE WITNESS: If you destroy  
4 our country, what we're going to live on? The  
5 government could spend money to build a highway from  
6 Edmonton to Inuvik, to train them young boys there  
7 ten, twelve years old. Train them to run the heavy  
8 equipment or a train, that will be cheaper to the  
9 government instead of using billions and billions of  
10 dollars.

11 The next thing I'll say,  
12 that'll be cheaper to the government instead of you  
13 wouldn't see it after the pipeline is built. You  
14 wouldn't see them young generations. Our young genera-  
15 tions would have no job. If they take course, they  
16 could run a train or heavy equipment and boat beside.  
17 They could do something about it.

18 But this pipeline is going  
19 to be a terrible thing to build up a pipeline. If you  
20 want to cross a creek or anything, I wouldn't mind,  
21 but not Mackenzie. You could have two pipes to cross  
22 Mackenzie and have four valves on it. If anything  
23 happened to one you would just have to close the thing.  
24 There'd be always somebody to watch that, I guess.

25 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, they  
26 say they're going to have two pipes across the Mackenzie.

27 THE WITNESS: Across Mackenzie?  
28 I rather it's not under the bottom of the water. I'd  
29 rather see that pipe going up maybe a hundred feet high  
30 from --



J. Andre

1 THE COMMISSIONER: Well they  
2 say they can't put it overhead. They say they can't  
3 string it on piers and extend it across the river.  
4 They say that overhead crossings don't work very well.  
5 So that's why they want to put it under the river.  
6 Now, as I told you this afternoon, one scientist has  
7 already come to the Inquiry and that it won't work  
8 under the river. He agrees with you. He says that the  
9 whole thing should be above ground --

10 THE WITNESS: Yes.

11 THE COMMISSIONER: -- overhead.  
12 But Arctic Gas and Foothills, their scientists and  
13 engineers, they say they can put it underground and  
14 under the river. Now that's one of things that I am  
15 looking into and will have to report to the government  
16 on.

17 THE WITNESS: We'll that'll  
18 take a lot of heat to -- if this is under the water,  
19 it'll take a lot of heat to run that oil. The bottom  
20 water is not --

21 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, when  
22 they come to an oil pipeline --

23 THE WITNESS: It's not thirty  
24 or forty degrees you know.

25 THE COMMISSIONER: When they  
26 come to an oil pipeline, they'll have to build it  
27 overhead. That's the way they're building the one in  
28 Alaska. They're building it above ground most of the  
29 way.

30 THE WITNESS: Well, I'm asking



J. Andre

1 you something right now. I represent Inuvik. There's  
2 lots of Arctic Red River kids and boys and womans yet  
3 and all the whites. They tell me they don't want the  
4 pipeline and they can't say nothing, unless we know  
5 we're going to get our land claim but for the pipe  
6 building, I don't agree with that. None of us agree,  
7 even the white doesn't agree. So, I'm here to represent  
8 them just like the way they told me everything.

9 You know, if you make your  
10 living in this country like your father, our land is  
11 our father. If we spoil it, we just like we're killing  
12 our father. Look at all the animals that are going to  
13 be destroyed.

14 I brought up children and I am  
15 still looking after lotsin Inuvik when the government  
16 can't even support them. I'm working there down there.  
17 I spent about five to six thousand dollars to people  
18 and I guess I'll get a reward some day but anyway, but  
19 this pipeline I don't want to be built.

20 There is a possible way for  
21 to put it up, I guess. But if you want to put it across  
22 Mackenzie River, I don't agree with that. It'll cost  
23 a lot of money to the government and they might just  
24 as well have it on land instead of crossing the river.

25 You heard about Paulatuk, how  
26 many seals that<sup>got</sup> killed there just by oil, Molesting,  
27 that's molesting animals; and supposing if the pipe break,  
28 if a moose come there, do you think would you like to  
29 walk in barefoot? Moose or caribou or any animal, he  
30 wouldn't lick his feet. Not like water he does. He'll





J. Andre

R. Andre

1 lose his hoof. The same with the caribou or moose and  
2 then they have to walk there barefoot after they lose  
3 their hoof. Now, you've got to think about that all  
4 what is going on. We sure don't mind. Long as we got  
5 our land claim. That's all we wish but we don't want to  
6 suffer the animals.

7 I know, the old lady was  
8 talking there this afternoon. That's my father's sister.  
9 She's older. But me, I haven't got the experience.  
10 No knowledge in me you know. I was a trapper one  
11 time. I started to work for the police, R.C.M.P., for  
12 11 years and here I am down there at N.C.P.C. since  
13 I got hurt. I'm 23 years on the government job. But  
14 still, I was trapping one time and I hope you agree  
15 with me.

16 That's all I have thinking  
17 to say. Thank you Mr. Berger.

18 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
19 sir.

20 (WITNESS ASIDE)

21 ROBERT ANDRE, resumed:

22 THE WITNESS: Well, perhaps  
23 at this time maybe we should bring your attention to  
24 the map behind you.

25 THE COMMISSIONER: Fine.

26 THE WITNESS: The area that  
27 has been used by our people for the last hundred of  
28 years. At present, there is many of our people that are  
29 still out on the land. There's some up the Arctic Red  
30 River, up the Mackenzie, down around Point Separation and





R. Andre  
N. Andre

1 and then the delta. There are quite a few people out  
2 on the land at present.

3 This map is incomplete. All  
4 the lines are not drawn in. There's still a lot of  
5 people that have to put their how they have used the  
6 land in the past.

7 THE COMMISSIONER: There's  
8 Arctic Red and there's Travaillant Lake and I gather  
9 from all the lines extending over into the area of  
10 Travaillant Lake that the people here have made use  
11 of the resources in the vicinity of Travaillant Lake.  
12 Just for the record, the lines which constitute trap-  
13 lines, I take it, do they?

14 THE WITNESS: Well, maybe  
15 perhaps Noel should explain that. I think he knows  
16 a bit more about that than I do.

17 NOEL ANDRE, resumed:

18 WITNESS N. ANDRE: Well, like  
19 Robert said it's incompleated.

20 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes.

21 WITNESS N. ANDRE: Well, all  
22 the lands you see, there is their travelling route and  
23 traplines in all seasons. But I think the next map  
24 you see will be better than this.

25 WITNESS R. ANDRE: Soon you won't  
26 see any green in there.

27 THE COMMISSIONER: Pardon.

28 WITNESS R. ANDRE: I tell you  
29 once you have covered all the maps, it will be just a  
30 black sheet of paper.



R. Andre

N. Andre

1 WITNESS N. ANDRE: Yes.

2 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes. Well,  
3 that's helpful though to understand the area in which  
4 the people have been hunting and trapping and fishing. As  
5 I understand, the Brotherhood will submit a complete  
6 map later on to this Inquiry.

7 WITNESS N. ANDRE: Yes.

8 WITNESS R. ANDRE: Well, I  
9 think so, yes.

10 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, that's  
11 fine. We were looking at the maps at suppertime, so  
12 we have a pretty good idea of what they indicate.

13 WITNESS R. ANDRE: I think  
14 the area of most of our concern for the people of this  
15 community is the area around Travaillant Lake.

16 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes.

17 WITNESS R. ANDRE: I think all  
18 the lakes there are fish lakes and the proposed pipe-  
19 line route will go directly into that area.

20 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes. Yes,  
21 I see that.

WITNESS R. ANDRE ASIDE)

22 WITNESS N. ANDRE: First of  
23 all, I want to welcome you, Mr. Berger and all the rest,  
24 thanks for coming to hear us. Sorry to say, I was going  
25 to say that but, there's lots of them there. I was  
26 going to say, sorry to say most of the community are  
27 out of town. But anyway, we'll say what we can get  
28 into. I guess you heard a lot since you start inquiring.  
29 The more you hear us, the more you like it. But you  
30 always hear one side of a story. You will hear our side



N. Andre

1 of the story now, for we've got as much to say as  
2 anyone about our land which was ours from the beginning.

3 Our great, great ancestors  
4 never heard of white man which is true because even  
5 me, I know. Sir Alexander Mackenzie was the first  
6 white man to come around here and it's still going on.  
7 Our ancestors never used guns, any kind of guns. Just  
8 bow and arrows. Using bones for arrowheads. That's  
9 their bullets and they were healthy people. The only  
10 way they die, is by old age. That's way over a hundred  
11 years ago.

12 I know my grandmother, she  
13 was here this afternoon, is still alive today and is  
14 here in this room. She must be 89 years old now and  
15 she told me a lot of stories about oldtimers. She  
16 meant about three, four hundred years ago. That's  
17 by her ancestors she knows the stories herself.

18 So you, Mr. Berger, my land  
19 was their land. But this land at that time was lovely.  
20 Today, it's ugly. You know why? That's on account of  
21 white man. White man done this to us. Ruin us. They  
22 put us down, but we'll keep our spirits up for we are  
23 all staying on land.

24 You see Mr. Berger, you are  
25 sitting on our land too today which is destroyed not  
26 by us Indians. Twenty years ago when you climb a  
27 big hill you will see a lovely green forest. Today,  
28 you climb the same hill, you will see a big checkered  
29 land. That's what white man done. Cut up our land,  
30 as if it was a birthday cake.





N. Andre

1 Now they want to put this  
2 pipeline through our land. Haven't they done enough  
3 already? What will be left? Nothing but more  
4 misery. Most of all, trouble like Alaska and James  
5 Bay. I heard about all that. I even read about it  
6 and seen it on T.V. and movies. It's going to be the  
7 same here for sure. That's why I don't want pipeline.  
8 I don't need it. Pipelines means trouble. You might  
9 as well say, "we'll put trouble through".  
10 That's why I don't want a pipeline.

11 We Indians have children just  
12 like white men and I love my children and they will  
13 have children too. What about our children's grand-  
14 childrens? We think of them. Maybe you don't. I know  
15 why. They want the pipeline through. Gas and then  
16 oil. After that it's big money. Who is going to  
17 benefit from it? Outsiders with big contracts.

18 For example, the company that  
19 makes 48 inch by 40 feet long gas pipe will make money.  
20 One mile of them pipes is 211,200 feet. I kept  
21 thinking what one foot of this pipe is worth, wondering  
22 and wondering. If I ever find out what one foot of this  
23 pipe worth, I'll add it up and find out what one mile  
24 of the pipe is worth. Then I'll say, "no more pipeline".  
25 That's what everybody thinks. I know. That's what  
26 I think and said.

27 Thanks Mr. Berger.

28 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you  
29 very much, Mr. Andre.

30 (APPLAUSE)



M. Andre

1 THE WITNESS: And there's  
2 a little more for the gas people. I've got a few  
3 words for you. You may promise lots but it'll never  
4 happen. You promise us jobs but you never think of  
5 union. They are the ones who will get the jobs. You  
6 promise them, not us. Not us Indians. They say no  
7 one from the outside bother our settlement but look  
8 back at Alaska. What happened? I know and you know.

9 You put that pipeline through  
10 it will happen here too. You just keep your pipes  
11 where they are. We don't need it. It's just like  
12 Charlie Barnaby from Fort Good Hope said for some more  
13 Indians to trip over. But now, we have to watch where  
14 we are going. O.K., that's true.

15 Now for Mackenzie River. You  
16 put the pipeline under the water. You never think of  
17 water pressure. It will never stay. You watch  
18 Mackenzie River at breakup. It piles up as high as  
19 these hills you see around us and right down to the  
20 bottom. So you see what we want. What we got, we  
21 might as well hang on to. That's it, no pipeline. No  
22 way. We had some clean country. You're going to dirty  
23 it. We never bother the south. Why bother us?

24 That gas and oil in the Arctic  
25 are for the Eskimos for them to use. You know why?  
26 They got no trees for firewood, so leave it where it  
27 is. Leave it for them. Don't bother. Keep away.

28 Thank you.

29 (APPLAUSE)

30 (WITNESS ASIDE)  
WILLIE SIMON, sworn:



W. Simon

1 THE WITNESS: You already  
2 heard my name, Willie Simon and I'm 34 years old. I  
3 wasn't going to start telling my life story, but just  
4 for the benefit of the people and getting to remember  
5 back, and those who don't know me, to bring it to them.

6 I was born here in Arctic Red  
7 and went to school in Aklavik for two years and went  
8 to school here in this building for six months or so.  
9 While I was going to school here, I used to live with  
10 my grandmother. My parents were out in the bush about  
11 twenty miles the other side of Travaillant Lake. I  
12 used to go to school about a mile from here. Those were  
13 pretty rough days. Used to have to come to school when  
14 it was blowing, thirty below, forty below. I was  
15 only twelve years old.

16 After I had trouble with the  
17 law. The R.C.M.P. at that time was quite a man, a  
18 miserable man. Most of the people here probably  
19 remember him. His name was Osier. I don't know his  
20 last name. I don't want to know it either but anyway,  
21 he gave me such a rough time that I had to leave school  
22 here. I told my parents I didn't want to go to school  
23 anymore. I went back in the bush with them.

24 Then, I went to Fort Good Hope  
25 and I stayed there for two years. Then I had a sister  
26 living in Yellowknife. I went to Yellowknife and  
27 started working. I went to school a while, for about  
28 three years. I was lucky I made grade eight. I don't  
29 know how I did it. But anyway, after I was 15 years old,  
30 I got to Yellowknife and I worked for two years there.



W. Simon

1 Then I went down to Inuvik and worked for two years  
2 there.

3 Then I went into trapping.  
4 I went into the Anderson River. I spent five years in  
5 the Anderson River mostly by myself. I had partners at  
6 times and after I came back from the Anderson River, I  
7 went into the delta which is down about forty miles  
8 down the river from here on the east branch and I spent  
9 six years there and during that time, it was mostly  
10 the wintertime mostly and sometimes in the summer too.

11 If I can recall, I didn't see  
12 Christmas for 11 years right in a row. I didn't have  
13 no good times. Then after that, I got into this  
14 business of logging and I was doing all right for a  
15 while but I guess the education part didn't bring me  
16 up to the top. That's just for people to know my  
17 background.

18 Then I came here and I'm  
19 staying here now for a year and a half.

20 I would like to ask probably  
21 like the same as everybody else said like everybody  
22 made a speech probably said what I wanted to say. The  
23 only thing that I see here is I'd like to repeat some  
24 of the notes that I've been taking down.

25 I have a few questions for  
26 Arctic Gas and Foothills. I guess you heard that  
27 Travaillant Lake is quite an important part of the  
28 country to the people of Arctic Red. I would like to  
29 ask Artic Gas or Foothills if they would consider to  
30 move that line a little further east or it's already





W. Simon

1 plans.

2 MR. BEER: You'll notice by  
3 looking at the map that we are, I think, about five  
4 or six miles east of Travaillant Lake, maybe a little  
5 further. That's the red line to the east there. I'd  
6 like to say at this time, the proposed line is just  
7 that. It's a proposal and if it really is going to  
8 interfere with hunting and trapping and so on, we  
9 wouldn't regard that line as necessarily final. We're  
10 doing route refinements all the time and trying to take  
11 into account people's problems and terrain problems  
12 with the pipeline. So, it could be moved to the east.

13 THE WITNESS: The red line  
14 is Foothills?

15 MR. BEER: Yes, that's correct.

16 THE WITNESS: Well, if you're  
17 going to move it, I would say you have to go at least  
18 twenty miles further to the east.

19 MR. BEER: Twenty miles, I see.

20 THE WITNESS: At least.

21 MR. BEER: I guess we'd have  
22 to take a note of that and look at it. I can't promise  
23 right at the moment that we could move it twenty miles  
24 to the east. I'm not the president of the company and  
25 I really can't make that sort of a promise, but I  
26 can relay that message to the management of the company  
27 and see what response comes back.

28 THE WITNESS: As you know, the  
29 border lies in between Good Hope and here. It lies  
30 about twenty miles so you would be hitting the border there.



W. Simon

You wouldn't be having, you know, you would be splitting the difference in between Good Hope and here for the trappers.

MR. BEFR: You mean the border  
between your lands and the lands that are used by the  
people of Fort Good Hope?

THE WITNESS: Yes. The same with Arctic Gas. That's the same thing as I'd like to ask you.

MR. CARTER: As we've already said, Arctic Gas has made some changes already to its route, so similar to Foothills, the route shouldn't be considered as final. But, I think it would be unlikely and I would be misleading you to state that there's a very good possibility that they would move the line twenty miles further east. That would mean a considerable amount of additional pipe and additional expense. So, your suggestion will certainly be put to the company but whether it's very likely that they'll move it or not, I rather doubt. I wasn't certain what meant when you were talking about Fort Good Hope and it being a trade-off between the two.

THE WITNESS: Well, I'm speaking about the trapping area. That's where the line runs. The line runs just about where the map -- the end of the map going down. Yes.

MR. BEER: North and south.

THE WITNESS: Yes. Now, if you want to change your route, you'd have to start from the big lake up there and move it down towards the



W. Simon

1 corner with the white there and straight down. That  
2 wouldn't be too much extra pipe. Not when you start  
3 considering how much you'll save for us.

4 MR. CARTER: Yes, I appreciate  
5 what you're saying that it wouldn't be that much additional  
6 cost when you look at the whole cost of the project  
7 and your suggestion will be passed on. But I can't  
8 say tonight that it's going to be moved. In fact, to be  
9 as honest as I can, I would think that it's not that  
10 likely that it would be moved.

11 THE COMMISSIONER: You're  
12 saying that it should take a jog out and around  
13 Travaillant Lake.

14 THE WITNESS: Yes.

15 THE COMMISSIONER: Returning  
16 to --

17 THE WITNESS: You don't have  
18 return. I can see by the map there where you just  
19 have to go east and then come straight south.

20 THE COMMISSIONER: Why don't  
21 you just show me that so that I won't forget it.

22 THE WITNESS: Instead of  
23 going down through here past Travaillant  
24 Lake, instead of coming here, come up from here this  
25 way. Here lies the border, right in here someplace  
26 between Good Hope and come down through here where  
27 your line is going through here so you'd probably come  
28 down through here. Now, this would cut off this area  
29 completely and if I am correct, I'm not  
30 too sure, I think the water runs this way, so --





W. Simon

1 THE COMMISSIONER: Right, I  
2 follow you.

3 THE WITNESS: There's a break  
4 or flow away from the lakes.

5 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes,  
6 right.

7 THE WITNESS: An old lady  
8 came up here today and said something about the men  
9 in camp, about coming into town and may I ask the  
10 question of Arctic Gas or Foothills could ensure if  
11 the pipeline comes through that the men who'd come  
12 from the south come into camp, work, get their time  
13 in and sent back?

14 MR. BEER: Yes, that indeed  
15 is our plan. We have no intention of permitting con-  
16 struction crews to leave the construction camp and  
17 come into any of the settlements in the Territories.  
18 They'll be brought in through the airports at say  
19 Inuvik and straight out to the construction camp and  
20 those will be sufficiently remote and they'll be in  
21 the winter and I don't think that they will be able to  
22 get into communities such as Arctic Red, let alone  
23 be allowed in.

24 THE WITNESS: Could I get the  
25 same answer from Arctic Gas?

26 MR. CARTER: Yes, it's Arctic  
27 Gas' policy as well not to permit the workers to go  
28 into the villages and that will be enforced by having  
29 vehicles, snowmobiles, any sort of transportation off-  
30 bounds, if I can use those words, to the workers.



W. Simon

1 That they can only use them for the job and to travel  
2 into the town. Now, I suppose there's always a chance  
3 that if some worker wants to bad enough, he could get  
4 into the town so that may happen. It would be a term  
5 of his employment that if he did so, he'd be fired and  
6 I think, in addition, once a man is fired, he should be  
7 sent back south and that was a suggestion that was made  
8 by, I think it was Mrs. Allen, from Inuvik, that once  
9 a worker is fired, he shouldn't just be let go say in  
10 Inuvik, to cause more trouble. That he should be sent  
11 back on the same plane that he came on and back south  
12 again.

13 MR. BEER: And when people  
14 have completed their tour of duty as far as the Foothills  
15 pipeline is concerned, they wouldn't be allowed to take  
16 a vacation, for example, in Inuvik and then roam around  
17 the area. They would be flown directly back to the  
18 southern part of Canada.

19 THE COMMISSIONER: Maybe I  
20 could just tell you that Arctic Gas, which is the bigger  
21 pipeline --

22 MR. BEER: Yes.

23 THE COMMISSIONER: -- will have  
24 about nine construction camps in the north and there  
25 will be about 800 men at each camp. Now, I think there  
26 are three camps in the vicinity of the delta.  
27 I think it's fair to say that the place that those men  
28 in the camps will want most of all to visit would be  
29 Inuvik. I don't think there's much doubt about that.

30 THE WITNESS: Yes, well I'm talking



W. Simon

1 about Inuvik just as much as here.

2 THE COMMISSIONER: O.K. But,  
3 well, I'm thinking of it too. I just wanted to go on  
4 and add something. You see, the companies say that  
5 their policy will be to keep the men in camp, they  
6 won't let them have any vehicles and if a man breaks  
7 the rules, they'll insist that he go right back to  
8 Edmonton.

9 THE WITNESS: Yes.

10 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, the  
11 trouble with that is, and one of you raised this  
12 question before, the unions will have an awful lot to  
13 say about that. It's not just the companies we're  
14 concerned with here.

15 THE WITNESS: Yes.

16 THE COMMISSIONER: It's the  
17 unions too, and you know in Alaska that the unions have  
18 an awful to say about what happens on that pipeline  
19 project in Alaska. So, we are getting the unions to  
20 come to the Inquiry and to tell us what they're prepared  
21 to do so that we're in a better position to know, what  
22 the companies say and they say it in good faith, is  
23 something they really can do. There's another thing  
24 you should remember. This is a free country and if  
25 a man is fired from one of the camps, and wants to go  
26 to Inuvik or Arctic Red or Aklavik or Fort McPherson --

27 THE WITNESS: Yes.

28 THE COMMISSIONER: In our  
29 country, he can. Arctic Gas has no right to say to  
30 him, "You get on that plane", anymore than they can say



W. Simon

1 anybody, "Get on that plane". Once they've fired  
2 somebody, they have no right to tell him to do anything  
3 and if he wanted to go to Inuvik or Arctic Red, they  
4 couldn't stop him. I want you to understand that.

5 THE WITNESS: Yes. I under-  
6 stand.

7 THE COMMISSIONER: So that  
8 while the two companies are anxious to do their best  
9 to co-operate with you people and to keep these men  
10 in the camps, away from your settlements and away from  
11 your villages, it isn't going to be an easy thing to do  
12 and I'm thinking about it and we're going to get the  
13 unions in as well as the companies and see what we can  
14 do about it. So, I'm sorry to interrupt you, but I  
15 just wanted you to understand there's a lot more to it  
16 that what these gentlemen say, even though they're  
17 going as far as they can to co-operate. So, go ahead  
18 with your questions, sorry.

19 THE WITNESS: Just another  
20 question. Another question somebody brought to you  
21 earlier. He was speaking about five miles. I was  
22 going to ask you if the line broke and with the wind,  
23 and he was two, three hundred feet away, what would  
24 happen then? Would he smell the gas?

25 MR. CARTER: Mr. Beer here is  
26 more experienced in this than I am and he told me I  
27 was wrong when I said that they injected the smell into  
28 the gas before they shipped it down the pipe. He said  
29 they only did that once it reached southern Canada so  
30 perhaps he can deal with that.





W. Simon

1 MR. BEER: I suppose if you  
2 had a major leak of gas from a rupture in the pipeline  
3 and there was a very strong wind blowing, then if you  
4 were two or three hundred feet away only, there could  
5 be some gas around, you know, surrounding you at that  
6 point. I think, however, that because natural gas is  
7 so much lighter than air, that the concentration of gas  
8 around you would be quite small. It would also, to an  
9 extent, be difficult to detect because, as Mr. Carter  
10 just said, pipeline companies simply don't inject a  
11 smell into the gas until it gets into the distribution  
12 system in the city or community where it's to be used.  
13 I'm not sure that I've a hundred percent answered your  
14 question. Maybe you could perhaps follow it up a little.

15 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, if  
16 you were two hundred or three hundred feet away and the  
17 pipe broke, and there was an inversion and the gas  
18 didn't rise, would you stand a chance of being asphyxiated,  
19 of being smothered?

20 MR. BEER: I don't know that  
21 I can answer that question entirely sir, I don't think that  
22 even a fairly strong inversion would hold natural gas  
23 down completely. We've, I believe, discussed the  
24 business of it holding exhausts from compressor  
25 stations down, for example, but I would have to do a  
26 little research before I could answer the question  
27 whether it hold natural gas down entirely, although I  
28 don't believe so.

29 THE WITNESS: I was going to  
30 ask you another question you've probably answered. I



W. Simon

1 wasgoing to ask you what effects would it take within  
2 one mile? I suppose the 200 feet covered that.

3 MR. BEER: Well, in the sense  
4 that a mile is further away, and the effects is going  
5 to be very, very much less again than at two or 300  
6 feet. I think you probably wouldn't get any effect  
7 at all at about a mile's distance.

8 THE WITNESS: Say the pipe's  
9 broke on the side, underneath, would it shoot straight  
10 out?

11 MR. BEER: You mean buried  
12 underground?

13 THE WITNESS: No, it was laying  
14 on top, it would be laying on top the ground, wouldn't  
15 it?

16 MR. BEER: No, it wouldn't.  
17 Perhaps I'd better take this opportunity to clarify a  
18 point here. The pipeline will be buried underground  
19 for the whole of its distance, the whole of its length,  
20 from the delta to the 60th Parallel and beyond in  
21 Southern Canada. Even at the river crossings it will  
22 be not only below the water, but it will be below the  
23 bottom of the river bed some considerable distance so  
24 that ice cannot get at it to break it up during the  
25 spring breakup that you -- that several people have  
26 expressed concern about. At that point it might be  
27 buried 30 or 40 feet below the base of the river bed.  
28 When it's not passing under a river or a stream, it  
29 would probably have about five feet of earth on top  
30 of it. The only time that it would ever come above



W. Simon

1 ground would be inside the compressor stations.

2 THE WITNESS: You should have  
3 told me that before and I wouldn't have had to ask you  
4 these questions.

5 MR. BEER: Well, I'm sorry, I  
6 didn't realize that we hadn't cleared that point up.

7 THE WITNESS: All right, that's  
8 all I've got for you.

9 Now that I spoke to the  
10 people, Artic Gas, I'd like to speak to Mr. Berger.

11 I'd like to speak about land  
12 claims and the pipeline. A lot of people would say  
13 that if you want to build a pipeline we'd like to see  
14 the land claims first. I don't see why the govern-  
15 ment didn't see that a long time ago, like to settle  
16 the land claims first and then speak about pipeline.  
17 Seems like the pipeline is beating the land claims,  
18 as far as I can see.

19 But like a letter I wrote,  
20 a letter that I read in "The Drum" about Len Cardinal  
21 or something speaking there, why don't the government  
22 and the Indian people get together and settle this  
23 land claims, get the things settled with? You know,  
24 instead of beating around the bush. They've been  
25 beating around the bush now for six years. Now that  
26 the Indian Brotherhood is sort of broken up, with no  
27 president, it seem to be a waste of time there for  
28 six years. I don't know what's taken them so long  
29 to settle it, but they should go ahead and get together,  
30 and you know, speak like you and I are talking to each





W. Simon

1 other. It seems the government doesn't really --  
2 the whole bunch of people don't know what they're  
3 doing. There's one smart guy sitting over there, and  
4 another smart guy sitting over there, and another  
5 guy got a different opinion, and they all know too  
6 much, pretty soon you know, they don't know what to  
7 do, they don't know nothing.

8 Not too long ago, about back  
9 when Judd Buchanan was in Yellowknife there he made  
10 a statement about cutting the Indian Brotherhood off  
11 with money and I thought that was kind of a poor  
12 statement to make. I don't like it very much when  
13 he's Minister of Northern Affairs or Indian Affairs.  
14 He should be on the Indian's side a little bit instead  
15 of speaking against the Indian like that.

16 It seems to me that he's on  
17 -- more on the white side. The government started up  
18 this -- I don't know too much about it, the first time  
19 I started realizing our land claims, but as you know I  
20 spent most of my years in the bush. They started up  
21 this, they financed the Brotherhood for money, after  
22 six years doing it or how long, now they start cutting  
23 them off of it. That's a funny thing. I wonder if the  
24 Government of Canada will ever look at the other  
25 countries in the eyes like Japan, England, Russia, I  
26 wonder what those countries would say about Canada if  
27 the government made a decision not to give the Indian  
28 land claims? They would probably laugh at them and  
29 say, "What kind of a government do they run in Canada?"

30 The Indian was the first



W. Simon

1 people that was here. He's the guy that owns the land,  
2 in the right way, you know. If you work for some-  
3 thing or if you were there, you got yourself a package  
4 of cigarettes or something, it's yours. If somebody  
5 come along and grab it away from you, it's not really  
6 his, he just took it, stole it.

7 I think if the Government of  
8 Canada want to compete with other countries in the  
9 good sense of doing things the right way, they should  
10 look more strongly about making the right decision  
11 about the land claims. That's what the Indian people  
12 are asking. I don't think it's too much. I don't  
13 know anything about how much it will be, it's just  
14 an interest on a dollar, interest on everything and  
15 controlling the old land.

16 I think some people like the  
17 white people, most of the people that are working with  
18 the government and for the government get the impression  
19 that as soon as the government is turned over to the  
20 Indian people they're going to be out of a job or  
21 something like that. I don't think it's going to happen,  
22 I think they'll still be on the job. The only changes  
23 going to be made there is the Indians will have the  
24 rights of the land and it will be sort of the government,  
25 like, in the Territories, not the Federal Government.  
26 That's up to the Indians of the south, not us.

27 Why don't the Government of  
28 Canada make the right decision and do the right thing  
29 and do it quick? They're holding up everybody.  
30 They're making us all confused, fighting against each



W. Simon

1 other, and we don't know what's going on. The pipeline,  
2 the oil companies are waiting, all the companies that  
3 are working around this country in all the different  
4 places are depending on the pipeline, depending on  
5 work, the decision to be made. I don't know, some  
6 people say the pipeline will be built; other people  
7 say it won't be built. Some don't like it and other  
8 people want it.

9 You're talking about four  
10 ways of building the pipeline. One with ~~big~~ planes,  
11 the other one with a railroad, one with a pipeline,  
12 and I got another way of suggesting you get that  
13 oil out, if you want to hear it. Why don't Arctic  
14 Gas and Foothills get together instead of fighting each  
15 other over who's going to get the contract and if they  
16 haven't got enough money, land claims settled with  
17 the Eskimos, build the pipeline around and go around  
18 the Arctic Ocean. It's a long way around, but that's  
19 one way of doing it. The Arabs got money, you can  
20 borrow from them.

21 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, that  
22 would keep it out of the Mackenzie Valley, anyway.

23 THE WITNESS: That's what I'm  
24 trying to say. So I'm really against it. Like I told  
25 you before, I'm in business. With the pipeline going  
26 through with me it's sort of a business like, want to be,  
27 can start up now, I've got the outfit to do it.

28 I really should be <sup>with</sup> the pipe-  
29 line coming through, but when I look around me, walk  
30 down the streets, go different places and see the



W. Simon

1 Indian people and know their way, go into their homes  
2 and see how they live and things run right over, just  
3 like the R.C.M.P. was here when I was a little boy  
4 running me around, they don't do that any more. When  
5 I start looking at that I simply forget about my  
6 business. Everything, I'd like to see them get what  
7 they want. But I think that if I was a white man and  
8 if they had a problem with the Indians, the white man  
9 he would probably pull for the pipeline, even if it  
10 was you bossing me.

11 That's the way I think, anyway.  
12 I go along with my brothers, they stretch all over the  
13 Northwest Territories and go into the States wherever  
14 they are. I would say "No" to the pipeline, not  
15 until land claims is settled anyway.

16 Speaking about the government  
17 doing a lot of good for the people, you put up houses,  
18 and I don't know whoever -- such a stupid thing, they  
19 make decisions, they -- who ever dreamed up the social  
20 development, whatever they call it?

21 THE COMMISSIONER: Welfare?

22 THE WITNESS: Yeah, who ever  
23 dreamed that system up, whoever done that must have been  
24 crazy. Go and give money to somebody for nothing so  
25 that he don't have to work, and that flow down into  
26 this country and people are starting to do it there.  
27 Not around here, surprisingly here in Arctic Red with  
28 no unemployment, no employment, with no work, we manage  
29 in this town to keep out of welfare. We're a very proud  
30 people for that. But in other towns, when a person





W. Simon

1 start getting welfare, start looking towards the  
2 government for this and that, houses, he starts to  
3 look down on themselves, lose his self-respect, you know.  
4 Maybe he don't show it on top, but inside he do.  
5 It's all on account of a whole bunch of people sitting  
6 together and drinking coffee at a party and talking  
7 about making decisions like that, I suppose, then they  
8 come and sit around a table like this.

9 I suppose we all do things  
10 wrong, and I did a little things wrong. Anyway, I'll  
11 repeat again that the Government of Canada should make  
12 the right decision, give the Indian people their  
13 land claims, give them what they want. If it's too  
14 much well then we'll negotiate with them and cut it  
15 down and get this thing settled with instead of  
16 beating around the bush, spending all the tax money  
17 and years flying by, people talking about it. We  
18 don't know whether it's going to be settled now or  
19 20 years from now, they've been fooling around for  
20 the last six years. In Alaska they settled it, I don't  
21 know how long it took them, but the Eskimos are --  
22 I don't know if they settled it now or they're still  
23 going to reach it anyway.

24 That's about all I have to  
25 say. Thank you very much.

26 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you.

27 (APPLAUSE)

28 (WITNESS ASIDE)



1                   NAP NORBERT, resumed:

2                   THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger, I just  
3 come by again here this afternoon, just to take back --  
4 I been listening to the pipeline, now I'm just going,  
5 just to find out, you know, how come they stop this  
6 highway, the Mackenzie Highway? It's got nothing to  
7 do with the pipeline hearing?

8                   THE COMMISSIONER: I don't  
9 think so. I think that the government -- well the  
10 government said that they didn't have enough money to  
11 carry on with the highway, so they have decided that  
12 they will complete the highway to Wrigley by 1979, and  
13 that's as far as they intend to go. They say that at  
14 this time they have no plans to go any further than that.  
15 I think they found it was costing a lot of money, and  
16 that may be why they decided to suspend construction  
17 once they reached Wrigley.

18                   THE WITNESS:: Okay. How  
19 come they're still building a Dempster Highway?

20                   THE COMMISSIONER: Well, they  
21 want to complete the Dempster Highway in 1977, they  
22 say, so that's what they are going to do.

23                   THE WITNESS: So it sound  
24 like a sense to me, like they're just waiting to build  
25 the pipeline first, and then they build the Mackenzie  
26 Highway, or something like that.

27                   THE COMMISSIONER: Well, I don't  
28 know. I just told you what the government has said  
29 about the Mackenzie Highway.

30                   THE WITNESS: Well, I just



1 think that, that's why I'm just asking, that's all.  
2 It's good asking anyway.

3 THE COMMISSIONER: Sure.

4 THE WITNESS: I'm still going  
5 further on to Arctic Gas, and Foothills, which I said  
6 you can smell it from five miles away. I still can't  
7 understand yet, you know, so I just want to ask  
8 me, he says he can smell it yet.

9 THE COMMISSIONER: He says,  
10 he says -- he says he made a mistake.

11 THE WITNESS: Well suppose --  
12 I said suppose it doesn't go up in the air, and just  
13 like smoke it'll come out from a stovepipe, stay on the  
14 ground?

15 MR. BEER: Because natural gas  
16 is so much lighter than air, it's about half the weight  
17 of air, it really can't do that. It just has to rise.  
18 It's like bubbles coming up through water. There really  
19 isn't any way that you can stop the bubbles rising  
20 through water, so there's no way that you can stop  
21 natural gas rising through air, and that really is the  
22 reason that you wouldn't find it -- or you wouldn't  
23 encounter it five miles away from the pipeline, from  
24 the leak. It would all have gone up in the air, long  
25 before you get to the five mile point.

26 THE WITNESS: Yes, I understand  
27 that, but have you ever been to a camp, a native camp,  
28 or a tent or a cabin. Have you ever been to a camp like  
29 that?

30 MR. BEER: I've been to camps,





1 not to the one that you're referring to -- not to the  
2 type that you're referring to though.

3 THE WITNESS: I know that, but  
4 the bush people, like myself, bush, trapping rats, most  
5 of the time the smoke gets in the air just like natural  
6 gas, gets in the air from a stovepipe, and you don't  
7 smell it from a few feet away. Most of the time the  
8 smoke stay right <sup>down to</sup> the treetops, probably lower than  
9 that, and if you come to a camp like that, you smell  
10 smoke maybe two or three miles. That's why I can't  
11 understand what you mean about this natural gas, you  
12 can't smell it.

13 MR BEER: Yes, I understand  
14 what you mean about smoke. I've <sup>smelled</sup> it myself a long  
15 way from a wood fire, and really all I can say is that  
16 the natural gas is just so much lighter than the smoke  
17 if you like, that it will just continue to go on up  
18 into the air. Smoke -- I guess it depends on the  
19 temperature of the fire, and the atmospheric conditions  
20 and so on, can and does very often, as you very well  
21 know, just hang there, but all I can say is that natural  
22 gas just doesn't do that.

23 THE WITNESS: It don't hang?

24 MR. BEER: It doesn't hang, no.  
25 It can't.  
26 /Smoke tends to be -- or can tend to be very much closer  
27 to the weight of air, so it doesn't have the force  
28 causing it to rise up, under certain circumstances.

29 THE WITNESS: Well, I thought  
30 natural gas and smoke, I thought it was just the same.

MR BEER: Not quite. The



E. Norbert  
R. Andre

1 natural gas is just so much lighter.

2 THE WITNESS: They weigh the  
3 same, same as natural gas and smoke, do they weigh  
4 the same?

5 MR. BEER: No, no no. Natural  
6 gas is lighter than air, and a lot lighter than smoke,  
7 you know.

8 THE WITNESS: Well how come the  
9 smoke don't go up then?

10 MR. BEER: Well, the smoke  
11 often does go up, but because it is lighter than air,  
12 or it goes up on light air, but there are circumstances  
13 where it just can't do that.

14 THE WITNESS: But the last time  
15 I see the smoke, it stay on -- from a camp stove and  
16 then -- oh, see, that's what I want to know, if it's  
17 the same thing?

18 MR. BEER: No, it's not the  
19 same thing.

20 THE WITNESS: Well, that's  
21 what I want to know. Thank you very much. That's all  
22 I want to know Mr. Berger, about the highway and this.  
23 Thank you very much.

24 (WITNESS ASIDE)

25  
26 THE COMMISSIONER: Well if  
27 there's anyone else to say anything?

28 ROBERT ANDRE, resumed:

29 THE WITNESS: I'd just like to  
30 mention that there's a lot of technicalities and there's



R. Andre  
J. Andre

1 a lot of technical things that people don't understand,  
2 and it's pretty hard, you know, people are scared when  
3 they don't understand anything. There's a lot of things  
4 that we don't know about the pipeline. That's why all  
5 these concerns are expressed.

6 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes. Well,  
7 we have the same concerns. I have the same concerns,  
8 and at Yellowknife, we bring Arctic Gas and all their  
9 people, and other people from the government before us  
10 to us explain <sup>these</sup> problems, so we understand them better,  
11 and then when we go to the communities we try to make  
12 sure the people have a better idea of what's going on.  
13 Do you have a question?

14 (WITNESS ASIDE)

15  
16 JAMES ANDRE, resumed:

17 THE WITNESS: I went to work  
18 for Arctic Gas three years ago at Fort Smith. People  
19 down there, they don't like to work down south, we don't  
20 like to work down south. We say, that's for the pipeline,  
21 we don't want to work for the pipeline. We don't like  
22 it. We want to work right in our country right here.  
23 Here's our people here -- we want to keep with our  
24 people. We want to be right here/ <sup>with them</sup> to understand what  
25 our people want, and what everybody wants. Go south,  
26 if you want to work for Arctic Gas. I got the experience.  
27 When I went to work at Fort Smith, in Fort Smith they  
28 tell me, you have to go to Moose Jaw, to (inaudible),  
29 that was sixteen miles from Moose Jaw. I don't want  
30 to go down there. Why should I go down there? I don't



1 know<sup>anybody</sup> down there. I don't know no native people,  
2 I don't know one, not even one person down there. Why  
3 should I go down there?

4 THE COMMISSIONER: Okay, I  
5 understand that. You've made that point very effectively  
6 That's the point other people have made in other  
7 meetings. Okay, I've got that, that's fine.

8 THE WITNESS: If you want to  
9 put that some way, some kind of training put them down  
10 right here where we are right now.

11 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes.

12 THE WITNESS: Right here in  
13 N.W.T. Right here, where we are.

14 THE COMMISSIONER: Okay, I'll  
15 think about that. It's a good point.

16 THE WITNESS: Left shit  
17 all over the Territories, I mean, you come back, and  
18 we're going to find out after you finish one year  
19 you come back here, and say --

20 A VOICE: He's not the  
21 only one you know. I'm from Fort MacPherson, and I  
22 can point that out to myself, because you go down to  
23 the States, I mean to the -- in Calgary or something  
24 like that, trying to do something on your own. Everybody  
25 say you're stupid because you're an Indian. You're  
26 not a walking dictionary you know. That's all I can  
27 say.

28 THE COMMISSIONER: Right.

29 A VOICE: Because we're  
30 stupid we're supposed to be stupid, according to anything.





1 You see all the movies they make? The Indians are  
2 stupid. Anybody would believe that, I think.

3 THE WITNESS: You go out there,  
4 you come back --

5 VOICE: I'm one person  
6 that I wouldn't want to make a mistake like that,  
7 people from James Bay. Not only Langley Bay. I would  
8 never ever do that.

9 THE WITNESS: You got all your  
10 training you want --

11 VOICE: What I want and  
12 what I work --

13 THE COMMISSIONER: I think we  
14 should have a little order here. Okay, does anybody  
15 else want to say anything?

16 VOICE: Does it matter  
17 what money is? Money is money.

18 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes, maybe  
19 if you want to say something you can come up and sit  
20 down here, it's okay with me.

21 VOICE: I'm not even  
22 from Arctic Red, I'm from Fort McPherson.

23 THE COMMISSIONER: Okay. Well  
24 I'm still glad to hear what you had to say. All right?

25 VOICE: Money is nothing to  
26 us, it's our land.

27 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, is  
28 there anybody else who wants to say anything, before  
29 we close the hearing? Yes sir?

30 THE WITNESS:  
Just what I wanted to



1 say is --

2 THE COMMISSIONER: I think  
3 the gentleman here wants to say something. O.K.

4 (WITNESS ASIDE)

5  
6 PASCALE BAPTISTE, sworn:

7 THE INTERPRETER: He's travelled  
8 quite a bit, and he said he was born in the year 1898,  
9 heused to<sup>stay</sup> with his parents. That's all they done,  
10 he said,  
11 travel around. It was in 1904 he went down with them,  
12 down the Mackenzie River. He was in school for six  
13 years. After he came back, he say he went back to his  
14 parents again.

15 In 1916 was when he got married,  
16 so after he got married, they done a lot a travelling;  
17 but he said for two years, he was down by the mouth,  
18 close to the mouth of Anderson River, that's where he  
19 means. From there, they travelled quite a ways to get  
20 little supplies, but he said they made their first  
21 trip to Kittigazuit, and he said at that time he had  
22 a chance to go down and see Tuk. You see at that time,  
23 Tuktoyaktuk had just one little log cabin, so from what  
24 I hear today it's a big town.

25 At that time, he had a chance  
26 to go down to Baillie Island, but he said there was  
27 nothing there, just a big point, and he said that's all  
28 there was there. There was no other cabins at all, just  
29 bare. He said he stayed down there as he told you before,  
30 and he said at 1917 he came back here into this town  
here, Arctic Red River.



P. Baptiste

1 He said we never stayed one  
2 place. We were forever travelling, and from here he  
3 said we went up the Arctic Red River. We travelled  
4 all over in that country too. He said them days it was  
5 pretty hard going, but still he said / <sup>they</sup> keep travelling  
6 and going from place to place, and he said from here  
7 we moved up 85 miles up the Arctic Red River. From  
8 there he says, we done a lot of travelling in that  
9 mountains, and he said that's we practically stayed  
10 all winter, looking around for caribou and moose. It  
11 was the year 1919.

12 You see I done a lot of  
13 travelling up in the mountains there. From there,  
14 they went into the Yukon. There's a little town they  
15 call Lansing Creek. He said we even went over there;  
16 and that was the year he said we stayed up this river  
17 for one year. That was the year 1918 when the war was  
18 just about ending, and he said we stayed up there pretty  
19 near two years. We didn't come back to Arctic Red River  
20 here.

21 The year 1921 he said we spent  
22 the New Year up the river in the mountains. He said  
23 the year after that we came back here, to this town  
24 here. That's the year 1921, when the first treaty was  
25 paid out, and he says I was there when the treaty was  
26 paid out. He said the person that paid out the treaty  
27 was a fairly big man, and he said I remember his name  
28 very well, Mr. Conroy. When he paid out treaty, that's  
29 the first time he says, they done that. He says I met  
30 the chief, the first chief and also the second chief.





P. Baptiste

1 He says they told the people,  
2 if you take the treaty, they say the government will  
3 notice you. He says that time he told the people, he  
4 said some day the government<sup>will</sup> build hospitals down here,  
5 so you'll be taken care of if you get sick. Also, you  
6 don't have to pay for no medicine. This is what he said  
7 to the people. Now, he say, you go to Inuvik, and you  
8 get a little bottle, just that big, you have to pay for  
9 it which costs about \$7.00.

10 The white people, all right,  
11 they got the money. They're willing to pay for their  
12 medicine. But us, we're not that way. We're always  
13 broke. No money. That's pretty hard for us to pay for  
14 medicines like that. And this is what he didn't say  
15 but this is -- the old man is quite right on that.  
16 Sometime we have little children, and even that we have  
17 to pay medicine for them, and if you've got the money,  
18 you have to pay hospital bills also.

19 He says from that town, after  
20 he came back here to Arctic Red, and now he say he's  
21 staying in the delta down there, he says he makes good  
22 living. Not in the money part of it, but he says for  
23 my living off the country I make good living. But he  
24 says, only thing my children weren't very healthy, that's  
25 all. We had nine children, and out of nine children  
26 there are two that were always sickly. They're the two  
27 that are alive with me today. The rest are all gone.

28 He says now I got no one to help  
29 me. Just what we're getting now is I getting my old  
30 age pension, and so is his wife, and one of his boys are



crippled, he gets little pension; and he's staying in one of these public housing down there. Over half of that pension is going to pay -- has got to be paid for that public housing every month.

The way I look right now -- he means to say how old he is -- is that he still traps, and he says he's trying to help himself by replacing some of that old age pension he spends on his housing, but he says, not too much luck this year. Now he wants to talk about land.

He says originally he came from here, this Arctic Red River, and he travelled on the east side of this, right down to Anderson River, way down to a place they call Kugaluk, and he knows every lake that's got fish in it. He say all these lakes, especially the big lakes, and the rivers, they got names, and I know every one of them. That's how much he used to travel down this country.

He said he had a couple maps sent to him, I think it's from the Indian Brotherhood, and he says that's a white woman asked him to map out where he trapped, where he travelled, and what lakes got fish in it. It's something familiar to that there. He says some of them lakes, he know the names but it's hard for him to explain it in English, but as far as out language is concerned, he knows practically every one of them.

He says I don't know, something happened that he lost that map, but he said the lady that helped him make out that map told him that she was



1 going to send them to Ottawa, but he said I don't think  
2 they got that far with them because they got lost. He  
3 says there's another guy, I guess most of them know  
4 him quite well, I don't know whether he's still in  
5 Mc Pherson but his name was John Richards, and he said  
6 this guy asked him to do the same thing, make maps for  
7 him. So he sat down and started making maps, and he  
8 asked me, "What's the name of these lakes?" So he said  
9 I couldn't explain it in English, so he explained it to  
10 him in his language, but he said by the time he got  
11 through with that map, there was over 200 names on that  
12 map; different lakes, different creeks, different rivers,  
13 all that.

14 THE COMMISSIONER: Mr. Ritter  
15 showed me that map at Mc Pherson when we had a hearing  
16 there last summer, with all those names on it.

17 THE INTERPRETER: He says this  
18 country, this east country down here, he says he figures  
19 there's a / little game in there by this time, because he says he's  
20 been on this highway from here to Inuvik twice now, and  
21 he's seen caribou tracks and moose tracks, but he said  
22 you go further back, maybe a little more. He said a  
23 place where you call Kugaluk, <sup>it's</sup> he says/partly Eskimo  
24 country, but he said I think they claim to most of that  
25 too, but still, you see quite a few people here, but  
26 I think there's still lots of room for the people  
27 around here up there, down on the east side, towards  
28 Anderson River.

29 He says he figure down in the  
30 east country down there, by now there should be little





1 game in there, and he says, what few people you see in  
2 Arctic Red River here, he say if we went down there  
3 now, all of us, we still -- I figure we still could make  
4 good living out of it. He says, another thing he wants  
5 to talk about, this settlement here.

6 He says we get lots of fish  
7 here, but we must remember, all that fish comes from  
8 the coast. Most of this fish that comes up here, don't  
9 even go out to Fort Good Hope. He says this town here,  
10 the fish are very plentiful. Everybody used to get lots  
11 of fish, even people from Fort McPherson come over here  
12 and fish, and when we get lots of fish, he said, they  
13 send them down to Inuvik. People make use of that fish  
14 that we get around here, from this little town here.

15 He said this is one reason, he  
16 said, me too, I'm strongly against the pipeline. He said  
17 before I got married, he said my wife comes from up the  
18 Arctic Red River; he said, him, he comes from the east  
19 land, I mean on the east side from here, down in that  
20 Travaillant Lake country. So he said, both of us, she  
21 comes from one side of the river, I come from the other  
22 side, and that's how we got married.

23 He said one thing he really  
24 wants now, he'd sure like to move back to Arctic Red  
25 River. He said he mentioned this to different people  
26 down in Inuvik, he say he dislike Inuvik, but he tell  
27 some of the white people that he really wants to come  
28 back here, and they told him, "Sure, that might help you  
29 out. They said that should clear your mind from thinking  
30 too much. Why don't you move back to where your people





P. Baptiste  
B. Natsie

1 are?"

2 He say if he had a house, if  
3 he could get a house here, he'd move back here before  
4 it's too late, because he say his wife is <sup>getting</sup> old, and he  
5 says me too, I'm getting old; but he said the day I  
6 could get a house, I'll move back here to my people.  
7 He says that's all I have to say to you Mr. Berger.

8 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you,  
9 thank you, sir. Do you want to come forward sir?

10 (WITNESS ASIDE)

11  
12 BARNEY NATSIE, sworn:

13 THE WITNESS: Mr. Berger,  
14 Barney Natsie's my name, and I say that I just, you  
15 know, I'm here at the respect of my people, and you know  
16 I come forward -- I got some words for you, and I kept  
17 that for a long time, I heard about all your travelling  
18 and everything. I'm pleased to meet you today, and I  
19 got few words for you to say for you, and I'm pleased  
20 to say you're welcomed to listen to it.

21 You know, I'm not too good, but  
22 you know I hope it makes sense that way. I don't think  
23 you know you'll all put it down, and you'll get back  
24 in Ottawa or wherever you come from -- government --  
25 well I'll tell you about the government, to start with.  
26 I worked with the government for over two and a half  
27 years. I went through local government, and now I work  
28 with D.P.W. , because I'm a helping hand. Well I'll  
29 tell you for instance, when you ask the government for  
30 something, you know, there's something wrong with your



1 cat, or anything. Now you ask them, you want something  
2 repaired, they say, "Sure, we give it to you, we give  
3 it to you," lots of promise. Then when you ask for it,  
4 you never <sup>see</sup> it, a month later, you never see nothing. So  
5 you go back and phone and ask them, "Oh yeah, we order  
6 it, we got it on order." It's all promise. That's  
7 the same thing, you're working for the government, aren't  
8 you?

9 THE COMMISSIONER: Pardon me?

10 THE WITNESS: You're working  
11 for the government aren't you?

12 THE COMMISSIONER: No, I don't  
13 work for the government, but go on anyway.

14 THE WITNESS: You know, you  
15 spend a lot of money travelling. That's what I'm get  
16 into. You spend a lot of money travelling. Now,  
17 that's where the government's spending it all, they got  
18 you on the road and whether the pipeline or not, eh,  
19 pipeline. You're getting down to think that pipeline  
20 oh sure, you'll get it, because, look, I'll tell you  
21 for instance, you got that <sup>planned</sup> years ago, and now  
22 you're travelling. You got all the money -- oh, you  
23 got big crew and you're travelling all over, plane  
24 expenses, and hotel room and sleeping every night. You  
25 got money to play around with. But if you get down to  
26 wages and ask for your money, you never get it, they  
27 say they got no money. But they sure got money to play  
28 around with though, eh?

29 That's what I'm trying to get  
30 down. I don't see the point in things, you know. I



1 got no education, I'm not -- you know, I'm nothing. But  
2 still, you know, I got lots in mind that I should talk  
3 about things, but you know, all this telling probably  
4 make no sense, you know. I think it does too, because  
5 it'll never make sense, because you try and you talk,  
6 all you do, you know. Like you guys, you go back, and  
7 you talk lots, and the back people talk lots eh? You  
8 guys, you don't go back south, you'll wear out your  
9 teeth. You'll go back, and you'll buy yourself a new  
10 false teeth, that's what you're going to do; and you got  
11 the money to do it, eh? And all this time you're just  
12 wasting your time, you got this thing planned already.  
13 What's the/<sup>use</sup> pushing it now. That's what I like to get  
14 a point. Look, you've got it decided already, and  
15 it's all planned. Which way, look, a lot of people  
16 felt what they should push. We're just a handful, that's  
17 all we are. How could we back that up? Could you tell  
18 me that?

19 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, 'the  
20 government -- you see, the pipeline companies want to  
21 build a pipeline; and the oil and gas industry want  
22 to build the pipeline. The Government of Canada, which  
23 is elected by all the people of Canada to govern the  
24 country, they have said, "We won't go ahead with the  
25 pipeline, we won't make a decision about it until we've  
26 heard what the people who live in the north have to  
27 say."

28 Now the government's in Ottawa  
29 running the country. They can't all come here and  
30 listen to you, so they asked to come, to hear what





B. Natsic

1 you had to say, and then to report to them, and make  
2 recommendations to them; and members of the government  
3 have said, publicly, that they will not make a decision  
4 about whether a pipeline should be built, until I have  
5 reported to them about what it will mean to the north.

6 Now, you're not the first to  
7 suggest that it has all been planned, and is going to  
8 go ahead, no matter what this Inquiry says. No matter  
9 what you say, no matter what I say. Now lots of people  
10 think that there's something in that, but as far as I'm  
11 concerned we live in a country where, when the government  
12 makes a solemn statement that it has not made a decision,  
13 and will not, until I have been to the north and heard  
14 what the people have to say, then I accept the government's  
15 statement. But it may be that -- well, there are people  
16 besides yourself, who aren't as confident in the things  
17 the government says as I am, I suppose. Well, that's --  
18 I understand your point.

19 THE WITNESS: When you get back  
20 to / your office eh, I'll ask you one question, when you get  
21 back your office, they all do, they get back to the  
22 south, they pick up all the letters and bring it back  
23 south. What they do, they throw it in the waste basket.  
24 They forget about it. Then we never hear no more after  
25 that. And here we keep writing letter and you never  
26 hear no answer. Big promise to the poor people down  
27 here eh? Big promise, I heard lots. I lived forty years  
28 in the country now, I was born here and I lived 40 years,  
29 40 years old; and I worked for the government about two  
30 and a half years, and I got a lot of experience, I know,



B. Natsie  
Chief H. Andre  
R. Andre

1 and I got no education or nothing, but I got it all up  
2 in the head here. I sitting, I was waiting to speak to  
3 you a little. Not that I don't like you or anything,  
4 but you know it's just for the sake of our kids and our  
5 future life eh? It's the same way. You travel all  
6 over, you/<sup>get</sup> it all the way, same word, you know. Well  
7 that's why I asked you. You get back to the office,  
8 all you going to do is just throw your papers in the  
9 waste basket and that's it, eh? And you wait while  
10 you bargain and say "what happened?" You'll be sitting  
11 there weeks/<sup>where you'll</sup> watch what's going on. Is that okay?

12 THE COMMISSIONER: Pardon me?

13 THE WITNESS: Well that's all  
14 I'm going to say to you and thanks a lot for coming  
15 and pleased to <sup>meet</sup> you, okay?

16 (WITNESS ASIDE)

17  
18 CHIEF HYACINTHE ANDRE, resumed:

19 THE WITNESS: I just want to  
20 say a few words too. This man just came to listen to  
21 us, not to argue. We're going to say something, talk  
22 about our land. That's what we came down for. We're  
23 going to talk about pipeline. That's one too. Nothing  
24 else, that's what I want myself. Maybe end of the  
25 meeting now.

26 (WITNESS ASIDE)

27  
28 ROBERT ANDRE, resumed: Can  
29 I just ask you a few questions? I just want to know,  
30 the ultimate decision to build a pipeline, where does



1       that rest?

2                               THE COMMISSIONER: That rests  
3       with the Government of Canada, with the Prime Minister,  
4       and the members of the Cabinet, who have been -- who  
5       have a majority in Parliament, and they are elected to  
6       govern to make these choices, and my job is to tell them  
7       what it will mean to the north if they build a gas  
8       pipeline, and then an oil pipeline; what it will mean  
9       if there is an energy corridor from the Arctic to the  
10      south; to make sure that they are in a position to make  
11      an intelligent choice; but they will decide, and decide  
12      they must.

13                            I want to make sure that they  
14      understand the consequences of the decision they have  
15      to make, one way or the other.

16                           THE WITNESS: What role does the  
17      National Energy Board play in this?

18                           THE COMMISSIONER: Well, I'm  
19      going to tell the government what it will mean to the  
20      north and the people who live here, and the environment  
21      of the north, the economy of the north, and the people  
22      of the north. The Energy Board is in Ottawa, and they  
23      will be holding hearings to find out how much gas there  
24      is in the delta, and to find out how much gas the people  
25      in southern Canada and the United States are going to  
26      need to get along for the next so many years; and then  
27      they will say to the government, "Well, this is how much  
28      it'll cost to bring this gas here, and this is how  
29      much we've got, and this is how much we need."     The  
30      Government of Canada will have my report which will tell





R. Andre

1     them what the impact will be on the north. They'll have  
2     the Energy Board's report which will tell them what  
3     Canada's requirements for gas are, and then the  
4     government will have to weigh it all up, and make a  
5     decision; and I'm here to make sure you have a chance  
6     to say what you think about the whole thing.

7                     THE WITNESS: That's good.

8                     (WITNESS ASIDE)

9                     THE COMMISSIONER: Well, I  
10    think I'll bring the meeting to a close, and say that  
11    we've had a long day, but it's been a good day, and  
12    I have listened carefully to what everybody has said  
13    who came forward and spoke, and some who didn't come  
14    forward but stayed at the back of the room. I listened  
15    to all of you because I think I can learn something  
16    from each one of you. That's what I'm here for, to  
17    listen and to learn. We will have a transcript made  
18    of what has been said. It'll be typed up and printed,  
19    and we'll send that to Chief Andre and the Band Council;  
20    and I'll have a copy so I will be able to look up what  
21    you said. This is the first place I've been to where  
22    people are a little bit suspicious, that, having come  
23    all this way and taken all these notes, I might throw  
24    them in the garbage when I get back to Inuvik, but I  
25    can tell you I won't do that. I didn't come all this  
26    way for the fun of it. I came here to listen to you  
27    people and to learn, and I think I have learned a lot  
28    about Arctic Red River, and about the way you feel and  
29    the way you think about the land, about the future,  
30    and about the pipeline. So, I want to thank all of you.





1 and once again, to tell you that we've now been to  
2 practically all the towns and cities and villages and  
3 settlements in the north. We've been to just about all  
4 of them. We're going to go to southern Canada to hold  
5 hearings there in May and June, to find out what people  
6 in southern Canada think about the north, and what's  
7 going to happen up here in the north, and after that  
8 I'll be writing my report to the government, and you'll  
9 hear about that, and you'll be getting a copy of my  
10 report when it comes out later in the year; and after  
11 that it'll be up to the government to make it's decision.

12 So, you're helping me to make  
13 sure that I'm in a position to lay all of the facts  
14 before the government to enable them to judge what  
15 the consequences will be, and to make the right decision.  
16 So, thank you, and we'll be seeing you again I hope,  
17 one of these days.

18 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED TO MAY 10, 1976)  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30

347

M835

Community 47

AUTHOR

Mackenzie Valley pipeline inquiry:

TITLE

Arctic Red River, NWT Mar.13/76

DATE DUE

BORROWER'S NAME

347

M835

Community 47





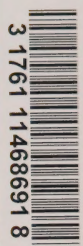












3 1761 11468 9